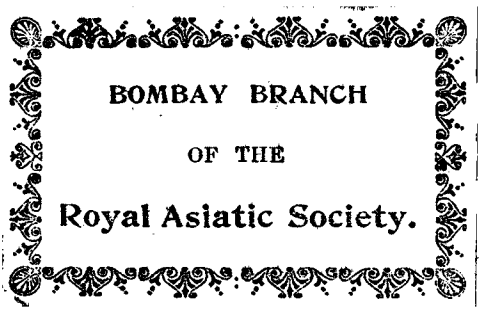
00046348



Digitized with financial assistance from

HT Parekh FOUNDATION

An Initiative by HDFC

WITH YOU, RIGHT THROUGH

on 15 October, 2018

The Brut.

Early English Text Society.

Original Series, 136.

1908.

BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 13, UNTER DEN LINDEN.
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

The Brut

OR

The Chronicles of England,

46348
a1

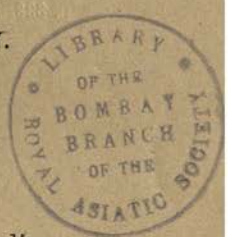
EDITED FROM

MS. RAWL. B 171, BODLEIAN LIBRARY, &c.

BY

FRIEDRICH W. D. BRIE, PH.D.

WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY.



PART II

(*completing the Text, with the Roll of Battle Abbey, including the name* CHAUCER.)

LL m.94

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY

BY KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LTD.,

DRYDEN HOUSE, 43 GERRARD STREET, SOHO, W.

D BY HENRY FROWDE, OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS,

AMEN CORNER, E.C.

1908.

929-72
Boi / Bou
46348

ERRATA.

p. 298. The headline must be: *Caen* instead of *Scluse.*
p. 333. In the head of the page: *MS. Lambeth* 331 instead of *Harley* 3

callea

Original Series, No. 136.

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED, LONDON AND BUNGAY.

PREFACE.

This second part finishes the text of the Chronicle, or rather, series of Chronicles, contained in the present volumes. In the first part I have printed the text of the common Brut which comes down to A.D. 1333, while this second part contains the continuations of the Brut, composed by various authors at different times, in different places and with very varying intentions. Out of the great number of Continuations I have chosen only such as have not been published as yet; and among these, only such as afford new material for the student of History or Literature. If a Continuation exists in several MSS., I have always chosen the best MS., not the oldest, for publication, and have taken the one or two next best MSS. for collation. In a few cases, however, the Continuations are found in one recension only. The text has been printed from the MS. as it stands, without attempting conjectural emendations, but occasionally a word or sentence accidentally omitted has been supplied from the other MSS., in the text instead of in a footnote, for the convenience of readers. But in all cases of this kind the reading of the original has been put in a footnote. Letters or fragments of words accidentally omitted are mostly added in brackets. In the footnotes, mere variations of spelling have not been inserted as a rule, while inversions of words are always noticed.

The present publication will be welcome, as well to the Student of Literature as to the Student of History. The former will recognise in it the work which, in its various forms, has been for three centuries the most popular Chronicle of England, and will find in it some interesting matter, not only in the inserted poems, among which the two mocking songs against the Flemings (p. 582 and p. 600) are published for the first time, but also in a fair number of prose passages of which I shall only refer to that dealing with Henry V's dismissal of his old rioting companions (p. 594).

The Student of History will recognise in our text the first large

Chronicle in the English language which has been laid under contribution by nearly all the great Chronicle-writers of the 16th and 17th centuries. As to its historical value I readily admit that the authors of the common Brut and its Continuations have for the most part recorded such matter as is not new, and much that, in the present state of historical literature, will appear to many readers trivial and unimportant. But these disadvantages are inseparable from the uniform practice of annalists of the middle ages. I am however, decidedly of opinion that there is an amount of original historical information contained in the various Continuations which outweighs the obvious trivialities, mistakes and repetitions; and even the superficial reader will see that long parts of the Continuations are given with a vividness which marks the narration like that of an eye-witness. The whole discussion of historical points connected with the Brut is reserved for the Introduction and the Notes in the third volume.

The following account of the MSS. used for the text and collation in the present volume may suffice. The letters prefixed to each designate them in the notes below the text:

The *first Continuation* from A.D. 1333 to A.D. 1377 [illegible] *B*, taken from

C = MS. Corpus Christi Coll. Camb. 174, which was written in the beginning of the 15th century and closes with the burial of Edward III in 1377.

The text, though the best among the MSS. of the same recension is not a good one. It has been collated with

T = MS. Br. Mus. Add. 24,859, a late but accurate transcript from a MS. of the second half of the 15th century which closes with the capture of Rouen in 1419, and

R = MS. Br. Mus. Reg. 17 D XXI, likewise a late but faithful transcript from a MS. of the second half of the 15th century which ends in the same year.

Appendix B describing the character of Edward III, is taken from

W = MS. Harley 753, a late 15th century MS. which closes in the year 1430. It has been collated with

X = MS. Lambeth 331, a 15th century MS. breaking off in 1422.

Y = MS. Lambeth 491, which shows a hand of the early 15th century, and ends in 1377.

Z = MS. Lambeth 738, which is written by two 15th century hands, and ends in 1418.

The Continuation from A.D. 1377 to 1419, *called C*, is taken from

Kk = MS. Un. Libr. Camb, Kk I 12, which was written about the middle of the 15th century and closes in the year 1419. It has been collated with *T* and *R* described above.

Appendix C, a fuller version of the time from A.D. 1399 to 1401, is taken from

Ra = MS. Rawl. B 173, which was written in the 15th century and closes in 1431. It contains a very bad text, but is unique for the piece it contains.

The Continuation from A.D. 1418 to 1430, *called D*, is taken from

G = MS. Galba E VIII, which is written in a fine 15th century hand and closes in 1430. It has been collated with

A = MS. Harley 2256, the text of which agrees in every respect with that of the foregoing Galba MS.; and where A is defective, with

B = MS. Harley 266, a MS. of the same type.

Appendix D, which gives additional matter for the years A.D. 1418 to 1430, is taken from

Hh = MS. Un. Libr. Camb. Hh VI 9, which was written in the 15th century, and closes in 1434.

The Continuation from A.D. 1419 to 1431, *called E*, is taken from

E = MS. Egerton 650, which shows a hand of the time about 1450, and closes in 1431.

Appendix E, containing a differing version for the time 1422–31, is taken from Ra = MS. Rawl. B 173, which is described above.

The Continuation from A.D. 1430 to 1446, *called F*, is taken from

Tr = MS. Trin. Coll. Camb. O 9, 1 which closes in 1446. It has been collated with

U = MS. Un. Libr. Cambr. Hh VI 9 down to 1434 where U closes.

The Continuation from A.D. 1419 to 1461, *called G*, is taken from

Ad = MS. Br. Mus. Add. 10,099, which was written in the end of the 15th century, and closes in 1461. It has been collated with

H = MS. Harley 3730, which breaks off in 1452, and

C = Caxton's first printed edition of 1480, which closes in 1461.

The Collection of various pieces between 1066 and 1436, *called H*, is taken from

Ha = MS. Harley 53 which was written in the 15th century and breaks off during the siege of Calais in 1436. It has been collated with

L = Lambeth 6, a finely illuminated MS., which shows a hand of the end of the 15th century, and closes with the end of the siege of Calais in 1436. Its text, however, is not so good as that of Ha.

The Continuation of the foregoing piece H, *called I*, is taken from L, which is unique in this part.

The Collection of pieces between Havelok's time and A.D. 1475, *called K*, is taken from

La = MS. Lambeth 84, whose unique text shows a hand of the end of the 15th century, and closes in 1475.

For anything else the reader is referred to the third volume of the present edition, which will contain Introduction, Notes, Glossary and Index.[1] Finally, I have again to express my thanks to Dr. Frederick J. Furnivall for his constant and invaluable help. In both volumes the headlines over the pages are added by him.

FRIEDRICH W. D. BRIE.

Marburg a/L., August 1908.

[1] An abstract of the Introduction has appeared in German under the title: Geschichte und Quellen der mittelenglischen Prosachronik *The Brute of England* oder *The Chronicles of England*. Marburg. N. G. Elwert. 1905.

SUMMARY OF CONTENTS.

B.

Continuation of the Brut from A.D. 1333 *to* 1377.

Chapters 224–8.

Edward III takes Berwick. Balliol does homage for Scotland. Cornwall is made a Duchy. Edward claims France, and makes his preparations for war. The English win the battle of Sluys, A.D. 1340, and besiege Tournay. Want of money compels Edward to make peace with France. Storms at sea on his way back. Edward goes to Scotland. His son is made Prince of Wales. Constitution of the Round Table. The English imitate the foolish dress of strangers. Expedition into Brittany, A.D. 1345. Edward enters Normandy at La Hogue. English Victory at Caen. Battle of Crecy, A.D. 1346. Edward besieges Calais. The Scotch invaders beaten at Nevil's Cross. The King of France avoids a proposed combat near Calais. Calais surrenders, A.D. 1347. Citizens kindly treated. The Plague of 1348–9. Frustrated treachery of Geoffrey of Charney at Calais ... pp. 291–303

Chapters 229–231.

Sea-fight between the Spaniards and English, A.D. 1349. New Coinage. General dearth. A Drought. Negotiations about Guienne, furthered by the Pope, but broken up by the English. French attempt on Guienne. Edward crosses the sea, but John of France flees, A.D. 1355. The Scotch try to take the Castle of Berwick. Berwick surrenders. Edward III is crowned King of Scotland. The Black Prince in Gascony. Battle of Poictiers, A.D. 1356. The French King as prisoner in England. The festival of St. George, A.D. 1358. Marriage of Duchess Blanche. Edward invades Burgundy, A.D. 1360, and sets fire to the suburbs of Paris. English naval victories. Great Storm near Orleans. Treaty of Bretigny. King John of France is freed. Thunder-storms, and appearance of the Devil. Anglo-French Treaty confirmed at Westminster. Wonders and apparitions. Marriage of the Prince of Wales to Joan of Kent, A.D. 1361 ... pp. 303–314

Chapters 232–235.

Wind, Rain and Frost. Law-pleading in English, A.D. 1363. Charles of Blois slain, A.D. 1364. Peter's Pence not to be paid. King

Pedro of Spain is deposed by his brother, A.D. 1366. Danish Invaders are repulsed in the North-sea. The Black Prince helps King Pedro of Spain. Battle of Navarra. Marriage of Prince Lionel, Duke of Clarence, A.D. 1366. Great Pestilence, A.D. 1369. Death of the Earl of Warwick at Calais. Sir John Hawkwode. Robert Knollis's expedition to France. Limoges rebels against the Black Prince. The King of Navarra's visit to England. King Pedro's daughters married to the Duke of Lancaster and the Earl of Cambridge. Spaniards surprise Englishmen at Rochelle. pp. 314–326

Chapters 236–239.

The Duke of Lancaster's expedition to Bordeaux, A.D. 1373. Disputes between Edward III and the Pope. Truce with France for one year. Great pestilence. The Earl of Pembroke is taken prisoner by the Spanish, A.D. 1374. The Commons refuse further money unless the King proves his need of it, A.D. 1376. Alice Ferrers and Lord Latimer. Piers de la Mare imprisoned. Death of the Black Prince, A.D. 1377. Revolt of Warwick's tenants. Subsidy granted to Edward III. Sir John Munsterworth executed for treachery. Death of Edward III, A.D. 1377 ... ... pp. 326–332

Appendix B.

The Character of Edward III. ... ... pp. 333–334

C.

Continuation of the Brut from A.D. 1377 *to* 1419.

Chapters 239–240.

Coronation of Richard II. Hawle and Shakyll, A.D. 1378. French gallies burn English Towns. Revolt of Jack Straw and Wat Tyler, A.D. 1381. Walworth slays Jack Straw. Punishment of the rebels, Earthquake, A.D. 1382. Crusade of the Bishop of Norwich, A.D. 1383. Fight near Dunkirk, A.D. 1383. Marriage of Richard II with Anne of Bohemia.[1] Expedition of the Duke of Lancaster into Spain, A.D. 1386. The King of Armenia visits England. Treaty with the Scots. The Earl of March slain in Ireland, A.D. 1398. The rising of the Five Lords, A.D. 1387. Flight of the evil counsellors. Tournament for foreigners in London, A.D. 1388. John of Gaunt's Expedition to Spain, A.D. 1387. Dispute between Londoners and the Bishop of Salisbury about a baker's broken head. King Richard's Quarrel with the Londoners. Reconciliation, and great reception of him. Jousts in Smithfield. Death of Queen Anne, A.D. 1394.[2] ... ... pp. 335–348

[1] "Right as our firste lettre is now an A"—Anne, crowned Queen of England on Jan. 14, 1382—Lowes on the date of Chaucer's *Troilus*, Book I, st. 25, in Publ. of Modern Lang. Assoc. of America, June 1908.

[2] See Lowes on the effect of this on the shorter and revised Prologue to Chaucer's *Legend of Good Women*.

Chapters 241–242.

King Richard marries Isabella of France, A.D. 1396. Coronation of the Queen. King Richard arrests the Duke of Gloster, and sends him to Calais, A.D. 1397. Murder of the Duke. Other arrests. The great Parliament at Westminster. Muster of Richard's adherents. The Earl of Arundel sentenced and executed. Others condemned to perpetual imprisonment. Creation of Nobles. Duel between Bolingbroke and Norfolk stopt by the King, A.D. 1398. False Blank Charters. Richard's Expedition to Ireland, A.D. 1399. Return of Bolingbroke. Richard deposed, and Bolingbroke made King ... ... pp. 349–359

Chapter 243.

Coronation of Henry IV, A.D. 1399. Richard II starved. Plot against Henry IV; conspirators executed, A.D. 1400. Debate between Owen Glendower and Lord Grey de Ruthin, A.D. 1401. The King invades Wales. A comet, A.D. 1402. Battle of Shrewsbury, A.D. 1403. The Emperor of the Turks in London. The Marriage of Henry IV, A.D. 1403. Marriage of the Princess Blanche. English naval victory near Flanders, A.D. 1404. Execution of Serle. Duel in Smithfield. Archbishop Scrope's rebellion and execution, A.D. 1405. Marriage of the Earl of Kent, A.D. 1407. Death of Sir Robert Knollis. Princess Philippa is married to the King of Denmark, A.D. 1405. Duel in Smithfield. Death of Northumberland and Bardolf, A.D. 1408. The Earl of Kent killed at St. Brieux, A.D. 1408. Six days' jousting by Hainaulters in London, A.D. 1409. Duel in Smithfield between Glocester and Arture. Rys ap Die's Execution. English Victory at St. Cloud, A.D. 1411. Victory at La Hogue, A.D. 1412. Henry IV dies in "Jerusalem," A.D. 1413 ... ... pp. 359–372

Chapters 244–245.

Henry V re-buries Richard II, A.D. 1413. Lollards' conspiracy discovered, A.D. 1414. The sending of the tennis-balls. Henry V's war-preparations. Conspiracy against the King's life, A.D. 1415. Henry invades France and besieges Harfleur. Surrender of Harfleur. Battle of Agincourt, A.D. 1415. Killing of the French prisoners. The English Dead. Henry V's reception in London. The German Emperor meets King Henry. Henry V's muster of ships. Second Invasion of France, A.D. 1417. Surrender of the French cities. Siege of Cherbourg. Arrival of the Earl of March in France. Sir John Oldcastle's imprisonment and execution, A.D. 1417. Siege of Rouen, A.D. 1418. Siege of Caudebec. Names of the Governors of Rouen. Distress of the City. Rouen surrenders, A.D. 1419 ... ... pp. 373–391

Appendix C.

Fuller Version of the time from 1399 *to* 1401.

Conspirators against Henry IV punished. Execution of Roger Clarendon and the prior of Laund. Rebellion of Owen Glendower.

Lord Grey de Ruthin taken prisoner. The capture of Edmund Mortimer. Henry V's fruitless expedition into Wales ... pp. 392–393

D.

Continuation of the Brut from A.D. 1418 *to* 1430, *including John Page's Poem on the siege of Rouen.*

Henry V besieges Rouen, A.D. 1418. Stations of his generals. Chain and bridges across the Seine. Caudebec wants to share the fate of Rouen. Cherburg won by Humphrey of Gloster. Reinforcements for Henry V. Rumoured approach of the French King. Chief Captains of Rouen. Defence of the city. Henry arranges a sham fight with a rescuing power, to deceive the French in Rouen. Deaths from starvation. Henry feeds the expelled starving Roueners. The City sends delegates into the English camp. *Beginning of the Poem.* The delegates want safe-conduct to the King. The King is ready to see them. They ask him for mercy. Henry grants them time. Tents are pitched to treat in. The Roueners refuse the English terms. The poor in Rouen insist on the rich yielding to Henry V. If no rescue comes in eight days, Rouen is to be given up to Henry V. Delivery of the keys. The English welcomed in Rouen. Henry V hears mass in the Minster. *End of the Poem.* Queen Joan arrested. Death of Friar Randulf. Meeting of Henry V and the French Queen. No agreement. Pontoise taken by the English. Treaty of Troyes, A.D. 1420. Henry V weds Katherine of France. Their reception in London. Death of the Duke of Clarence. Birth of Henry VI, A.D. 1421. Henry V besieges Meaux in Brie. Capture of Meaux. Death of Henry V, A.D. 1422.

The child Henry VI reigns. His Guardians. Wonderful escape of Gloster's wife. Quarrel in London, A.D. 1425. Death of the Duke of Exeter, A.D. 1426. The Bishop of Winchester is made Cardinal. Siege of Orleans, A.D. 1428. The Earl of Salisbury killed. Siege of Orleans raised by the French. Boat with Duke of Norfolk swamped, A.D. 1429. Great Dearth. Coronation of Henry VI, A.D. 1430. Reinforcements sent to France. Smithfield Duel stopt. Henry VI crosses the sea. His success in France. Joan of Arc taken, A.D. 1430

pp. 394–439

Appendix D.

Additional matter from the time A.D. 1420 *to* 1428.

Will Wawe hanged. Great Rain in 1427. Royal Seal counterfeited. A Widow's Murderer stoned. The heretic Richard Hunder burnt ... ... pp. 440–443

E.

Continuation of the Brut from the capture of Rouen, A.D. 1419 *to* 1430.

Queen Joan arrested. Henry V weds Catherine, A.D. 1420. Feast at the Queen's coronation. The *menu* at the banquet. Death of the

Duke of Clarence. Henry V goes to France. Birth of Henry VI, A.D. 1421. Death of Henry V. His corpse brought to London. French homage to Henry VI. The heretic William Taylor burnt. Siege of Orleans raised, A.D. 1429. Lord Talbot taken prisoner. Great dearth. Henry VI in London. His coronation at Westminster. Duel in Smithfield stopt, A.D. 1430 ... ... pp. 444–451

Appendix E.

Additional matter for the time from A.D. 1422 *to* 1431.

The child Henry VI brought to London. Sir John Mortimer beheaded. Quærrel in London, A.D. 1425. Parliament at Leicester. False Wines in London. Siege of Orleans raised, A.D. 1429. Lord Talbot taken prisoner. Coronation of Henry VI, A.D. 1430. Parliament at Westminster ... ... pp. 452–455

F.

Continuation of the Brut from A.D. 1430 *to* 1446.

Spanish Ambassadors insulted, A.D. 1430. A Lollard burnt. Jack Sharp executed, A.D. 1431. Ludgate-prison built. Henry VI's journey from Calais to Rouen. Reception in Paris. Wonderful shows. The King visits his grandmother. Coronation at Paris, A.D. 1431. Reception in London, A.D. 1432. Cornhill and Cheapside. St. Paul's and Westminster Abbey. Parliament at Westminster. Foreign Ambassadors. Convocation at Basel. The Earl of Huntingdon goes into Normandy. Great Pestilence, A.D. 1434. Hard frost. Negotiations for peace with France, A.D. 1435. Money for war granted to Henry VI. English troops to Normandy. Fights round Calais. The English besieged in Calais are rescued, A.D. 1436. Flemish towns taken. Scotch invasion repulsed. Hard Frost, A.D. 1436. Death of Queen Katherine. Foreigners at the English Parliament. The Duke of York comes back to England, A.D. 1437. A Murderer sentenced. Heretics burnt. Dear food. Storms and Earthquake. The Earl of Huntingdon goes to France. Peace-meeting at Calais, A.D. 1439. Cruel murder discovered. Parliament at Westminster and Reading. Ship-thieves hanged. Heretics burnt. Duel in Smithfield, A.D. 1440. Expedition to France. Henry VI visits the City. Storm raised by witches. The clerk Roger retracts his devilish art. Eleanor Cobham found guilty of treason and witchcraft, A.D. 1441. Her public penance. The clerk Roger is hanged. Duel in Smithfield. Lord Talbot's expedition to France, A.D. 1442. Arrant thieves hanged. A woman pressed to death for bad language. Negotiations for Henry VI's marriage. King's offender pardoned. Princess Margaret betrothed to Henry VI, A.D. 1444. St. Paul's steeple burnt, A.D. 1445. King Henry's wedding. Queen Margaret's procession and coronation. French Ambassadors come to treat for peace pp. 456–490

G.

Continuation of the Brut from the Capture of Rouen, A.D. 1419 *to* A.D. 1461.

Chapters 245[1]–251.

Murder of the Duke of Burgundy, A.D. 1419. Queen Joan arrested. Henry V weds Katherine of France, A.D. 1420. The Duke of Clarence slain. Birth of Henry VI, A.D. 1421. The Queen visits Paris. Death of Henry V, A.D. 1422. Praise of Henry V, who was wild in youth, but virtuous when King. His French wars incited by the clergy. His foundations of religious houses. Gloster made Protector. Battle of Verneuil, A.D. 1424. Gloster weds the Duchess of Holland. His Hainault attack fails. Affray in the City, A.D. 1425. Henry VI and Nobles knighted. Much rain. Lord Salisbury shot at Orleans, A.D. 1428. Widow's murderer stoned. Henry VI crowned, A.D. 1430. Joan of Arc burnt, A.D. 1431. Henry VI's coronation at Paris. Rebellion of the soldiers at Calais. Pope Eugenius IV deposed. Congress of Arras, A.D. 1435. French plot to seize Calais discovered. The Duke of Burgundy besieges Calais. Siege raised by the Duke of Gloster, A.D. 1436. Flemish towns ransacked. Roxburgh besieged by the Scots. Death of Queen Katherine, A.D. 1437. Treaty between the King and the Duke of Burgundy ... ... pp. 491–506

Chapters 251–255.

Death of Sigesmund of Germany. Owen Tudor's imprisonment, A.D. 1438. Death of Warwick at Rouen. Great dearth. Frederick is chosen Emperor of Germany. Eleanor Cobham is accused of treason, A.D. 1441. Her accomplices. Disputes as to the Lord Mayor. St. Paul's steeple burnt, A.D. 1445. Henry VI's marriage with Margaret. Duel at Smithfield stopt by the King. Henry's marriage dearly bought. Losses by it. Suspicious death of Duke Humphrey of Gloster, A.D. 1447. The papal Schism. Felix resigns. Rouen and Normandy lost. Constantinople taken by the Turks. Dutch ships captured. Rouen taken by the French, A.D. 1448. Captain Bluebeard executed, A.D. 1450. The Duke of Suffolk's end, A.D. 1450. Jack Cade's rebellion. His entrance into London. Lord Say beheaded. Jack Cade killed by Alexander Iden, A.D. 1450. ... ... pp. 506–520

Chapters 256–263.

Rebellion of the Duke of York. Prince Edward born, A.D. 1453. Lord Mayor's show on the Thames. Rebellion of the Lords. First Battle of St. Albans, A.D. 1455. The Duke of York made Protector. Lombard Riot in London. Great Fish caught. Prisoners of Newgate break out. The French pillage Sandwich. Bishop Peacock's abjuration. Concord among the Lords, A.D. 1458. Battle of Bloreheath, A.D.

[1] Compare under C. The reckoning differs by one chapter.

1459. Trollop deserts the Yorkists. Failure of the Yorkist revolt, A.D. 1459. The Yorkists keep Calais, and increase in number. Sandwich taken, A.D. 1460. Lord Warwick goes to Ireland, to speak with the Duke of York. Yorkist Lords come to London. Battle of Northampton, A.D. 1460. Henry VI to be King for his life; and York acknowledged as his successor. Battle of Wakefield, A.D. 1460. The Duke of York slain. Second Battle of St. Albans, A.D. 1461. Henry VI captured. Londoners negotiate with the Queen. Flight of the rich merchants. Henry VI deposed. Edward IV made King. Battle of Towton, A.D. 1461. Coronation of Edward IV ... ... pp. 520–533

H.

Various Pieces from MS. Harley 53, *from* A.D. 1066 *to* 1436.

I. Coronation of William I's Queen. Battle Abbey escutcheons. Battle Abbey Roll of the names of the Norman knights ... pp. 534–537

II. Edward III resolved to chastise the French, A.D. 1346. Roll of the English for Crecy and Calais. Battles before and at Crecy. Siege of Calais. Scotch invaders are beaten at Nevil's Cross, A.D. 1346. The King of France avoids a proposed combat near Calais pp. 537–544

III. Bolingbroke's return to England, A.D. 1399. Richard II is deserted, and taken prisoner. Bolingbroke's son Henry talks friendlily with Richard II. Richard II starved. His corpse exhibited. A Conspiracy disclosed to Henry IV by the Duke of Aumerle, A.D. 1400. Conspirators beheaded. Revolt of Owen Glendower, A.D. 1400. The King's expedition to Wales. Scotch beaten at Homildon Hill, A.D. 1402. The King buffets Sir Henry Percy. Battle of Shrewsbury, A.D. 1403. The Emperor of Constantinople in London. Ships captured at sea. Battle of Marck, A.D. 1405 ... ... pp. 544–551

IV. The Lollards' conspiracy against Henry V discovered, A.D. 1414. Sir John Oldcastle arrested. Henry V's claim to France. His preparations for an invasion, A.D. 1415. Traitors beheaded. Siege of Harfleur The great gun Goodgrace. Names of Harfleur Hostages. Surrender of Harfleur. Battle of Agincourt, Oct. 25, 1415. The English King's words to his men. His personal bravery. Names of the French Lords killed at Agincourt. The English dead. French prisoners killed. Henry V's reception in London, A.D. 1466. Visit of the German Emperor. Council at Calais ... ... pp. 551–559

V. Capture of Rouen, A.D. 1419. Attempt at peace between England and France. The Duke of Burgundy slain. The Treaty of Troyes, A.D. 1420. Henry V betrothed to Katherine of France. Their return to England, A.D. 1421. Death of the Duke of Clarence. Henry V's second expedition to France. Birth of Henry VI, A.D. 1421. The Earl of Warwick made keeper of Henry VI, A.D. 1422. Sir Roger Mortymer executed. Verneuil surrendered to the French. Battle of Verneuil, A.D. 1424. Names of the Scotch and French slain in the battle. The Prince of Portugal in England. Quarrel in London, A.D. 1425.

Henry VI knighted. William Wawe hanged. The Bishop of Winchester goes to Normandy against the Pope's order, A.D. 1427. Henry VI's coronation at Westminster. Henry VI in Paris, A.D. 1431. Rebellion of the soldiers at Calais about their wages. Congress of Arras, A.D. 1435. The men of Popering's bad behaviour. The Duke of Burgundy besieges Calais, A.D. 1436. The Flemings scorn the English by pictures and interludes. The French, disguised as fishermen, try to surprise Calais. Death of the Duke of Bedford. Calais well fortified. Calais men sworn to Henry VI. English force gathered to rescue Calais. Successful English raids from Calais. The English surprised while hunting hares. The Picards beaten in the Golden Dale. The Flemings capture the Castle of Oye. William Bullion treated as a traitor. Marck surrenders to the Flemings. The Flemings besiege Calais, A.D. 1436. The Picards ruin Guisnes Castle. Sandgate's shameful surrender. The Flemings try to block the harbour of Calais. The men of Bruges and their "Bad Thursday" at Calais. The bulwark of the men of Ghent taken pp. 559–580

I.

End of the Siege of Calais, A.D. 1436, *from MS. Lambeth* 6.

The besieged English receive reinforcements. The Duke of Burgundy and the Flemings abandon the siege. The Siege of Guisnes given up by the Picards. The Englishmen's mocking song against the Flemings pp. 581–584

K.

Various Pieces from MS. Lambeth 84, *from Havelok's time to* A.D. 1475.

I. Story of Havelok's son Curan and Argentil ... pp. 585–588

II. Richard II's quarrel with his uncle, the Duke of Gloster, about the soldiers from Brest, A.D. 1397 ... ... pp. 588–589

III. Deposition of Richard II, and Election of Henry IV, A.D. 1399. Prophecy that Richard II should be destroyed by a toad pp. 589–590

IV. Richard II murdered by Piers of Exton, A.D. 1400. His corpse brought to London and to Langley. Reported starvation of Richard II. His treasure ... ... pp. 590–592

V. The causes of the Battle of Shrewsbury, A.D. 1403 ... p. 593

VI. Accession and character of Henry V, A.D. 1413. Dismissal of his old companions. With the help of Katherine Swynford, he sets his court in order. He stops a duel ... ... pp. 593–596

VII. Battle of Agincourt, A.D. 1415. The English King's crown captured and sent to Paris. The people from Paris hasten to Agincourt. French prisoners killed. The list of dead ... ... pp. 596–598

VIII. The Siege of Rouen, A.D. 1418. Prophecies of Surrender. Every eldest son in Rouen made a King on St. Dennis' Eve ... p. 598

IX. Prophecy at Henry VI's birth, A.D. 1421. His coronation. The Popering men's bad behaviour. The Duke of Exeter's revenge. English Ballad against the Flemings ... ... pp. 598–601

X. The first battle of St. Albans, A.D. 1455. The Battles of Blore heath and Ludlow, A.D. 1459. The Battles of Northampton and Wakefield, A.D. 1460: of St. Albans and Wigmore, A.D. 1461 pp. 601–602

XI. Battle of Towton, A.D. 1461. Henry VI taken prisoner. Battle of Barnet, A.D. 1471. Death of Henry VI. King Edward IV goes to France, A.D. 1475. The French pox, the stitch and the flix pp. 602–604

Appendix to H. (Compare p. 535–537.)

Alphabetical List of the Battle Abbey Roll in MS. Harley 53 pp. 605–607

[B]

[FROM THE BATTLE OF HALIDON HILL (A.D. 1333) TO THE DEATH OF EDWARD III (A.D. 1377).]

[*MS. Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, No.* 174, *leaf* 172, *back.*]

¶ Ande so, after þis gracious victorye, þe King turnyd him a3en vnto þe same seege of Berwyk. & whan þey of þe sege,[1] sawen & herd hov þat þe[2] King Edward had sped, þey 3olden to him þe toun, with þe castell, on þe morwe after þat þe bataile was, þat ys forto seyn, on Seint Margaretes day. And þan þe King ordeyned Sere Edwarde Bayllol, with opere noble & worþy men, to be [3]kepers and gouernours of Scotlonde in his absence; & hym self turned a3ên, and come into Englond after þis victory, with myche ioye & worship.

¶ And in þe next 3ere sewyng,[4] þat ys forto[5] seyn, þe 3ere of our Lord M[l]. CCC. & xxxij,[6] & of King Edward, þe vj.,[7] he wente a3en into Scotland in þe wynter tyme; at whiche viage þe castell of Kylbrigge in Scotland, for hym & his men þat with hym comen, he recouered, & had[8] a3ens the Scottis, al þat[9] his owne luste.[10]

¶ And in þat same 3ere, Sere Edward Baillol, king of Scotlande, held his parlement in Scotland, with meny noble lordes of Engelond, þat were at þat same parlement, for enchesoun of hire landes and lordshipes þat þey had in þe reume of Scotland, and helden of þe same Baillol. & in þe vij. 3ere of his regne, aboute þe feste of sent Iohn[11] Baptiste, Sire Edward Baillol, þe verry and trewe King of Scotland, as by heritage & ri3te lyne, made his homage and feaute vnto King Edward of Englond for þe reaume of Scotland, at þe Nev Castell vp Tynt, in precense of meny worþi lorde3, and also of communes of boþe reaumes, & anon after in þe same 3ere of[12] King Edward of Engelond resceyued of þe duke of Britaigne his homage for þe erldome & lordship of Richemound.[13] ¶ And so folwyng in þe neyne 3ere of his regne, after Micelmasse, King Edwarde rode into Scotlond, and per was faste by sent Johnnes toun almoste al þe wynter tyme; & he helde his cristiscemasse at

[1] towne T. toun R. [2] þe *om.* R. [3] *leaf* 173. [4] folwynge R.
[5] to T. [6] M[l]CCC xxxiii T. MCCC xxxij R. [7] vj 3eer R.
[8] had it T. [9] at T. at R. [10] wille. [11] Iohn þe TR.
[12] of *om.* R. [13] erldom of Richemonde & lordship R.

þe Castel of Rokysburgh. & in þe same ȝere þoruȝt-out al Engelond, aboute sent Clemcys tyde, in wynter þere arose a[1] suche a sprynggynge and wellinge op of wateres [2]and floodes, bothe of þe see and also of fresshe ryvers & sprynge3, þat þe see brynke wallaes & coostes broken vp.[3] Men,[4] bestes, and houses in meny places, & namely in lowe cuntres, violently and sodenly[5] were dreynt and dryven awey; and þe fruyte of þe erþe, þoruȝ continuance and abundaunce of þe see watres, euermore after[6] were turned into more saltnes & sournes of sauour.

¶ The x. ȝere of King Edwarde, he entred þe Scottysshe see after Missomere; & to meny of þe Scottes he ȝaf batayll, and ouercome him,[7] and meny he treted & bowede vnto his pees, þoruȝ his doughtynes. & after Michelmasse þan next folwynge, was þe Erl of Moryf ytake att Eþinburgh, & brouȝt into Engelond, & put into prisoun. ¶ And in þe moneþes of Iuyn and Iuull[8] þan next folwyng, in the xj. ȝere of his regne, was seyn and aperede in þe firmament, a bemyd[9] sterre, þe whiche clercus calleþ 'stella comata'; and þat sterre was seyn in diuerce parteis of the firmament; wherafter anon þer folwyd in Engelond good chepe, and wonder grete plente of[10] chaffaree, vitaile and marchaundice, and þere aȝens, honger, scrafte, mischif,[11] and nede of money, in-somuche þat a quarter of whete att London was suolde for .ij s., and a good fatte oxe at a noble, and v. good dowe briddes for a j d. In whiche ȝere, on Holy Roed ȝeue, deide Sere Iohn of Elham, Erl of Cornewaile, King Edwardus broþer, and lithe at Westmynstre.

Hov King Edwarde made a Duchye of þe Erldom of Cor[n]waile; & also of vj. opere erles þat were newe made; & of þe ferste Chalangyng of þe reaume of Fraunce. Capº CCmo. xxvto.[12]

[13]In þe ȝere of our Lord a[14] Mt. CCC. xxxvii., and of King Edwarde xij.,[15] in[16] þe moneþe of March, durynge þe parlement at Westminstre in lente tyme, King Edwarde made of the erldome of Cornevayle a duchye, þe whiche duche he ȝaf to Edwarde his ferste sone wiþ[17] þe erldome of Chestre. also King Edward made at þat tyme vj. opere erles, þat ys forto sey, Sere Henry, þe Erl of

[1] a *om.* TR. [2] *leaf* 173, *back.* [3] vp *om.*T. vp so þat R. [4] and boþe men T. [5] Cuntrees sodenli and violenti R. [6] after *om.* TR. [7] hem T. [8] of IuyH and Iuyn R. [9] lemed R. [10] of alle R. [11] mischif *om.* T. [12] CCxxvj R. [13] *leaf* 174. [14] a *om.* T. [15] xijº yeer T. [16] Edwarde þe xij ȝeer in R. [17] þe R. *om.* C.

Lancastres sone, Erl of Leycestre; William of Bowham, Erl of Northampton; William of Mountgen, Erl of Salesbery; Hughe of Awdelee, Erl of Gloucestre; Robert of Vfforde, Erl of Suthfolk; and William of Clyntton, Erl of Huntyngdone. In that same ȝere, hit[1] was ordeynede in þat same parlement, þat noman shulde were no cloþe þat was woruȝt oute of Engelond, as cloþe of gold, of silk, damaske, vellewet, saton, baudekyn, ne non suche oþere; ne non[2] wyldware in Furrenre of beȝonde[3] see, but suche as myȝte Spende an C. li. of rente erliche[4]: but þis ordeynaunce and[5] statute was of[6] litel effecte, for hit was noþing holde.

¶ In þe xiij. ȝere of hys regne, King Edward wente ouere see into Braban, wiþ Quene Phelip his wif[7] þere beryng[8] childe,[9] and[10] att Andwerp, þere[11] he duellid more þen a ȝere, to trete wiþ þe Duke of Braban and oþere allyed vnto him of þe calynggyn of þe reaume of Fraunce to King Edward, be riȝte and by herytage, after þe deþ of Carol þe grete, King of Fraunce, broþer Germayne of[12] quene Isabelle,[13] King Edwardus Moder, þe whiche[14] was holden and ocupied vnrightfully by Philip of Valeys, þe Emessone of King Carol: ¶ þe whiche duke, and al his, in þe forseyd þinges[15] and in al oþere þerto longyng, wiþ al his men and goodes, King Edward founde redy vnto him, and maden and behyȝten[16] suerte, by good fayghte and truste; and after þat, þe king hasted him into Engelond aȝen, and left þere þe quene stille behynde hym in Braban.

¶ þan in þe xiiij. ȝere of his regne, whenne al þe lordeȝ of his[17] reaume, and oþer þat ownen to be at his parlement, weren clepte and assembled togedre in þe same parlement, holden at London after þe feste of sent Hillary, þe Kingeȝ nedes were putt forþe and promoted as toching þe kingdome of Fraunce; for whiche nedeȝ to be spede, þe King askeþ þe vif[18] part of alle þe meble goodeȝ of Engelond, and þe wolles, and þe ix. þe[19] schef of euery[20] corn; and þe lordeȝ of eny[21] toun wher suche þinges schulde be taxid and gaderd, shulde ansuere to þe King þerof; and al he had and helde at his owene liste[22] and wil. wherfor, yf y shal knowliche þe verrey treuþe,[23] þe ynnere loue of þe peple was turned into hate, & þe

[1] hit *om* T. [2] noon oþer R. [3] beyonde þe T. biyonde þe R.
[4] yeerli rente T [cp. Newers day, 302/12]. [5] and þis T. & þis R.
[6] off fulf R. [7] wif and T. [8] sche bere T.
[9] þere beryng childe *om*. R. [10] and *om*. T. [11] and þere T.
[12] to T. [13] Isobelle that was T. [14] that T. [15] *leaf* 174, *back*.
[16] behighte him R. [17] þe T. [18] xve T. xv. R.
[19] þe *om*. TR. [20] alle maner T. [21] eueri T. euerie R.
[22] luste T. lust R. [23] þe treuthe verray R.

*com*mune prayrs into cursinge, for cause *þat* the co*m*mune peple were strongliche ygreued. ¶ also þe forsaide Philip of Valeys of Fra*u*nce, had gadered to him a *gr*ete oste, and dest*r*oyede *þer*e in his *par*teys and kingdome, meny of þe Kinge3 frende3 of Engelonde, *with* tounes & castellis, and meny o*þer*e of hire lordshippe3; and meny harmes, schames, and despite3, dede vnto þe Quene. wherfore þe King, whan he ha[r]d[1] of þis[2] tydinge, he was st*ron*[g]lyche meued, and *þer*wiþ an-anger[d], and sente diu*er*se lett*er*s ou*er*e see to þe Quene, and to o*þer*e þat were his frende3, gladyng him, and *cer*tyfienge þat he wolde be þer [3]him-self in al þe haste þat he my3t. ¶ And anon, after Est*er*, when he had sped of al þing þat hym neded, & come fore,[4] he wente ou*er*e see a3en; of whos comyng, þe quene & al his frendis were wonder glad, & maden myche ioye; and al þat were his enemys, and a3ens hym helden,[5] madyn as[6] muchel sorwe. ¶ In þe same tyme þe King, þoru3 councel of his treue leiges, & councell[7] of his lordes *þat* þere weren *pr*esent wiþ him, toke þe King of Fra*u*nces name,[8] and toke & melled þe Kinge3 armes of Fra*u*nce qwarter*ly* w*ith* þe armes of Engelond, & com-ma*u*nnded forþwiþ his coigne of gold, vnder descripciou*n* of the name of Engelond and of Fra*u*nce, to be made, þe[9] beste *þat* my3te be, þat ys for to seyn, þe floreyn *þat* was clept þe 'noble,' of[10] value of vj s. & viij d., and þe 'half-noble' of[11] iij. s. iij. d., & þe 'ferþing' of value of xx. d.

Hov King Edward come to þe Sclus, and descomfited alle þe poer[12] of Fra*u*nce in þe same havene. Cap*itul*o[13] CC^mo^ xxvj^to^.[14]

And in þe next 3ere after, þat ys forto seyn, þe xv. 3ere of his regne, he comaunded, & lete[15] write in his charters, writtes, & o*þer*e lett*er*s, þe date of his regne of Fra*u*nce ferst,[16] & while *þat* he was þus doyng & trauaillyng in Fra*u*nce, þoru3 his councel he wrote to al *pr*elatis, dukes, Erles, barouns, &[17] noble lorde3 of his cuntre, and also to diu*er*s of þe co*m*mune peple, diu*er*s lett*r*es and maundementis, beryng date at Gandanu*m* þe .viij. day[18] Feu*er*er. ¶ And anon aftir, wiþ-yn[19] litel tyme, he come a3en into Engelond, wiþ þe

[1] herde TR. [2] these T. [3] *leaf* 175. [4] & come fore *om.* T. [5] helden *om.* T. [6] as *om.* T. [7] councell *om.* R. [8] kingis name of ffraunce T. [9] þe *om.* T. [10] of þe R. [11] of value of T. off value of R. [12] power R. [13] Capitulo *om.* T. [14] xxvj^to^ *om.* T. CC xxvij R. [15] dide T. [16] ferst *om.* R. [17] and þe TR. [18] day of TR. [19] yn a T.

quene and hire childrin. And in þe same ȝere, on Missomer even, he bigan to sayle towarde Fraunce aȝen, & manly & stifly ful vpon Philip of Valeys, the whiche long tyme lay, and had[1] gaderid to him a ful [2]huge and boystous navee of diuers nacions, in þe hauene of Sclus. And þere þey fouȝten togedir þe Kinge of Fraunce, and he wiþ her ostes from midday vnto þe morwe. ¶ In wiche batail were slayn xxx m[l] men of þe kingeȝ cumpanye of Fraunce, and meny shippes & Coggeȝ were take; and so, þoruȝ Godeȝ helpe, he had þere þe victorye, and bere þens a glorious chiuache. And in þe same ȝere, aboute sent Iames tyde, wiþout þe ȝates of sent Omers, Robert of Artoys, wiþ men of Engelond and of Flaundres, bitterly faught aȝens þe duke of Burgoyne & þe Frensshe men; at wiche bataile þer were slayn & take [3]of þe Frensshe men, xv. barouns, xx .iiij. knyȝtis; & shippeȝ & barges were take,[3] vnto þe noumbre of .CC. &[4] xxx. ¶ The same ȝere, þe King makyng &[5] abydyng oppon þe see[6] of Tourney, þe Erl of Henaude, wiþ englisshe archers, made asawte to þe toun of Seyntanmund, wher þat he slow L. knyȝtis & meny oþere, and destroyed also þe toun.

And in þe .xvj. ȝere of his regne folwynge, in þe wynter tyme, þe king, duelling still oppon þe forsaid sege, sent oft into Engelond to his tresorer & oþer purveyours for gold[7] & meny, þat shulde be sent to hym þer in his nede; but his procuratours & messagers cursidly & ful slowly serued him at his nede, & him deceyved. ¶ On wos faute & laches þe King toke trews bytwene hym & þe King of Fraunce. & þe King, ful of sorow woo & shame in his hert, wiþdrowe him from þe see,[8] and come into Brytaigne; & þer was so grete strif [9]for vitailles, þat[10] he lost meny of his peple. & whan he had do þere[11] þat he come for, he dressid hym ouer see[12] into Engelond warde. ¶ And as he sayled toward Engelond, in þe hye see, þe moste mishappes, stormes & tempeste, thundres & lightnynge, fil to hym in þe see, þe whiche was seyd þat it was done & areysed þoruȝ evel spirites made by sorcery and Nigromancye of hem of Fraunce. Wherfore þe Kingeȝ hert was ful of sorwe & angwysshe, weyling & sighyng, & said vnto oure lady on þis wyse. ¶ "O blessid lady, sent Marye! what is þe cause þat

[1] had *om.* T. [2] *leaf* 175, *back.*
[3–3] of þe ffrensshe men xv barons iiij xx knyȝtis & shippez & barges were take *om.* T. [4] and *om.* T. [5] makyng and *om.* T.
[6] sege T. king abydyng vp on þe sege R.
[7] for gold and R. for gold *om.* C. purveyours for gold T. [8] sege R.
[9] *leaf* 176. [10] so þat T. [11] þere *om.* R. [12] the see T.

euermore, goyng into Fraunce, al þinge3 & wederes fallyn to me ioyful & likyng & gladsome, & as y wolde haue hym[1]; but alwey turnyng into Engelond ward, al þinges fallen vnprofitable & harmfull!" ¶ Neuer þe latter, he, scapyng alle þe perilles of þe see, as God wolde, come[2] by nyght to þe tour of London. & þe same 3ere þe King held him[3] Cristemas att[4] Menres, and sent word to þe Scottes by his messagers, þat he was redy, and wolde fi3te wiþ him; but þe Scottis wolde not abyde þat, bot fled ouere þe Scottish see, & hid hem as wel as þey my3te.

¶ And in[5] þe xvij. 3ere of his regne, aboute þe feste of Conuersioun of seint Paule, King Edward, wan he had be in Scotland, & þe Scottis were fledde, he come a3en into Engelond, & a litel afore Lente was þe turnement at Dunstable, to þe wiche turnement comen al þe 3ong bachelrye & chyualrye of Engelond, with meny erles & oþer lordes; at þe wiche turnement þe King himself was þere[6] present. ¶ And þe nexte 3ere folwyng, [7]in þe xviij. 3ere of his regne, at his parlement holden at Westminster in þe xv.[8] of Pasche, Kyng Edwarde þe þrid made Edward, his ferst bygeten sone, Prince of Walys.[9] ¶ And in þe xix 3ere of his regne, anon after in Janyuer, before[10] Lente, þe same King Edward lete make ful[11] noble Iustice3, and grete festis, in þe place of his berþe, at[12] Wyndessore, þat þere weren neuere non suche seyn þere[13] afore.[14] at whiche festis and rialte were ij. Kinge3, .ij. quene3, þe Prince of Walys, þe Duk of Cornewaile, x erlis; .ix. Cuntesse, barouns,[15] & many burgeys, þe wiche my3t nou3t li3tly be noumbred; & of diuers lande3 be-3onde[16] þe see, were many strangers. and at þe[17] same tyme when þe[18] Iustes were don, King Edward made a grete soper, in þe wiche he[19] ordeyned feest, and bygan þe[20] Rounde Table, & ordeyned & stefastyd þe day of þe forsaide Rounde Table to be holde þer at Wyndissore in[21] Whitesen-wike euermore after erly.

¶ In[22] þis tyme, Englisshe men so muche hauntted and cleuyd to þe wodnes and[23] foley of þe strangers, þat fro þe tyme of þe comyng of þe Henauderns, xviij. 3ere passid, þey ordeyned and chaungyd ham euery 3ere diuers schappis of[24] disgynge3 of cloþing, of long large and wyde cloþis, destitu and desert fram al old honeste

[1] hem T. [2] and come TR. [3] his R. [4] at þe T. [5] in *om.* T. [6] þere *om.* R. [7] *leaf* 176, *back.* [8] xv^e^ day T. xv day R. [9] Wawys C. [10] in R. [11] ful *om.* TR. [12] at TR. and C. [13] þere *om.* T. [14] seen) afor þat R. [15] barouns *om.* T. [16] be3onde þe see T. þe see *om.* C. [17] þat T. [18] þe R. [19] whiche he R. he *om.* C. [20] his TR. [21] in þe R. [22] And in TR. [23] of T. [24] and R.

and good vsage; & anoþer tyme schorte cloþis & stret-wasted, dagged & ket, & on euery side[1] desslatered & boned, wiþ sleues & tapets of sircotys, & hodeȝ ouere longe & large, & ouermuche hang-ynde, þat if y soþ schal say, þey were more liche to turmentours & deuels in hire cloþing & schewyng & oþer arraye þen comen.[2] ¶ And þe wemmen more myseli ȝet pasted[3] þe men[4] in array, and cureslicher; for þey were so strete cloþed þat þey lete hange fox tailes sawyd beneþe with-inforþ hire cloþis, forto hele and heyde hire ars; þe whiche disgysengeȝ & pride perauenture afterward brouȝte forþe & encausid many mys-happis & mischeuys[5] in þe reaume of Engelond.

¶ The xx ȝere of King Edward he wente ouere[6] into Brytaigne & Gascoigne: in wos companye wente þe Erl of Warwyk, þe Erl of Suthfok, þe Erl of Honntyngdone & þe Erl of Arundel, and meny oþer lordes, & commune peple in a gret multitude,[7] with a grete navey of ij. C.[8] & xl. shippis, anon after mydsomer, forto avenge him of meny wrongeȝ & harmes[9] to hym done be Philip of Valeys, King of Fraunce, aȝens þe treues byfore-hand[10] grauntyd, þe whiche trewes he fasly & ownetreuly, by cawelaciones, loste and disqwatt.

Hov King Edward sayled into Normandye, & arryued at Hogges wiþ a gret oste; & of þe batayle of Sclus, and of[11] þe bygynnyg of þe seege of Calys, & also of þe batayll of Duresme. Cap°. CC^mo^ xxvij^mo^.[12]

IN þe xxj. ȝere of his regne, King Edward, þoruȝ councel of al þe grete lordeȝ of þis[13] reaume, clepid & gadered togedre in his parlement at Westminster before Estern, ordeyned him forto[14] passe ouer þe se aȝen, for to discesce and destrouble þe rebellis of Fraunce. and when his navey was come togedre & made redy, he went with an huge oste, þe xij. day of Juyll, & sayled into Normandye, & arryued at Hoggeȝ.[15] & whan he had restid him þere vj. daies, for bycause of trauelyng of the see, & forto haue out al his men wiþ al hire nessessaryes, out of hire shippes, he wente toward Cadomon,[16] brengyng, wastyng, & destroyenge al þe tounes[17] as he went by þe way. ¶ And þe xxvj day

[1] side TR. [2] þen comen *om.* T. [3] *leaf* 177.
[4] þe men *om.* T. [5] meny mischiefs and myshappeȝ R. [6] ouere *om.* R.
[7] multitudo C. [8] *om.* R. [9] meny harmeȝ & wrongeȝ R.
[10] biforhand R. byfore had C. [11] of *om.* T.
[12] ccxxviij R. xxvij *om.* T. [13] his R. [14] to T.
[15] and arryued at hoggeȝ *om.* TR. [16] Rone T. Paris R. [17] *leaf* 177, *back.*

of Juyll, at þe brigge* of Cadomy, manly & orpudly ystrengþed and defended wiþ Normannes, he had þere a stronge batayll, & a[1] longe-duryng, þoru3 which[2] grete[3] multitud of people was slayn. ¶ And þere were take prisoners, þe Erl of Ewe, þe Lord of Tankerwyle, & an C. oþer kinge3[4] and men of armes, & vj C. foote men ynombred; and þe toun & þe subbarbus vnto þe bare wallys of al þing þat my3te be bore & caryed out, was robbid and despoyled. ¶ aftirward þe King, passing forþe by þe cuntre aboute þe brede of xx. mile, he[5] wastyd alle manere þing þat he founde. Whan Philip of Valeys perseuyd[6] al þis, al-þou3 he were faste by with a stronge oste, he wolde nou3t come no ner, but brek al þe briggys be3onde þe water of Seyn, fro Roon vnto Paris, & him self fledde vnto[7] þe same Citee of Paris[8] wiþ al þe haste þat he my3te. ¶ fforsothe, þe noble King Edward, when he come to Paris brigge, and founde hit broken, wiþinne ij. dayes he lete make hit a3en; & in þe morwe after þe assumpcioun of oure Lady, King Edward passed ouere þe water of Seyen, goyng toward Cryesce, & distroyed by þe way tounes wiþ þe[9] peple duelling þerinne.[10] & in þe feste of sent Bartolomev, he passid ouere þe water of Comme owne hurte[11] wiþ al his oste þer as neuer afore honde was eny manere wey in[12] passage werto a M[13] men were slayn of hem þat letted hire passage ouer.

[*The Battle of Crecy.*]

¶ þerfore, þe xxvj. day of auguste, King Edward in a felde faste by Creyscy, hauyng iij.[14] bataillis of englisshe men, counttryd and mette wiþ Philip of Valeys, hauyng[15] wiþ him iiij. batailles, of þe wiche þe leste passid gretely þe nombre of þe Englisshe peple. & whan þes ij. ostes metten togedir, þer fil oppon him[16] þe King of Beme, þe Duke of Loroyne and erles also of Flaundres, Dalasoun, Bloys, Harecourt, Aumerle, and Nyvers, & meny oþer erlis, barouns,[17] lordes, Kinge3,[18] & men of armes, þe noumbre of a M[l] V. C. xlij.,[19] wiþout foet men & oþer men in[20] armevre, þat were noþing rekened. ¶ And for al þis, þe same vnglorious Philip wiþdrowe him, wiþ þe residue of al his peple; wherfore it was seyd in commune among

[1] a *om.* T. [2] whiche a T. with C. [3] þoru3 whiche a greet R.
[4] knyghtis T. kn3tis R. [5] and R. [6] herde R.
[7] to R. [8] & him self fledde vnto þe same Cite of Paris *om.* T.
[9] þe *om.* R. [10] þerine *om.* T. [11] owne hurte *om.* T. [12] ne TR.
[13] Where ij Ml R. [14] þe iije T. [15] *leaf* 178. [16] hem TR.
[17] barons and T. [18] knyghtis T. oþer lordis erlis Barons kny3tis R.
[19] MlVC xij T. Ml vije xlij R. [20] y TR.

his owne peple 'N*os*tre beall Retret,' that is for to sey, 'Our faire wiþdrawe þ hym.' Þan Kyng Edward & our Englyssh men, þankyng God for suche a victorye, aft*er* hire grete labour, takyng to hem al þyng nedeful for her susten*aun*ce & sauyng of hire lyf ferdred of hire enemys, rested hem þere. ¶ And ful erly in[1] þe morwe, after þe Frensshe men wiþ an houge passyng oste come a3en for to 3eue batayll & fi3te wiþ þe Englisshe men, wiþ whom metten & countreden þe Erles of Warwyk, Norhampton & Norfolk, wiþ hire companye & slowen ij. M[1],[2] & token meny prisoners of þe gentils of ham; and þe remen*aun*t of þe same oste fled iij. mile þens.

[*The Siege of Calais, and the Invasion of England by the Scots.*]

¶ And þe third day aft*er* the bataill, þe kyng wente to Caleys warde, dest*roy*ng al þe cuntre as he rode; whider,[3] whan þ*at*[4] he was comen,[5] þat is forto seyn, þe .iij. day of Septembre, he bygan to besege þe toun wiþ þe castell, and continued his sege fro þe forseyd iij. day of Septe*m*bre vnto þe iij. day of Auguste þe next 3ere after. & in [6]þe same 3ere, duryng þe sege of Caleys, þe King of Scotlond,[7] with a ful grete multitude of Scottis, come into Engelond, to Nevyles crosse, about seint Lukes day þe eu*aun*gglist, hopyng & trustyng to haue found al the land destitut & voyde of peple, forasmuche as þe Kyng of Engelond was be3end þe see, saue only p*re*stes & me*n* of holy chirche, & women & childrin, & ploghmen, & such o þ*er* laborers. ¶ And þ*er* þey robbeden, & deden mych p*rive*[8] sorow; but 3et fond þey ynowe þ*at* ham wiþstode, by þe *grace* of God. And so a day of batayll was assigned bytwene hem; & ce*r*teyne lordes & men of holy cherche þ*at* were in þ*at* cuntre, wiþ o þ*er*e co*mune* peple, fast by þe Citee of Duresme; at whiche day, þoru3 þe *grace* and þe helpe of God[9] þe Scottis[10] were ou*er*comen, & 3et were þey threfold so meny of hem[11] as of[12] Englisshe men[13]; and þ*er*e was slayn al þe chiualrye and kny3thood of þe reaume of Scotland. ¶ And þ*er* were take, as þey wolden haue fleed, Dauid, King of Scotlond, þe Erl of Mentyf, s*er*e William Douglas, & many o þ*er* g*re*te men. & aft*er* þ*at*, oure Englisshe men, when þey had restyd ham a fewe dayes, & had ordeyned kep*er*s of þe[14] Northcuntre, þey comen to London,

[1] on T. [2] ij M[1] men T. [3] whider *om.* TR. [4] þ*at* *om.* R. [5] was come þider R. [6] *leaf* 178, *back*. [7] Sctolond C. [8] o þ*er* T. [9] help & grace of God R. [10] Cottis C. [11] of hem *om.* R. [12] þe R. [13] peple TR. [14] þe land of the T.

and brou3t with ham þe King of Scotlond, & þes o*þe*r lorde3 þat were taken p*ri*soners, vnto[1] þe tour[2] of London, wiþ al þe haste þat þey my3te; & þer þey lefte ham in saue kepyng, vnto þe Kinge3 comynge,[3] and went[4] home a3en into hire owne cuntre. & after- 4
ward was þe Kinge3 raunsome of Scotlond taxid vnto an C. M[l] mark[5] of selu*e*re, to be payed in x 3er, þat ys forto sayne, eu*e*ry 3ere x þousand mark.

Of the conqueste and [6]wynnge of Caleys, and of[7] grete 8
pestelence & raynes þat fillen sone aftir; and of þe tresoun ordeyned a3e*n*s Caleys. Capitulo[8] CC[mo]. xxviij[o].[9]

IN þe xxij 3ere of King Edwardys regne, he wente ou*e*re in þe wynt*er* time, & lay al þe wynter in[10] þe seege of Caleys. [11]þe 12
whiche year, while þe sege lasted, Philip of Valeys,[11] Kyng of Fr*a*unce, cast & p*ur*posed, trecherously & wiþ fraude, to put awey þe sege,[12] & co*m*e þe xxvij day of Iuyll in þe same 3ere wiþ a grete oste & a str*o*ng poer, & neigrhed vnto þe sege of Caleys. ¶ þe 16
wiche Philip, þe last day of Iuyll, sent to King Edward word þat[13] he wold 3eue him playn bataill þe .iij. day next aft*er* þat, about euesong tyme, if þat he durst come fro þe sege & abyde hit. And whan Kynge Edward herd þat, wiþout eny long taryng or gr*e*te 20
avisement, he accepted gladly þe day & hour of bataill þat Philip had assigned. And whan the Kyng of Fr*a*unce herd þat, wiþout eny long tary*n*g or grete auysement, þe next nyght aft*er* he set hys tentys afyre, and vanysshed & went awey þens cowardly. ¶ Than 24
þey þat were in[14] þe toun and i*n* þe castell byseged, seyng al þis, how þat þei hade non o*þe*r helpe ne socour of þe Kinge of Fr*a*unce ne of his men, & also þat her vitailles wiþin hym[15] were spended and wasted, & for defaute of vitailles & of[16] refresshyng þey eten 28
hors, houndes, cattes & mys, for to kepe her trouþe as long as þey my3te. ¶ And whan they sawe, & was found amonge3 hem at þe last þat þey had no þing amonge hem[17] forto ete ne lyve by, ne no soco*ur* ne rescuyng of þe Frensshemen; ou þe to*þe*r[18] syde 32

[1] to T. [2] tone C. towr TR. [3] comyng to London T.
[4] wente TR. when C. [5] an C M[l] e CR. [6] *leaf* 179. [7] of þis R.
[8] Capitulo *om.* T. [9] xxviij[o] *om.* T. ccxxix R. [10] at T.
[11–11] þe whiche yeer while þe sege lasted Philip of Valeys T. the whiche yeer while the Sege lasted Philip of Valeis R. *om.* C.
[12] þe sege TR. þe *om.* C. [13] sent word to King Edward þat R.
[14] withine T. [15] hem T. [16] of *om.* T. [17] amonge hem *om.* R.
[18] on þat o*þe*r TR.

þey weste wel þat [1]þey must deie[2] for defaute, eyþer[3] 3elde[4] vp þe toun; and anon wenten & tokin[5] done þe banerys &[6] þe armes of Fraunce on euery side þat were hanged out, & wenten on þe walles of þe toun, and in oþer diuers placys, as naked as þey were bore, saf hire chirtys and[7] brechys, & heldyn hire swerdus nåked, & þe poynt downward, in hire handez, & puttyn ropys & halterys abowte hire[8] neckys, and 3olden vp þe keyes of þe toun and of þe Castell to Kyng Edward, wiþ grete fere and drede of hert. ¶ And when the King sav þis, as a mercyable king and lord, resceyued hym al to his grace; & a feue of þe grettste persones of stat and of gouernaunce of þe toun he sent into Engelond, þer for to abyde hire raunsome & þe kinges grace; & al þe communialte of þe toun þe king lete go wher þey wolde in pees, & wiþoute ony harme, & lete ham bere with ham al hire þingez þat þey myzte bere & cary away,[9] keping þe toun and the Castell to hymself. ¶ þan, þoruz mediacioun of cardenalles þat were sent fro þe pope, trewes was take þer bituene Fraunce & Engelond for ix moneþes þan next folwyng; & aboute mychelmasse King Edwarde come azen vnto Engelond wiþ a glorious victorye.

[*The Plague of* 1348.]

¶ And in þe xxiij. 3ere of his regne, in þe Este parteys of þe worlde þer aros & bygan a pestilence, & deþ of Sarasinez and Paynygneins, þat so grete a deþ was neuer herde of afore,[10] and þat wasted awey so þe peple þat vnneþes þe x[the] persone was left a[11]-lyue. & in þe same 3ere, aboute þe Sowthcuntreys and also in[12] þe west cuntres, þere fell so much [13]reyne and so grete waters þat, from Cristemasse vnto[14] Midsomer, þer was vnneþes day ne nyght but þat it rayned sumwhat; þoruz whiche watres, þe pestilence was sone fectid[15] & so habundant in all cuntres, & namely aboute þe court of Rome & oþer places & sore[16] costes,[17] þat vnneþes þere were left alyve[18] folk to bery ham þat were ded, honestly, but maden grete diches and puttes þat were wonder brood and depe, & þerin beried, & made a renge of þe[19] dede bodyes, & anoþer renge of erþe aboue ham; & þus were þey buried, & non oþer wise, but yf it were þe fewer þat were grete men of state.

[1] *leaf* 179, *back*. [2] eythir die T. [3] or ellis T.
[4] þey moste ouþer die for defaute or ellis yelde R. [5] took a T.
[6] of TR. [7] and her TR. [8] þeir R. [9] away *om.* T.
[10] bifore R. [11] on T. [12] in *om.* R. [13] *leaf* 180. [14] to T.
[15] was so effect T. was so effected R. [16] sondry T.
[17] & sore costes *om.* R. [18] on lyue T. [19] þe *om.* R.

¶ And after al þis, in þe xxiiij 3ere of his regne, hit was done King Edward to wite and vnderstonde of a tresoun þat was bygun at Caleys, and ordeyned for to selle þat[1] toun for a grete somme of Florens vnto King Philip of Fraunce, þoru3 þe falsnes & þe[2] ordinance of a kny3t þat me called Sir Geffrey of Charney, þat was wonder privey wiþ þe King of Fraunce. ¶ And whan þe King herd þis, he toke wiþ hym þe noblys & þe gentils, & opere worþy & orped men of armes, þat were þere present wiþ hym for þe solempnite of þat[1] hey[3] feest, & wel & wisely, in al þe haste þat he my3t, & as priuely as he my3t, he wente hym[4] ouere see,[5] and þat same tyme þe King held hys Cristemas at Haueryng. ¶ And in þe morwe after[6] Newers day, þe King was in þe Castell of Caleys wiþ his men of armes, þat none of[7] þe aliens wist þerof. And thilk[8] fals conspiratour & traytour, Geffrey of Charney, seth[9] he my3te not opynly haue his purpos of þe castell, pryuely & stelyngly he comen yn, & held þe toun wiþ a grete oste. [10]And when he wiþ his men were comen yn, he payed þe forsaide somme of florens, as couenaunt was bituene him, to a Geneweys in þe toun þat was keper of þe castell, & consentyng to þe same Gefferey in al þis[11] falsnesse & trecherye, & bonde þe Englisshe mynesters and seruaunt3 þat were in þe castel, þat þey my3t nou3t helpe hamself, ne lete ham of hire purpos. & þan, wenyng þat þey had be siker ynov, þey spaken hire wickednesse & falones oppynly & an hey, þat al men my3t here. ¶ And nov shul 3e here hov þey were desceyued; for þey comme in by a preuy posterne ouer a litel brigge was drawyn opp[12] of tre; & when þey were come yn sotelly and preuely, þe brigge was dravyn op and kepte, þat non of ham þat were come yn my3te go out, ne no moo come yn to hym. ¶ And anon our Englisshe men wente oute at priuy holes and wendawes, & ouere þe wallys of þe toun & of þe castel, & wenten & fou3ten manly wiþ þe Frenche men þat were wiþoute, & had the better of ham, þe wiche when þey were ocupied by ham self on[13] hire side. þe King, þat was wiþin þe toun, hauyng wiþ him[14] scharstly but xxx. men of armes, dreve out his swerd, & with a lowed voys cried on hey: "*A sent Edward! a sent Gorge!*" And when folk herde þat, þey come rennyng to him, and 3eauen þer[15] to hire enemys so stronge

[1] þe TR. [2] þe *om.* R. [3] hey *om.* T. [4] hym *om.* R. [5] þe see R.
[6] next T. [7] of alle T. [8] And whane þat R. [9] saw þat R.
[10] *leaf* 180, *back.* [11] þis *om.* T. his R. [12] was drawyn opp *om.* TR.
[13] on of C. on TR. [14] wiþ him *om.* R. [15] þer *om.* T.

assaute þat þer were mo þen ij. C. men of armes, and meny oþer, slayn, & meny fledden; & so, by þe grace of God, þe victorye fel to þe Englisshe men. ¶ þan þe King toke with him þis Gefferey, þat was fynder of þis trecherye, and also many oþer Frenshe prisoners, & withyn a while [1]after wente[2] aȝen into Engelond.

[*The Plague, or Black Death.*]

And in þis same ȝere, and in þe ȝere afore, & also in þe ȝere aftir, was so grete a pestilences of men fro þe Est into þe west, & namely þoruȝ bocches, þat he þat siked þis day, deid on þe iij. day after. ¶ To þe wich men þat so deiden in þis pestilens, þat haddyn but litel respyte of lyggyng, þe pope Clement, of his goodnes & grace, ȝaf ham ful remissioun & foryeuyng of all hire synnes þat þey were schryven of. & þis pestilence lasted in London fro Michelmasse into[3] Auguste next folowyng almoste an hool ȝere. & in þes dayes was deþ wiþoute sorwe, weddyng wiþoute frendship, wilfull penaunce, and derþe wiþout scarste, and fleyng wiþoute refute or[4] socour; ¶ ffor meny fledden fro place to place by-cause of þe pestilens; but þey were[5] enfecte, & myȝt not ascape þe deþe, after þe prophete Isaye[6] seith: "ho[7] þat fleeþ fro þe face of drede, he shal fall into þe diche; [8]& he þat wyndeþ hymself out of þe diche,[8] he shal be holde and teyd wiþ a grenne," but whan þis pestilens was cesid & endid, as God wolde, vnneþes þe x. parte of þe peple was left alyve,[9] and in þe same ȝere bygan a wonder þing þat al þat euere were born after þat pestilens hadden ij. chekteth in her heed lasse þan þey had afore.

How King Edward had a grete bataylle of þe Spaynardes in þe see faste by Wynchel-see, & of meny oþere þinge3. Capitulo CC.mo xxixo.[10]

And in þe xxv. ȝere of his regne, about sent Johnnes tyde in heruest, in þe see faste by Wynchelse, King Edward had a grete batayll wiþ men of Spayne, wher þat [11]hire shippes & navee ley cheyned togider, þat eiþere they muste fiȝt or drenche. ¶ And so, whan al our worþi men of armes on þe see coostes fast by Wynchelsee & Romeny were gadred,[12] & ouer navee & shippes al redy to þe werre, þe Englissh men metten manly & stifly with hire enemys,

[1] *leaf* 181. [2] wente R. *om.* C. [3] vnto R. [4] of T.
[5] were *om.* R. [6] Isaye *þat* T. [7] who R.
[8–8] *om.* R. [9] on lyue T. [10] xxix *om.* T. ccxxx R.
[11] *leaf* 181, *back.* [12] gatherid togidere T. gadred to gedir R.

comyng fersly aȝens ham, & when þe Spaynesshe vessellis & nauey were closid yn al about, *þer* men myȝte se a st*r*onge bataile vn boþe sides, and lo*n*g duryng; in þe whiche Batayle *þer* ner[1] but fewe þat fauȝten but þat[2] þey were sputesly herte, & fowle. and after þe batayle *þer* were xxiiij shippes of hereȝ ytaken; & so þe[3] Engligsshe men had þe bett*er*.

[*The new Coinage. The dear Summer. A Drought.*]

¶ And in þe next ȝere after[4] folwyng, of his regne xxvj^ti^, þe King, þoruȝ his councele, lete ordeyne & make his neve money, þat ys forto sey, þe peny, þe grote of valev of iiij. pens, & þe half-[5] grote þe[6] valev of ij d.; but hit was of lesse wyȝth þan þe old ster*l*yng was, by v. s. in þe pound. ¶ And in þe xxvij. ȝere of his regne was þe[7] grete derþe of vitailes, þe wiche was clepid þe dere somer. ¶ And in þe xxviij. ȝere of his regne in þe pa*r*lement holdyn at Westm*inster* after Este*r*, Sere Henry, Erl of Lancastre, was made Duk of Lancastre. and in þis[8] same ȝere was so grete a drowthe þat, fro þe moneþ of Marche unto þe moneþ of Iuyll, *þer* fel no rayne into[9] þe erþe; wherfore al[10] fruttys, sedis and erbis, for þe more[11] part was lost; in defaute wherof *þer* come so grete desise of men and bestes, & derþe of vetailes in Engelond, so þat þis lande, *þat* eue*r* byfore was plentues, had nede þat tyme to seche his vytaylis and refreschyng of o*þer* out yles and cuntres.

[*Negotiations about Guienne dropt.*]

¶ [12]And in þe xxix ȝere of King Edward, hit was acorded, gr*a*unted and swore, bytwene þe King of Fr*a*unce & þe King of Engelond, þat he shulde haue aȝen al his landeȝ and lordshipps þat longe to þe Duche of Guyne of old tyme, þe wiche had bene with-drawe & wrongfully occuped by diue*r*s Kyngeȝ of Fr*a*unce byforhand, to haue & to hold to Kyng Edward & to his eyrs & successours for eue*r*more, frely, pesible, & in good quyete, vppo*n* þis co*n*enaunt, þat þe Kyng of England shold leue of,[13] & relese all[14] right & clayme þat he had & claymed of þe kingdome of Fr*a*unce, & of þe title þat he toke *þer*of. Oppon wiche speche & couen*a*untes, it was sent to þe court of Rome on boþe sydes of þe Kyngeȝ,[15] þat þe forsaid couen*a*unt shold be enbulled. but God ordeyned bet*er*e for þe Knygeȝ worship of Engelo*n*d; for, what þoruȝ fraude &

[1] ne were but T. [2] þat *om.* T. [3] oure T.
[4] aft*er* *om.* T. folowynge R. [5] and half a TR. [6] of TR.
[7] þe *om.* R. [8] þe TR. [9] on TR. [10] alle þe R. [11] moste R.
[12] *leaf* 182. [13] of *om.* R. [14] al þe R. [15] of þe kynges *om.* T.

deceyte of þe Frensshmen, & what þoruȝ lettyng of þe pope & of þe court of Rome, þe forsaid couenauntes were to-sqwat & left of.

[*Transfer of the Staple of Wool to England.*]

¶ And in þe same ȝere þe Kyng reuoked, by his wys & descrete counceyll, þe staple of wolles out of Flaundres into Engelond, wiþ al þe libertees, fraunchises & free customes þat longen þerto, & ordeyned hit in Engelond in diuers places, þat ys forto[1] seyn, at Westminster, Caunterbery, Chichestre, Bristowe, Lincoln, & Hull, wiþ al þe forsaid pynge ȝ þat longen þerto. and þat þis þing sholde be þus done,[2] þe Kyng swore hym self þerto, & prins Edward his sone, wiþ oþer meny grete witnesse þat were þere than[3] present.

[*The French attempt on Guienne frustrated.*]

And in þe .xxx. ȝere of his regne, anon after Wytsonday, in þe parlement ordeyned at Westminster, hit was told and[4] certyfied to[5] þe King, þat Philip þat held þe kingdome of Fraunce was dede, and þat John his sone was crouned King, & þat þis John had ȝoue Karoll his sone þe Duchie of Guyone. ¶ Of þe[6] wiche þing, King Edward, whan he herd þerof, he[7] had grete indignacioun vnto hym, & was wonder wroþ, & strongly moved: and þer, afor[8] al þe worþy lordes þat þere were assembled at þat parlement, he clept[9] Edward his son to hym, to wiche[10] þe Duchye of Guyene by right heritage shold longe to, and ȝaf hit hym þer, byddyng and strengþing him þat he shulde ordeyne him to defende and avenge him oppon his enemys, & saue & mayntene hys ryȝt. ¶ And afterward, King Edward him self, and his eldiste[11] sone Edward,[12] wenten to diuerce placeȝ and senten in Engelond a pilgrimage, forto haue þe more grace and help of God and of his sentȝ. and þe secunde kalend of Iuyll, when al þing was redy to þat viage and batayleȝ, and al[13] his retennev & power assembled, and hire navey also redy, he toke wiþ him þe Erl of Warwyk, þe Erl of Suthfolk, þe[14] Erl of Salysbery, & þe Erl of Oxenford, and a M^t^ of[15] men of armes, and as many archerys, in þe Natiuite of our Lady, and at Plymmough token hire shippes, and bygan to sayle. ¶ And when[16] he come and was arryued in Guyene, he[17] was þer worshipfly take[18] and[19]

[1] to R. [2] þo R. [3] were þanne þere R. [4] *leaf* 182, *back.*
[5] to *om.* T. [6] þe *om.* R. [7] he *om.* R. [8] þerfore R.
[9] also and cleped R. [10] whom TR. [11] eldiste *om.* R.
[12] Prince Edward T. [13] al *om.* T. [14] þe erle TR. þe *om.* C.
[15] of *om.* TR. [16] when *om.* T. [17] and he T. [18] take *om.* R. [19] and *om.* C.

resceyued[1] of þe moste noble men and lorde3 of þat cuntre. And anon after, King Edward toke wiþ him his ij. sones, þat ys forto seye,[2] Sir Lyonell, Erl of Vltoun, and Sere Iohn his broþer, Erl of Rychemonde, and Sere Henry, Duke of Lancastre, wiþ meny Erles and lordes and men of armes, and too [3]M[t] archers, and sayled into[4] Fraunce, and reste him awhile at Caleys. ¶ and afterward, þe King went wiþ his folk aforsaide, and wiþ oþere sowdiours of be3ende þe see þat þere aboden þe Kinges comynge, þe secunde day of Nouembre, & toke his iorneye toward King Iohn of Fraunce, þere as he trowed to[5] haue y[6]found him faste by þe toun of Odomarum, as his letters and couenaunt3 made mencioun þat he wolde abyde him þere wiþ his oste. ¶ And whan King Ion of Fraunce herde of þe Kynge3 comeing of Engelond, he wente awey wiþ his men & his cariage, cowardly & schamfully fleynge, wastyng al vitaile3 ouer[7] al, þat[8] Englisshe men shold nau3t haue therof. ¶ And when King Edward herde þat he fleed, he pursued him wiþ al his mayne til[9] Hedoun; and þen he, by-holdyng þe wantyng and þe scarsites of vitaile3, and also the cowardice of the King of Fraunce, he turned a3en, wastyng al þe cuntre.

[*The Scots attack Berwick.*]

¶ And while al þese þinge3 were a[10]doyng, þe scottes prevyly and by ny3t token þe toun of Berwyk, sleyng ham þat wiþstode ham, and no man ellis; but,—blessid by god!—þe castel neuer-þe-latter was sauyd and kepte be Englisshe men þat were þerin. þen þe Kinge perceuyng al þis, turned a3en into Engelond as worþ as he my3te.[11] ¶ Wherfore in a parlement at Westminster was graunted to þe King of euery sake of[12] wolle .l. s. duryng þe terme of vj. 3ere þat he my3t þe my3tlyker fyght and deffende þe reaume a3ens þe Scottis and oþere mys-doers: and so, when al þinges were redy, þe King hastyd hym to þe seege warde.

Hov King Edward was crouned King of Scotland, and hov Prins Edward toke þe King of Fraunce, [13]& of þe bataylle of Peyters.[13] *Ca*pitulo CC[mo] Tricesimo.[14]

[1] and resceyuyd T. [2] þat ys forto seye *om.* TR. [3] *leaf* 183.
[4] toward TR. [5] forto T. [6] y *om.* TR.
[7] ouerall R. oþer al C. [8] þat þe T. þe R. [9] to T. [10] in T.
[11] myghte be R. [12] of *om.* T. [13–13] *om.* T.
[14] Triscesimo *om.* T. ccxxxi R.

And in þe xxxj. 3ere of his regne, þe xiij day of Ianuere, þe King beyng in þe castel of Beywyk wiþ a fewe men, but havyng *þer* fastby a gret oost, þe toun was 3old to him wiþout eny manere fens or difficulte. þan þe King of Scotlond, þat ys forto sey, Sire Iohn Bayllol, considering how þat God dede meny merueylles þinge3 & gracious for King Edward at his owene will fro day to day, he toke & 3af op þe reaume of Scotland, & þe croune of Scotland, att Rokesburgh, in-to þe Kinge3 handes of Engelond, vnder his patent lettres *þer* of y made. ¶ And anon after King Edwarde, in presence of al þe prelates & oþer worþi men & lorde3 þat þere were, lete croune hym King *þer*-of þe reaume of Scotland. and whan al þinge3 were done & ordeyned in thilk cuntres at his luste, he turned a3en into Engelond wiþ a houge worschip.

¶ And while þat þis viage was adoyng in Scotland, Sir Edward, Prins of Walys, as a man enspired of God, was in Guyne, in þe Citee of Burdeux, tretyng & spekyng of þe chalangyng, & of the Kinge3 right of Engelond, þat he had to þe reaume of Fraunce; and þat he wold avenged be wiþ stronge hond. & aH þe prelates, peris, & my3ty men of þe cuntre, consentid wele to hym. ¶ þan Sere Edward, the Pryns, wiþ a grete oste y gaderid to hym, þe vj. day of Iuyll went fro Burdeux, goyng & trauaylyng by meny diuers cuntres. And he toke meny prisoners, mo þan vj^{M} men of armes, by the cuntre as he iourneyed, & toke þe toun of Remorantyn in Saloigne, & beseged þe castell vj. dayes. and at þe vj. dayes ende þey 3olden þe castell vnto hym; and þere were taken þe Lord of Crom, and Sere Bursigand, and meny oþere knyghtes, xx and men of armes mo þan iiij.

[*The Battle of Poictiers.*]

And fro þens by Tureyne & Petey, faste by Chaneney, his noble men þat were with him hadden a strong bataill wiþ Frenssh men, and a C. of hire men of armes were slayn. and þe Erle

1 *leaf* 183, *back*. 2 but *om.* T. 3 bi a T. 4 any defence or any T.
5 fens or *om.* T. 6 & *gracious om.* R. 7 toke up T.
8 and 3af vp *om.* T. 9 of Scotland *om.* T.
10 Rokesburgh and bi Baillol þe kyng of Scotland y yonen frely T.
11 þe hondis of the kyng T. 12 y *om.* T. 13 him þere king off R.
14 þe reaume of *om.* R. 15 An TR. 16 þat *om.* T. 17 & *om.* TR.
18 wolde be avengid T. 19 y *om.* R. 20 meny *om.*
21—21 cuntre and he ordeynyd T. 22 *leaf* 184. 23 MS. *indistinct.*
24 an R. 25 of hire *om.* R. 26 And an C men T.

of Damice & þe stiward of Fraunce weren take, wiþ a[1] C. men of armes. In þe wiche 3eer, þe xix day of Septembre, fast by Peyters, þe same prins, with a M[l] and ix[c] men of armes and archers, ordeyned a bataill to Kyng Iohn of Fraunce, comyng to þe prins- 4
ward wiþ vij. M[l] cosyn men of armes, and oþer miche peple in a houge[2] passyng noumbre[3]; of[4] þe whiche þer was yslayne[5] þe Duke of Burboun and þe Duke of Athene3, & meny oþere noble men, & of þe pris men of armes a M[l], & of oþere (after þe trewe account & 8
rekenyng) viij. C.; and þe King of Fraunce was þer take, and Sere Philip his 3onger sone, and meny dukes & noble men & worþy knyȝtys, and men of armes aboute .ij. M[l]; and so[6] þe victorie fill þere to þe Prins & to þe peple of Engelond, by þe grace of God. 12
¶ And meny þat were take prisoners were set at her raunsoun, & oppon her trouþe & knyȝthoode were charged, and had leue to go; but þe Prins toke wiþ hym þe King of Fraunce, and Philip his sone, wiþ al þe reuerence þat he myȝte, & wente aȝen to Burdeux 16
with a glorious victorie. ¶ þe somme of þe[7] men þat were take prisoners, & of þe man þat were slayn, þis day of[8] bataill, was iiij. [M[l]]CCCC. xl.[9] And in þe xxxij. ȝere of Kyng Edward, þe .v. day of Maij, Prins Edward, wiþ King Iohn of Fraunce [10]and Philip his 20
sone, and meny worþy[11] prisoners, arryved graciously in þe hauene of Plymmouth; & þe xxiiij. day of þe same moneþ, about iij. after none, þey comen to London by London brigge, & so wente forþe to þe Kynge3 paleys of[12] Westmynstre. ¶ and þere fill so grete pres & 24
multitude of peple abute ham, to byholde and se þat[13] wonder and þat[14] real[15] siȝth, that[16] vnneþes fro Midday þey myȝte come to Westmynster. And þe Kinge3 raunsoun of Fraunce was taxied & set to iij. Milions of Scutes,[17] of whom[18] ij. shuld[19] be paid a 28
noble[20]: & ȝe shul vnderstonde þat a Milioun is a M[l]. M[l]. And after somme men, his raunsoun was set at iij. M[l][21] floreyns; & al is on in effecte.

And in[22] þis same ȝere was made solempne iustes in Smeþefeld, 32
beyng þer present, þe King of Engelonde, þe King of Fraunce & þe King of Scotlond, & [23]meny worþi noble[23] lordes. ¶ The xxxiij.

[1] an TR. [2] in a houge *om.* T. [3] the nombre T.
[4] aforesaid of T. oft passinge þe noumbre R. [5] slayne TR. [6] so *om.* T.
[7] þe *om.* TR. [8] in T. to R. [9] iiij. M[l] iiij. C. and xl[li] T.
[10] *leaf* 184, *back.* [11] oþer TR. [12] at T. [13] þat hit was T.
[14] þat *om.* R. [15] for hit was a roiall T. [16] and þat T.
[17] floreyns R. [18] wher of R. [19] ij mylions schulde T.
[20] anoon T. a noble *om.* R. [21] iij mylions of T. [22] in *om.* T.
[23–23] noble and worthi T. meny oþer noble and worthi R.

3ere of his regne þe same King Edward at Wyndesore, as wel for[1] loue of kny3thood as for his owne worship, & at þe reuerence of þe King of Fraunce &[2] oþer lorde3 þat were þere at þat tyme, he held[3] a wonder rial[4] and[5] costlow feest[6] of sent Gorge, passyng eny þat was hold euere afore.[7] wherfor þe King of Fraunce, in scornyng, sayd þat he saw neuere ne herd such solempne festes ne ryalties holden ne done with taylles, wiþoute[8] paying[9] of gold or siluer.

[*The Marriage of Duchess Blanche.*]

¶ And in þe xxxiiij. 3ere of his regne, þe xiiij. kalend of Iuyll, Sere Iohn, Erle of Richemund, Kyng Edwardes sone of Engelond, weddid dame Blaunche, duk Herryes dou3ter of Lancaster, cosyn to þe same Iohn, by dispensacioun of þe Pope. and in þe mene tyme were[10] ordeyned iustes at London iij. dayes of[11] þe rogacions,[12] þat is forto sey, þe Maiere of London, wiþ his xxiiij[ti] aldermen, a3ens al þat wold come. In whos name and stede þe King priuely wiþ his iiij. sones, Edwarde, Leonell, Iohn & Edmund, & oþere xix. grete lordes, helden þe feld wiþ[13] worshopp.

¶ And þis same 3ere (as it was tolde & seyd of ham þat sawe hit) þere come out blood of þe toumbe of Thomas, sumtyme Erl of Lancaster, as ffresshe as þat day þat he was done to þe[14] deþe. And in þat same 3ere King Edward chose his sepulture & his liggyng at Westminster, faste by þe shryne of Sent Edward.

[*Edward III goes again to France.*]

And anon after, þe xxvij. day of Octobre, he wente ouere see to[15] Caleys, makyng protestacioun þat he wold neuere come a3en into Engelond til[16] he had fully endid þe werre bytuene Fraunce and him. ¶ And so, in þe xxxv. yere[17] of his regne, in þe wynter tyme, King Edward was and[18] trauayled in þe Ryne costes; and aboute Seynt Hillere tyde he departed his oste, and went to Burgoyne-warde; wiþ whom þan mette pesibely þe Duk of Burgoyne, byhotyng to hym lxx. Mt Floreyns þat he shold spare his men[19] & his peple. And þe King[20] graunted at his request, & dwelled þere vnto þe xvij. day of March, þe wiche day it come to King Edwardes ere þat straunge þennes on[21] þe see vnder þe Erle of Sent Paule, þe xv

[1] for the T. [2] and of T. [3] beheld C. he helde TR. [4] roiall feste T [5] and a T. [6] feest *om.* T. [7] bifore T. [8] oute eny R. [9] any paiying T. [10] *leaf* 185. [11] aftir R. [12] rogacion) Daie3 R. [13] with *om.* T. [14] þe *om.* TR. [15] vnto T. [16] til that T. [17] yere of T. yer of R. yere *om.* C. [18] was and *om.* T. [19] lond T. [20] king it R. [21] were on TR.

day of Marche, liggyng aweyte oppon þe tounes of Hastynge, Rye, and o*þer* places & villages on þe see coostes, hadden[1] entred as enemyes into þe toun of Wynchelsee, & slowen al þat eu*er*e withstode ham and wiþseyd her comyng; wherfore þe King was [2]gretly meved and wraithed. ¶ And he turned a3en to Parys-ward,[3] co*m*maunded his ost to destroye & slee wiþ deynt & strengthe of sword hem þat he had byfore hand y[4]sparid. and þe xij day of Aprill þe King come to Parys; & þ*er*e he departed his oost in ix diu*er*se bataylles, *with* iiij[c] of kny3t*es* newe dubbed, on þe to[5] syde of hem.[6] And Se*r*e Herry, Duk of Lancastre, vnder pees & trewes wente to þe 3ates of þe Citee,[7] p*ro*fryng to hem þat[8] wold abyde a batayl in þe feld, vnder suche a condicioun, þat yf þe King of Englonde were ou*er*come (þ*er*e as God forbede hit!), þat þen he shold neu*er*e chalange þe kingdome of Fr*a*unce. ¶ and whan he hād of hem but a short & an[9] scornfull answ*er*e, he told þe King & his lordes what he had herd, & wat þey saide. and þan fortwiþ þe newe knightes, *with* meny o*þer*e, makyng assaute to þe Citee,[10] destroyeden hougily þe subarbes of þe Citee. And while al þese thinges were adoyng, þe Englissh men made hem aredy to be avengid vpon þe shame &[11] despit þat was done þat 3eer at Wynchelse, and ordeyneden a nave of iiij shippes of m*en*nes of London & of[12] o*þer* marchauntes, & xiiij M[l] of men of armes & archers, & wenten & destroyeden hem, & scymed þe see,[13] & manly token, & helde þe Ile of Caux; wherfore þe Frenssh men, þat is for to sey, þe abbot of Cluyne, þe Erle of Tankervile & Se*r*e Bursigand, þat than was stiward of Fr*a*unce, wiþ meny of[12] o*þer* men of þe same cu*n*tre, by co*mmun*e assent of þe Lord Karoll, þat þo was regent of Fr*a*unce, þey hasted hem, & wente*n* to[14] þe King of Engelonde, askyng & bysekyng hym[15] stedfast pees, & eu*er*elastyng, vpon[16] certeyne condicions þat þer were wreten schewed.[17] ¶ The whiche, whan þe King and his councell had seen, it plesed ham neu*er*e a dele. [18]But seþ it wolde be non o*þer*e, in[19] tyme of bet*er*e acorde & deliber*acioun*, þe Frenssh men bysily & wiþ grete instaunce askede trewes for her see coostes; & þe King[20] gr*a*unted hem. and in þe

[1] and hadde TR. [2] *leaf* 185, *back*. [3] Parice warde and TR.
[4] y *om*. R. [5] that oon T. on þat o R. [6] him T. [7] of Paris R.
[8] that he T. þat he R. [9] a TR. [10] Citee and thei T. [11] & *om*. TR.
[12] of o*m*. TR. [13] and skemed þe See and destroied ham R.
[14] vnto T. to to C. [15] hym of T. them of R. [16] vpon a TR.
[17] were schewid writen T. writen R. [18] *leaf* 186. [19] til. R.
[20] and he T.

morwe after þe ocptas of Pasche, þe King turned hym with his ooste towardes Orlyaunce, destroyng & wastyng al þe cuntre by þe wey. And as þey wenten þiderward, þere fil oppon hym suche a storme & tempest þat non of our nacioun herd ne sawe neuere non such; thurght þe whiche, þousandeȝ of our men & of hers (*sic*) horses in here[1] (*sic*) iourneying (as it were þorugh vangeaunce), sodenly were slayn & perisshed, þe which tempestes ful mich ȝet[2] ferid not þe Kyng, ne myche of his peple, þat þey ne wenden forth in her (*sic*) viage þat þey had begunne.

[*Peace made between England and France.*]

¶ Wherfore, abute þe feest of Holy-Rode Day in Maii, fast by Carnocum, þe forseid lordes of Fraunce, metyng þer with þe King of En[g]londe, a pesible acorde & a fynal, oppon certeing condiciouns & grauntes articulerlich[3] gaderid & wryten togeder, euermore to laste, ful discretly made, & to boþe kyngges profitable, & to her reumes, boþ wiþ on assent of Karoll þe Regent and Gouernour of Fraunce, and of[4] Parys of the same reaume, ywretyn & made vnder þe date, at[5] Carnacum, þe xv day of May, þey offred & profred to þe King of Engelond, requireng his grace in alle thynges ywriten,[6] þat he wold benyngly admitte hem, and hold[7] hem ferme & stable to hem, & to her eires for euermore. þe wiche þinges and articles, whan Kyng Edward had seyn, he[8] graunted hem, so þat boþe parties sholde be yswore[9] on Goddis body and on þe holy euaunglies, þat þe forsaide couenauntȝ shold be stablysshed. & so þey acordeden graciously; þerfore þere were ordeyned & dressid on euery syde too barons,[10] ij. baronettes, ij. knyghtes, to admitte & receyve þe othes of þe Lord Karoll, regent of Fraunce, & of Sir Edward, [11]the first sone and Eyr of King Edward of Engelond; and þe x. day of Maii ther was songen a solempne masse at Parys, and aftir þe iij 'agnus dei' yseid,[12] wiþ 'dona nobis pacem,' in presence of the forseid men, that there yordeynid[13] to admitte and resceyve the oþes, and of all oþer þat þer myght be, the same Karoll leyd his right honde on the patene wiþ Goddis body, & his left hand on þe missale, and sayd: ¶ "We, N and N, sweryn on Goddis body and on þe[14] holy gospelleȝ, þat we schulle trewliche and stedfastly holden toward vs

[1] his R. [2] ȝet *om.* T. [3] articulerli was R. [4] of þe T. [5] of T. [6] writen R. [7] hold *om.* T. [8] hem he R. [9] swore TR. [10] too barons *om.* TR. [11] *leaf* 186, *back.* [12] was seide T. was seid R. [13] ordeynyd T. þat were þere ordeyned R. [14] this T.

þe pees and[1] þe acorde made bytuene þe[2] ij kinge3, and in no manere to do the contrarie." & þer, amonge al ij his[3] lordes, for more loue & streng[t]he of wytne3, he[4] deled & departed þe reliqes of þe croun of Crist to þe knightes of Engelond: and þey[5] curteysly token her leve. And in þe Fryday next, þe[6] same manere othe in presences of þe[7] knightes, & of[8] al[9] oþer worthy men, Prins Edwarde made at Loners. Afterward, boþe Kynge3, and her sones, and þe moste noble men of boþe reaumes, wiþin þe same 3er maden þe same oþe. & forto strengthe al þes forsaid þinge3 þe King of Engelond axed þe grettest men of Fraunce; and he had his axyng; þat is forto seye, .vj. dukes, viij. Erle3, xij. lorde3, that is to seyn, baronys and worthy knightes. And whan þe place and þe tyme was assigned in þe whiche bothe Kynges with her counceyll shold come togedir, al þe forsaid thynge3 bytwene hem yspoke, for to[10] ratifie and make ferme & stable.

þe King of Englond anone wente toward þe see, & at Hounflete he bygan to sayle, levyng to his ostes that were yleft[11] behind him (bycause of his absence) mych hevynes; & after þe xix day of Maii he come into Englond, & went to his paleys at Westminster on Seynt Dunstons day. & þe iij. day after, he visited John, þe King of Fraunce, þat was in þe Tour of London, & deliuered him frely from[12] al manere prisoun, saue ferst they were acorded of iiij.[13] Milions of ffloreyns for his raunsom, and þe King comforted hym & chered him in alle places, wiþ all solaces & merþe3 that longen to a king, in his goyng homward.

¶ And þe ix day of Iuyll in þe same 3er, þe same Iohn, King of Fraunce, that aforhand[14] lay here in ostage, wente home a3en into his owne lande, to trete of þo þinge3, & of oþere that longeden & fillen to þe gouernance of his reaume. And afterward metten and comen togedir at Caleys bothe ij Kinges, wiþ boþe hire counceyll, about Alhalwen tyde, and þer were shewed the condiciouns and þe poyntes [15]of þe pees, & of þe acorde of boþe sydes ywriten; & ther,[15] without eny wipseying, of boþe sides graciously þey[16] þere acorded . and þer [17]was done and sung[17] a solempne masse, and after þe iij. Agnus Dei, vppon Goddes body & also on þe Masse-book, boþe Kynge3, & her sones, & þe grettest lorde3 of boþe

[1] as C. and R. [2] þo R. [3] his *om.* R. [4] se he R. [5] þey *om.* T. [6] aftir þe T. [7] þe forseide T. þe forsaid R. [8] of *om.* [9] alle *om.* T. [10] to for to C. [11] left TR. [12] *leaf* 187. [13] iij TR. [14] aforsaid þat R. [15–15] of þe pees . . . ther *om.* TR. [16] þey *om.* TR. [17–17] was songen and done T.

reaume3, and of hir counceill that* þere were[1] þan present, & not had yswore byfor, þe forsaide oþe that they[2] had made, & was titled bytwene hem, þey behighten þere to kepe, & all oþer coue-
4 nauntes þat were bytuene ham yordeyned.[3] ¶ And in þe[4] same 3er men, bestes, trees, & housyng, wiþ sodeyn tempest & strong lightnyng were yperisshed[5]; & the deuel appered bodyly in mannis liknes to myche peple as they went in diuerses pleces in[6] the
8 cuntre & spake to hem.[7]

[*A Parliament at Westminster. Eclipse of the Sun; Marvels, etc.*]

Kyng Edwarde in þe xxxvj 3ere of his regne anon after Cristemasse in þe feest of[8] Conuercion of seint Poul, held his parlement at Westminster, in the which was put forþ and showed þe
12 acorde and the tretys þat was stablysshed and ymade[9] betwene þo ij. kinges; the which ac[10]orde plesid to[11] myche peple; and þerfore, by þe Kynges commaundement, þere were gadryd and comyn togider in Westminster cherche, the ferst Soneday of[12] Lente, that
16 is to sey, the ij. Kalend of Feuerell, the forsaid English men and Frensshe men; wher was song a solempne masse of þe Trynyte, of[13] þe Erchbisshop of Caunterbury, Mayster Symond Islepe. And whan Agnus Dei was do, þo[14] King, beyng þere with his sones, and
20 also wiþ þe kynges sones of Fraunce, and oþer noble and grete lordes, with candels ylight,[15] and crosse ybrought[16] forth al þat were called þerto that were not yswore[17] afor sworen[18] þat same othe that was writen oppon goddis body & oppon þe masse boke in þis wyse,
24 "We, N. and N., sweren oppon holy Goddes body, and on[19] þe gospels, stedfastly to hold and kepe toward vs þe pees and þe acorde made betwene the too kynges, and neuere forto do þe contrarie." And whan they had þus swore,[20] þey token her scrowes that þe
28 othes were comprehendid in, to the[21] Notaries.

¶ And this same 3er, in þe Ascencioun, even about Midday, was seyn the Eclipse of þe sunne; and þer folowed suche a newe[22] droght that, for defaut of rayn, þer was grete bareynes of corn, froyt,[23] and
32 hey, and in þe same 3ere, the vj. kalend of Iuyn, þere fill a sangweyn rayne, almoost like blood, at[24] Burgoyne; and a sangweyn

1 were þere R. 2 that thei T. þat þey R. they *om.* C. 3 ordeynyd T. 4 þis TR. 5 perisshed R. 6 of T. 7 ham. Capitulum ccxxxij R. 8 feest of *om.* TR. 9 maad TR. 10 *leaf* 187, *back.* 11 to *om.* R. 12 in T. 13 bi T. 14 the TR. 15 light TR. 16 brought R. 17 Swore R. 18 sworen *om.* T. 19 I-swore T. 20 þon T. 21 the *om.* R. 22 newe *om.* R. 23 in R.

crosse, fro morwe vnto pryme, was seyn and apperid at Boloigne in þe eyr, þe whiche meny a man sawe; & after, it mevid & fill in[1] þe myd see.

¶ and in þe same tyme in Fraunce & in Engelond, & in oþere meny[2] landes as þey had[3] duelled in[4] playn cuntres & desert bare wytnes, sodenly þer apperid ij castels, of þe whiche wenten out ij. ostes of armed men; and þe to[5] oste was helid and clothed in white, and þe toþere[6] in blak; and whan[7] [8]batayl bytuene hem was bygunne, the white ouercome þe blake, and anone [9]after, þe blak token hert to hem & ouercome þe white; and[9] after þat, þey went aȝen into her castellis, and þat[10] þe castels & al þe oostes vanisshed awey. and in þis same ȝere was a grete & a[11] houge pestilence of peple, and namely of men, whos wyues, as wymmen out of gouernaunce, token husbondes, as wel straungers as oþere lewed and symple peple, þe whiche, forȝetyng her owne wurschip & berthe, coupled & maried hem with hem[12] þat were of lowe degre & litel reputacion.

¶ In this same ȝere deide Herry, þe[13] Duke of Lancastre; & also in this ȝere, Edward, Prins of Walys, weddid þe Cuntesse of Kent, þat was Sere Thomas wyf[14] Holande, þe whiche was departed & deuorsid sumtyme fro þe Erl of Salysbury, for cause of þe same knyght. And about þis same tyme þere bygan & aros a grete companye of diuers nacions gaderid togeder, of wom her leders & gouernours were Englissh peple; & þey were clept 'a peple without an heed,' þe whiche deden mych harme in þe partye of Fraunce; & not long after þere aros anoþer cumpanye of diuers nacions þat was called 'þe white companye,' þe whiche, in þe parties & cuntre of Lumbardye, dede myche sorwe. þis same ȝere Sere Iohn Gaunt, þe sone of King Edwarde þe third, was made Duk[15] of Lancastre, by resoun & cause of his wyf, þat was þe douȝter &[16] eyre of Herry, sumtyme Duk of Lancastre.

Of the grete wynde, & howe Prins Edward, þe[17] lordship of Guyene, of King Edward his fader toke of him,[18] & went thider. Capitulo cc. xxxij.[19]

[1] into T. [2] meny oþer R. [3] þat R. [4] in the TR.
[5] þat oon T. and þat on R. [6] þat oþir T. [7] whenne the T.
[8] *leaf* 188. [9–9] after þe blak . . white and *om.* T. [10] þanne TR.
[11] An T. [12] with hem *om.* T. [13] þe *om.* R. [14] wyf of T.
[15] þe Duke T. [16] and the T. [17] had þe T.
[18] toke of him *om.* TR. [19] cc°. ccxxxiij R.

And in þe xxxvij ȝer of King Edward, the xv day of January, that is to sey, on Seynt Mauris day, about evesong tyme, *þer* aroos & come such a wynd out of þe suoth, wiþ such a fersnes, that he brast &[1] blewe [2]doun [3] to ground hye houses, & strong byldynges, toures, cherches, &[4] steeples, & o*þer* *strong*[5] þynges; and al o*þer* strong[6] werkes þat stoden still, were so yshake *þer*ewith, þat þey ben ȝett, and shol be eu*er*more, the febelere & weyk*er* while þey stonde; & þis wynd lasted *with*oute eny cesyng vij. dayes continuels.

¶ And anon aft*er*, *þer* folowed such watres, in hey tyme & in hervest tyme, þat all feld-werkes were strongly let & left vndone, and in þe same ȝere *Prins* Edward toke þe Lordship of Guyene, & dede to Kyng Edward his fad*er* feaute & homage *þer*fore, & went ou*er* see into Gascoigne, wiþ his wyf & his childryn; & anone aft*er*, King Edward made *Sere* Leonel, his sone, Duke of Clarence, &[7] Edmund, his o*þer* sone, Erl of Caumbrig. ¶ and in þe xxxviij ȝere of his regne, hit was ordeyned in þe *parl*ement, þat men of lawe, bothe of þe tempo*r*all & of[8] holy chirche lawe, fro þat tyme forth shold plede in her moder tunge. And in þe same ȝere comen into Engelond thre kinges, that is to sey, þe King of Fr*a*unce, the King of Cypres, & þe King of Scotlande, by cause to visite & to speke wiþ þe King of Engelond, of whiche[9] þey were wonder welcomen[10] & myche yworshiped.[11] & aft*er* þat þey had ben her longe tyme, ij of hem wenten aȝen home into[12] her owne kingdomes; but þe King of Fr*a*unce, thurgh grete sikenes & malady þat he had, left still in Engelonde.

¶ and in þe xxxix ȝer of his regne, was a strong and an houge frost, & that lasted long, that is forto sey, fro Sent Andrewes tyde vnto þe xiiij kal*end* of Aprill, that þe tilthe &[13] sowyng of þe erthe, & o*þer*e suche feld werkes and hand werkes, were myche yyet[14] & lefte[15] vndo, for colde & hardnesse of[16] erthe.

¶ And at Orrey in Brytayne þat tyme was ordeyned a grete dedly batayll bytwene *Sere* Iohn of Mounfort, Duk of Bry[17]tayne, & *Sere* Charles of Bloys, but þe victorie fill to þe forseyd Sir John, thurgh help and socour of þe Englissh men; & *þer*e were take meny kni*ȝt*es & sqwyers and o*þer* men þat were*n* ynoumbred.[18] In the

[1] touris chirchis and T. [2] *leaf* 188, *back*. [3] down *om*. T.
[4] toures cherches and *om*. T. [5] strong *om*. T. [6] strong *om*. R.
[7] and *sir* R. [8] of the T. [9] whom T. of whom R.
[10] home ayen to T. to R. [11] worshiped R. [12] to R. [13] and þe R.
[14] let R. [15] moche I left T. [16] of the T. [17] *leaf* 189.
[18] men of name R.

whiche bataill was slayn Charlis hym*self*, with al þat stood about hym; & of þe[1] Englissh men þer were slayn but vij. And in this 3ere deid at Savey, Iohn, the King of Fraunce, whose seruise & exequyes King Edwarde lete[2] ordeyne, & dede in diuerses places worschipfully to be done, and to douorre of worschipfull men ordeyned hym worthily to be ledde, wiþ his owne costes & expenses; from[3] þens he was fet into Fraunce, & beried at Seynt Denys.

[*Peter's Pence stopt. Rain, Sparrow-fights, Plagues.*]

¶ In the xl 3eer of King Edward the vij, kalend of Feuerer, was born Edward, Prins Edwardes sone, þe whiche, whan he was vij 3ere olde, he deide. And in þe same 3er hit was ordeyned that seynt Petris pens, fro þat tyme forþ shold not be payd, þe whiche Kyng Iva, sumtyme King of Englond, of þe cuntre of West-Saxons, that bygan to regne in þe 3er of our Lord DClxxix, ferst graunted to Rome, for þe scole of Engelond ther to be continued. And in this same 3er þere fill so mich rayne in hey-tyme, that it wasted[4] & distroyed boþe corn & hey; and þer was suche a debate & fightyng of sparows, by diuers places in thes[5] dayes, that men founden vnnumerable multitudes of hem dede in feldes as þey wenten. And ther fill also such a pestilens, that neuere non such was sene in no[6] mannes tyme alyve[7]; for meny men, anone[8] as þey were go to bedhool[9] & in good poynt,[10] sodeinly þey deiden. also þat tyme a sikenes þat men callen 'þe pokkes,' slow boþe men and whymmen, þour3 hire enfectyng. ¶ and in þe xli. 3er of his regne[11] King Edwarde, was bore at Burdeux Richard the seconde, [12] sone of Prins Edward of Engelond, þe whiche Richard[13] King Richard of Amorican heved at þe funtston, after whom he was cleped Richard. & þis same Richard, whan his fader was dede, & Kyng Edward also, was crouned Kyng of Engelond þe xj 3ere of his age, thurgh ryght lyne & heritage, & also by commune assent & desir of þe comnalte of þe reaume.

[*With Du Guesclin's help King Pedro of Spain is deposed, and King Henry elected*, A.D. 1366.]

¶ About þis tyme, at King Edwardes commandement of Engelond, whan al þe castelles & tounes were 3olde to him, that

[1] þe *om.* TR. [2] lete *om.* R. [3] And from T. And fro R.
[4] lasted T. [5] Tho T. [6] no *om.* R. [7] on lyue T.
[8] anone *om.* R. [9] hool T. [10] point anon R. [11] his regne *om.* TR.
[12] *leaf* 189, *back*. [13] Richard was C. Richard TR.

long[1] weren hold in Fraunce by a grete coumpany assembled togider, Sere Bertram Cleykyn, knyȝt, and[2] a[3] orpid man & a good werreour, went & purposid hym to put out Piers, Kyng of Spayne, out of his kingdome wiþ help of þe most partye of þe forsaide grete[4] cumpanye; trustyng also oppon help & fauour of þe Pope, for as myche as hit come to his eres that þe same Piers shold lede & vse the most[5] worst & synfullest lyf out.[6] ¶ The wiche Peris, King of Spayne, ysmytyn[7] with drede of this tydyng, fled into Gascoigne to Prins Edward, forto haue help & socour[8] of hym. and whan[9] he was fled out of Spayne, Herry his broþer, þat was a bastarde, by assent of þe moste partie of Spayne, & þorughe help of þat ferfull cumpany þat y spak of arst, was made & crouned Kyng of Spayne: and þe noumbre of þat same cumpany was rekened &[10] set at þe noumbre of lx. M[t] fighting men.

[*A Danish Expedition against England.*]

¶ This same ȝere, in þe monþe of Iuyn, þere come a gret companye & navee of þe Danes, & gaderyd hem togedir in þe Norþ See, purposyng hem to come into Engelond, to reue & to[11] robbe, and also to[11] slee; with[12] whom, countreden & metten in þe see, Maryners and oþer orpyd fightyng men of the same cuntre, &[13] disparpled hem[14]; & þey,[15] ashamed, went home aȝen into her owne cuntre. But amonge al oþere was[16] a boystous and a strong vessell of her nauie that was ouere-sayled of the[17] Englissh men, & was perisshid & dreynt; in þe whiche, þe stiward & oþer worthy & grete men of Denmark, were take prisoners, &, by the Kyng of Engelond & his councell, yprisoned.[18] ¶ The whiche lordes, þe Danes afterward comen & soghten[19] al about for to haue had[20] her goodes þat þei had lost; and þei, not wel apayed ne plesid of þe answere þat þei had here,[21] turned homwardes[22] aȝen levyng behind hem in her ynnes, pryvyly ywriten,[23] in scrowes and on walles, "ȝet[24] *shull Danos þes Wanes.*" Than happed þere an Englissh writer &[25] wrote aȝens þe Danes in þis manere wyse: *Her shull Danes fett*[26] *banes.*

[1] long *om.* TR. [2] and *om.* TR. [3] an TR. [4] grete *om.* R.
[5] most *om.* R. [6] out *om.* R. [7] ysmytyn *om.* T.
[8] socoure and help T. socour and help R. [9] whan *om.* T.
[10] rekened & *om.* T. [11] to *om.* R. [12] *leaf* 190. [13] and thei T.
[14] hem *om.* T. [15] þey *om.* T. [16] þer was R. [17] the *om.* T.
[18] prisoned T. [19] sente R. [20] had with C. had TR.
[21] þei T. here *om.* R. [22] hoom R. [23] writen R. [24] þe T.
[25] & *om.* R. [26] sette her TR.

[*The deposed King Pedro of Spain appeals to the Black Prince for help.*]

And in þis tyme, Peirs, Kyng[1] of Spayne, *with* oþer Kynges, þat is forto sey, þe King of Nauerne, &[2] þe King of Malogre, beyng menes, wenten bitwene, & prayed counceyl[3] & help of Sere Edwarde, þe Prins þoneȝ, whose counceil, whan he had vnderstond her articles & desire þat he was requyred of ij.[4] kinges, lothe he was, and ashamed, to sey 'nay,' & contrarie hem; but noþeles he was agast lest it sholde be eny preiudice aȝens þe Pope.[5] Long he taried hem or he wolde graunte & consente þerto, til he had better counceyl & avysement *with* good deliberacioun of King Edward, his geter and[6] his fader. ¶ But whan þat[7] he was with euery dayes & continuele bysechynges of so meny noble men yrequired[8] & spoken to, & wiþ meny prayers ysent[9] and made bituene þam, Prins Edwarde sent to his fader—boþe by pleynyng lettres, and also by confortable, conteynyng al her suggestions and causes, wiþ al þe toþer[10] Kynges epistles & lettres forto haue[11] comfort and helpe of þe wronges, not only to þe Kyng of Spayne ydo, but also for such þinges þat might fal to oþere kynges also, if it ner not þe sonner holpen & amendid, þurgh þe dome & help of knyghthood to hem that it asked & desired. ¶ The which lettres, whan þe kyng and his wys counceyll had seyn & vndirstonden, he had grete compassioun & heuynesse of such a kynges spoylyng and robbyng, wiþ myche vermaille[12]; and sent aȝen comfortable letteres to Prins Edward, his sone, and to þe oþere forsaide kynges, & warned hym forto arme hym & ordeigne hym aȝens þat mysdoer, & to wiþstond hem, by þe help of God, that weren such enemyes to kynges.

[*The Black Prince undertakes to help the King of Spain.*]

¶ Whan this[13] noble Pryns had resceyued þes letteres, hym-self, wiþ þe oþere kynges byfor all her counceyll clept togeder or þat he wold vndirtake þe querell be[14] bonde, & knet sore þe King þat was deposid wiþ a grete othe, þat is forto sey, þat he shold euere after mayntеigne the ryȝt byleue and faith of holi chirche, & holy chirche[15] also wiþ al her mynistres, rightes & libertees, to defende from all her enemyes; and all eueles[16] & al þat were þere aȝens,

[1] kyng *om.* T. [2] & *om.* R. [3] of counseH T. [4] þo TR.
[5] pope and T. [6] his geter & *om.* TR. [7] þat *om.* TR.
[8] required T. [9] sent T. [10] oþer R. [11] *leaf* 190, *back.*
[12] mervaiH R. [13] þe R. [14] he R. [15] & holy chirche *om.* R.
[16] & all eueles *om.* TR.

bytterly to ponysshe & destourble, & al þe rightes libertees & pryuileges of holy cherche encrece, mayntaigne & amende, & al þinges þat were wrongfully benome, wiþdrawe & bore awey, by hym or by eny oþere by cause of hym, hastly to restore aȝeen, and to dryve & put out Saraȝins & al oþere mysbyleued peple out of his kyngdom, wiþ al his strenghe & power, & suffre ne admitte none such for no manere þing, ne cause to duell theryu; and þat whan he had take a cristen wommman to wyf, he shold neuere come in to[1] non oþer wommans bedde, ne non oþere mannes wyf to[2] defoule: al þes [3]forsaide þinges, trewlych forto kepe,[4] continue & fulfill al his lyf tyme, he was bound by othe afor notaries, in presence and witnes of tho kynges wiþ oþere prins, & þan thilk[5] gracious Prins Edward vndertoke þe cause & þe querele of þe King þat was deposed, & behight hym, with[6] þe[7] grace of God, to restore hym aȝen to his kyngdome, and lete ordeigne & gadre to-gedir forthwiþ in all haste, his nave, wiþ men of armes, to werre & fight in this forseid cause.

[*Fight of Eagles; Fall of Fiery Stars; Storms and Destruction.*]

¶ And in this same tyme, oppon þe sonde of the Scottyssh see, þat meny a man[8] hit sye ther[9] iij. dayes togedir þere were sene ij. Egleȝ, of þe which the tone[10] come out of þe southe, & þe toþer[11] out of[12] þe North, & cruelly & strongly þey foughten togider & warstled togider; & þe south Egle ferst ouercome the Northe egle, & al[13] to-rent and tare hym wiþ his bille & his clowes, þat he shold not reste ne take no breþe; and aftir, the south egle flye home to his owne coostes. and anone after, þere folowed & was seyn in þe[14] morne afore þe[15] sunne rysing; and after, in[16] þe last day of Octobre saf on, þat[17] meny sterres gaderid togedir on an hepe fel doun into þe erþe, levyng behind hem fery[18] bemes in manere of lightnyng, whos flaumes & hete brent & consumed mennys clopes & mennys here, walkyng on þe erþe, as hit was seen & knowen of meny a man. ¶ and ȝet thilk Northren wynd, that is euere redy & destinat to all evell fro Seynt Katerins even til iij. dayes aftir, lost good wiþoute nombre vnrecouerable. and in þese same dayes þer fill & comen also such lightnynges, þundres, snowe & hayl, þat hit wastede and destroyed men, bestes, houses and trees.

[1] in TR. [2] to *om.* R. [3] *leaf* 191. [4] be kept R. [5] *þat* R. [6] hym with *om.* T. [7] bi the T. [8] a man *om.* T. [9] it saw R. [10] that oon T. *þat* on R. [11] that oþer T. [12] *þat* oþer com off R. [13] al *om.* T. [14] in the T. in þe R. *om.* C. [15] þe *om.* R. [16] in *om.* R. [17] þat *om.* R. [18] very R.

Of þe bataill of Spayne bituene Prins Edward & Herry þe Bastard of Spayne. Ca*pitu*lo CC^mo^ xxxiij^o^.[1]

[I]n þe 3er of our Lord a M^l^CCC. lxvij, & of Kyng Edward xlij., þe thrid day of [2]Aprill, þer was a strong bataill & a gre*t*e, in a large felde yclept[3] Pria3ers, fast by þe wate*r* of Na3ers in Spayne, bitwene Sir[4] Edward Pryns,[5] & Harry, þe Bastarde of Spayne; but þe victorie fill to Pryns Edwarde, by þe gra*c*e of God. & þis same Prins Edward had wi*th* hym Se*r*e John, þe Duke of Lancastre, his bro*þe*r, and worþi o*þe*r[6] men of armes, aboute þe noumbre of xxx. M^l^. And þe King of Spayne had on[7] his side, men of diue*r*ce nacions, to þe noumbre of a[8] C. M^l^. & passyng. ¶ Wherfore þe sharpnes & þe fersnes of his adue*r*sarye, wiþ his ful boystus & ful[9] gre*t*e strengthe, made &[10] strevyn[11] þe ry3tfull pa*r*tye abak a gret wey; but þurgh þe gra*c*e of Almy3ty God, passyng eny ma*n*nys strengthe, thilk hougest ooste was desparbled myghtfully by þe noble Duk of Lancastre and his oste, or þa*t* Pryns Edward come nye hym. ¶ And whan Harry þe Bastard sey þat, he tu*r*ned wiþ his men,[12] wiþ so gre*t*e haste and strengthe, to fle, þat an houge cu*m*panye of him in þe forseyd flood, & of þe brigge þe*r*-of,[13] fille*n*[14] doun[15] & pe*r*isshed. and þe*r*e were take, þe Erl of Dene and Se*r*e Bertram Cleykyn, þat was chefe[16] mak*er* and cause of the werre, and also chyueteyn of þe vauntward of þe bataill, wiþ meny o*þe*r lordes and knightes, to þe noumbre of ij. M^l^; of whom ij^c^ weren of Fra*u*nce, & meny of Scotlond; & þe*r*e were feld in þe felde on our enemys side, of lordes and kny3tes, wi*th* o*þe*re mene peple, to þe nou*m*bre of vj M^l^ & mo; and of Englissh men but a fewe. ¶ And afte*r* þis, þat noble Prins Edward restored þe same Piers into his kingdom a3en. þe whiche Piers afte*r*ward, þour3 trecherye & falsnes of þe forsaid Bastarde of Spayne as he sate atte þe table, he was strangled and deyde. but afte*r* þis victorye, meny noble and hardy men of Engelond, in Spayne, þour3 the fflix & odir diue*r*s siknesses, toke her dethe.

& in þis same [17]3er in Marche,[18] was seyn 'Stella Comata' bitwene þe North costes & þe west, whos bemes strecched toward Fra*u*nce. and in þe 3er next sewyng of King Edwardes regne

[1] Ca*pitu*lo CC^o^ T. CCxxxiiij R. [2] *leaf* 191, *back*. [3] clept TR.
[4] sir *om.* R. [5] bitwene Prince Edward T. þe Prins R.
[6] and o*þe*r worthi R. [7] in R. [8] an T. [9] ful *om.* R.
[10] made & *om.* R. [11] droof T. dryuen R. [12] wiþ his men *om.* TR.
[13] þe*r* of *om.* R. [14] fil a T. [15] A downe T. [16] chefe *om.* T.
[17] *leaf* 192. [18] in Marche *om.* T.

xliij., in Aprill, Sere Leonell, Kyng Edwardes sone, þat was duk of Clarence, went towarde Myleyn, with a chose meyne of þe gentils of Englond, forto wedde Galoys douȝter,[1] and haue her to wyf, by whom he shold haue half[2] þe Lordship of Mileyn. But after þat þey were solempnly wedded, the[3] same Duke, about þe Natiuite of our Lady deid.[4] & in þe same ȝere þe Frensshe men breken þe pees & the trewes, ryding on þe Kinges ground and lordship of Englond, in þe shire & cuntre of Pountyf, & taken & helden castls & tounes, & bere þe Englisshe men on hond falsly[5] & sotilly,[6] þat þey were cause of breking of þe[7] truws. And in þis same ȝere deyd þe Duchesse[8] of Lancastre, & is beryed worschipfully in[9] Seynt Poules Cherche.[10]

[*A Great Pestilence*, A.D. 1369.]

¶ The xliiij ȝere of King Edward regne, was þe grete pestilens of men and of grete beestes; and by grete fallyng of waters þat fill þat tyme, þer fill grete hyndryng & destroyeng of corn, in so mych þat þe next ȝere after, a busshell whete[11] was solde for xl d. and about þe laste ende of May, Kyng Edwarde held his parlement at Westminster; in þe whiche parlement was treted & spoken of þe ope & þe[12] trewes þat was broke bituene hem and þe King of Fraunce, & how he myȝte best oppon his wrong be avenged. ¶ In þis same ȝer, in þe Assumpsion of our Lady, deid[13] Qwene Philippe of Engelond, a ful noble and good woman; & at Westminster ful worschipfully is buried & entered.

And about Missomere, þe Duke of Lancastre & þe Erle of Herford, wiþ a grete cumpanye of kniȝtes, wenten into Fraunce, wher þey gete hem but a litell worship and name[14]; for þer was an houge oste of Frenssh men oppon [15]Chalkhul brigge, [16]& anoþer oste[17] of Englisshe men faist by þe same brigge,[16] þat longe tyme had leyn þere; and meny worþy men & grete of þe[18] Englisshe men ordeyned & ȝaf counceyll forto fight & ȝeue bataill to þe Frensh men; but þe forsaide lordes wolde noþing[19] consente þerto, ne assent,[20] for no manere þing. ¶ Ther anon after, hit happid þat þe Erl of Warwyke come þedirward forto werre; & whan þe Frenshmen herde

[1] Galeys þe Dukis sister of Mileyne R. [2] þe half R. [3] þat T.
[4] he died T. [5] men falsly on houde T. þat falsli R.
[6] sotilly *om.* T. [7] þe *om.* R. [8] Duke T. [9] at T.
[10] chirche at London) R. [11] of whete T. [12] and of the T.
[13] died the T. [14] and name *om.* R. [15] *leaf* 192, *back.*
[16–16] & anoþer oste . . . brigge *om.* R. [17] oste *om.* T. [18] þe *om.* T.
[19] not R. [20] ne assent *om.* R.

of his comynge, or þat þey[1] come fully to londe, þey left her tentis and pavilons, wiþ al hir vetayles, & fledden[2] and wenten awey preveyly. And whan þe Erl was come to londe wiþ his men, he wente in al has[t][3] into[4] Normandye, and distroyede þe Ile of Cavs, þour3 dent of suerde & þour3 fire; but allas, in his returnyng into[5] Englond-warde home a3en, at Caleys he was take with siknes of pestillence, & deide, nowt lewyng behynde him, after his dayes, non[6] so noble a kni3t, ne so[7] orpid of armes. ¶ In whiche tyme rayned and werred thilk orpid kni3t, Sere Iohn Hawkwode, þat was an Englisshman born, hauyng with hym at[8] his gouernance þilk white cumpanye þat ys abore[9] ynemned, þe whiche were[10] o tyme a3ens holy chirche, and anoþer tyme a3ens lordes werryng, & ordeynede gret batailes; & þer in þat cuntre he dede many mervayles þinge3.

And aboute þe Conuersion of Seynt Poule, King Edward, whan he had 3ended and done þe entering and þe[11] exequites, wiþ grete costes and rialtees, aboute þe tombe[12] & buryng of Quene Phillip his[13] wif, he held his parlement at Westminster. In þe whiche parlement was axed of þe clergye a iij. 3ers disme, þat is forto sey, a gret dime to be paied .iij. 3er duryng; and the clergye put hit of, and wolde not graunte hit vnto Ester next comyng; & þan þey graunted wele þat in iij 3ere, by certeyne termes, þat disme[14] shold be payed; & also of þe lay fee, was a iij. 3ers xv. ygraunted to þe King.

Hov sir Robert Knollis, wiþ oþer certeyne[15] lordes of þe reaume,[16] wente ouere þe see into Fraunce; & of here gouernaunce. Capitulo CC^mo. xxxiiij^o.[17]

And in þe xlv 3ere of King Edward, in þe bygenyng, King Edward, wiþ owne-wise[18] counceyll and vndescret, borwed a grete summe of gold of þe prelatis and lordes, Marchauntes and oþer riche men of þe[19] reaume, saynge þat hit sholde be spende in deffendyng of holy cherche & of his reaume; but neuer þe later hit profited hit[20] not. Wherfore about Midsomer after, þe king made a grete oste of þe worthiest men of his reaume, amonges whom were somme lordes, þat is forto seyn, þe Lord Fitzwater,

[1] he TR. [2] fledde þenne3 R. [3] haste T. [4] haste toward R. [5] to TR. [6] non *om.* R. [7] knyght and TR. [8] and at TR. [9] afore R. [10] were *om.* TR. [11] þe *om.* R. [12] sepulcure TR. [13] his wif T. his wiff R. wif *om.* C. [14] *leaf* 193. [15] certeyne *om.* R. [16] of þe reaume *om.* TR. [17] CC^o T. CC xxxv R. [18] with vnwis R. [19] his TR. [20] hit *om.* TR.

þe Lord Gromson, and oþer worþi kniȝtes, of whiche kniȝtes þe King[1] ordeyned Sere Robert Knollis, a proved kniȝt and wel assayed in dede of armes, forto be gouernour; and þat, þouȝ his gouernnance and counceyll, al þing sholde be gouerned & dressid. and whan þey come into Fraunce, as long as þey duelled and helde him hole togider, þe Frensshmen þorust[2] nout falle oppon hym. & at þe[3] laste, aboute þe bigynnyng of wenter, for enuye and covetyse[4] þat was amonges ham, and also discorded, þey sunddered & partyd him into diuers companyes, vnwysely & follely. But Sere Robert Knollis & his men wenten and kepten ham saf[5] wiþinne a Castel in Britaigne. & whan þe frenshe men saw þat our men were deuyded into diuers cumpanyes & places, nouȝt holdyng ne strengyng ham togeders, as þey awȝte forto done, þey fel fersly on our men, & for þe moste partey [6]token ham & slowen[6]; and þo þat þey toke, ledde wiþ him presoners. ¶ And in þe same ȝere Pope Vrban come fro Rome to Avyoun, for enchesoun & cause þat he shold acorde and make pees bytwene þe King of Fraunce and þe King of Engelonde for euermore; but allas, [7]or he bygan þis tretis, he deide wiþ sikenes, þe xxj day of Decembre, & was yburied[8] as for þe tyme in þe cathedral cherch of Avyon, fast by þe hye[9] auter. & þe next ȝere after, whan he had leyn so, his bones were taken out of þe erþe, and beryed new in þe abbey of Seynt Victour, fast by Marcyle, of þe whiche abbey he was sumtyme abbot hymself.[10] & in boþe places þat he was buryed yn, ther[11] bene meny grete miracles done and wroght, thurgh þe grace of God, to meny a mannes help, and to þe worship of God. After whom folowed next, & was made Pope Gregore Cardynall, dekene, þat bifore was clept Piers Rogier.

[*The Black Prince takes Limoges, and comes back to England.*]

¶ In this same ȝere þe Citee of Lymage rebelled and faght aȝens þe Pryns, as oþere Citees in Guyene dede, for grete taxes, costages & raunsoms, þat þey wer put-yn and ysette[12] to[13] by Prins Edward, þe whiche charges were unportable, & to chargeable; wherfor þey turned fro him, & fill to þe King of Fraunce, & whan Pryns Edward sawe þis, he was sore ychaufed[14] & ygrevid; and in turnyng

[1] the kyng TR. the *om.* C. [2] durest R. [3] þe *om.* TR.
[4] and covetyse *om.* TR. [5] selff R.
[6–6] token hem or slowen hem T. or slowen ham R. [7] *leaf* 193, *back.*
[8] buried TR. [9] hye *om.* R. [10] hymself *om.* R. [11] ther *om.* T.
[12] sette T. [13] to *om.* T [14] chaufed R.

homward aȝen to Engelond, *with* sore skyrmisshes & fightyng and grete[1] assautes, fought[2] *with* hem, & toke þe forsaid Citee, & distroyed hit almost to þe[3] *gr*ounde, and slow al þat were [4]founde in þe Citee.[4] And þan, forto sey þe sothe, for diu*er*s siknesses and maladies þat he had, and also for defaute of money *þat* he myght not wiþstande ne tarie on his enemys, he hyed hym aȝen into Engelond. And about þe bygynnyng of Januarij he come into Engelond *with* his wyf and his meyne, levyng behind him *in* Gascoigne þe Duk of Lancast*re* & *Sere* Edmund,[5] Erl of Caumbrigge, *with* op*ere* worþy and orpid men of armes.

¶ In þe xlvj ȝere of King Edwarde, at þe ordin*aun*ce & sendyng of King Edwarde, þe King of Nauern come to hym to Claryngdoun, to trete wiþ ham of *cer*teyn þinges touching his werre [6]in Normandye, wher King Edward had left[7] certen seges in his stede til he come aȝen; but King Edwarde myght*en* not spede of þat *þat* he asked of hym; and so þe King of Nauerne, *with* *gr*ete worshup & *gr*ete ȝeftes, toke his leue, & wente home aȝen. And about þe begynnyng of Marche, whan þe *par*lement at Westm*inster* was bygu*nne*; þe King axed of þe clergye a subsidie of L. M[l] li,[8] þe whiche, by a[9] good avisement & by a gen*er*al co*n*uocacio*un* of þe clergye, hit was ygr*aun*ted[10] & yordeyned[11] *þat* hit shold be payede & reised of þe lay fee. And in þis *par*lement, at þe requeste & axyng of þe lordes, in hatered of men of holy chirche, þe Chaunceler & tho *þat* were Bisshopes, þe Tresorer & þe Clerk of þe Pryue Sele, were remeued & put out of hire office, & in hire stedes were seculer men put yn. And while þis *par*lement laste, *per* comen solempne ambassiatours, ysent[12] fro þe Pope to trete wiþ þe King, of pees, & saiden þat þe Pope desired to fullfille his *pre*decessours will; but for al hir comyng þey spedden not of hir purpos.

Of þe sege of Rochell, & hov þe Erl of Penbroke was take*n* of þe Spaynarde*ȝ*. Cap*itu*lo CC^mo^ xxxv^o^.[13]

The ix^the^ day of Juyn, King Edwarde, in þe xlvij ȝere of his regne, helde his *par*lement at Wynchestre; & hit lasted but viij. dayes; to þe[14] *par*lement was sompned by wryt, of men of holy chirche, iiij. bisshopes &[15] iiij. abbotes, wiþoute eny mo. This *par*lement

[1] and *gr*ete *om.* R. [2] fightyng sautis foughten T. [3] þe *om.* T. [4–4] founde þerynne R. [5] Iohn TR. [6] *leaf* 194. [7] lost R. [8] 1 Ml pound T. [9] a *om.* R. [10] graunted R. [11] ordeyned R. [12] sent R. [13] CC^o^ T. CC xxxvj R. [14] þis R. [15] & *om.* T.

was[1] holden for Marchauntis of London, of Norwych, & of oþer diuers places, in diuers þinges and poyntes of tresoun þat þey were diffamed of, þat is forto sey, þat þey were rebelle, & wolde[2] rise a3ens þe King.

¶ This same 3ere þe Duk of Lancastre and þe Erl of Caumbrigge, his broþer, comen out of Gascoigne into Englond, & token & weddid to hir wyues Petres doghters, sumtyme King of Spayne; of which[3] ij dou3ters þe Duke had þe elder,[4] and þe Erl þe 3onger. And þe[5] same tyme þer were sent ij Cardinals fro þe Pope, þat is to sey, an Englissh Cardinal, & a Cardinal of Parius, to trete of pees bytwene tho ij. reaumes, þe which, whan þey had ben boþe longe eche in his prouince, & in places & cuntres fast by, tretyng of þe forsaid pees, at þe last þey toke wiþ hem her lettres of procuracye, & went a3en to þe court of Romeward,[6] wiþoute eny effecte of hir purpos. ¶ In þis 3ere also þere was a stronge bataill on þe see bytwene Englissh men & Flemmynges; & þe Englissh men had þe victorye, & toke xxv. shippes ycharged[7] wiþ salt, sleyng & drenchyng al þe men þat were þerin, vnwytyng hem þat þey weren of þat cuntre. and redily mych harme had fall by cause[8] þerof, ne had pees þe[9] sonner be made bitwene hem. and in þis same 3er þe Frenssh men byseged þe toun of þe[10] Rochell, wherfor þe Erle of Penbrok was sent into Gascoigne with a grete cumpanye of men of armes, forto destroye þe sege; þe which passeden þe[11] see, & comen safe to[12] þe haven of Rochell. and whan þey were þere at þe haven moupe, or þat[13] þey myght entre, sodenly comen oppon hem a strong naue of Spayne, þe whiche ouercomen þo[14] þe Englissh men, in mych blemyshyng, hurtyng & sleyng of many persones, for as miche as þe Englysse men were not þan redy forto fight, ne ware of hem. & in þis comyng oppon[15] of þe Spaynardes, all þe Englissh men, eyþer þey were take or slayn; & x. of hem were wonded to þe dethe; & all her shippes ybrent.[16] ¶ And þere[17] þey token þe Erle, with an houge tresour of þe reaume[18] of Engelond, & many oþer noble men also, on Missomer eve, þe whiche is seynt Mildredes day, &[19] ledden hem wiþ[20] him into Spayne. And of þis mysshif was no grete wonder, for þis Erle was a ful euel lyuer, as

[1] was maad and T. [2] wolde *om.* T. [3] *leaf* 194, *back.*
[4] elder TR. Erle C. [5] þat TR. [6] ward *om.* R. [7] charged TR.
[8] bycause *om.* R. [9] þe pece T. [10] þe *om.* T. [11] in þe T.
[12] vnto T. into R. [13] þat *om.* T. [14] þo *om.* T. [15] on T.
[16] brent R. [17] þere *om.* T. [18] of þe reaume *om.* T. [19] þei T.
[20] hem wiþ *om.* R.

an opyn lechour; & also in a [1] certeyne *par*lement he stood and was a3ens þe [2] ri3tes & þe fraunche of holy chirche [2]; and also he counceyled þe King and his counceyle,[3] þat he shold axe more of men of holy chirch þan of o*per* per*sones* of þe lay fee. ¶ And for þe King & o*þere* of his counceyl axcepted & token ra*per* evell opynions & causis a3ens men of holy chirch, þan he dede forto fende & maynteyne þe ri3t of holy chirch, hit was sen in [4] many tymes after, þourgh lakkyng of fortune and [5] *grace*, þey had not ne bere awey so [5] *gre*te victorye ne power a3ens hir enemyns as þey dede byfore.

þis same 3ere, þe King, wiþ a *gre*te ostee, entred þe see to remeve þe sege of [6] Rochell; but þe wynd was euen cont*ra*rye to hem, and suffred hem [7] not longe tyme to [8] goo fer fro þe londe. Wherfore he abode a *cer*teyne time oppon þe see costes, abyding *after* a good wynde for him; and 3et come hit not. So at þe [9] laste he come þens wiþ his men to londeward a3en; and anon as he was a [10] londe, þe wynde bygan *tur*ne,[11] and was in ano*þer* coste þen he was byfore.

Hov þe Duk of [12] Lancastre, with a gr*e*te oste, went into Flau*n*dres,[12] & passed by Parys, þoru3 Burgoyne. Cap*itu*lo CC^mo^ xxxvj^o^.[13]

Sone [14] after, in þe xlviij 3ere of King Edward, þe Duk of Lancast*ere*, wiþ a *gre*te oste, wente into Flounndres, and passid by Parys, þour3 Burgoyne, & þour3 alle Fr*aun*ce, til he come to Burdeux, wiþoute eny man*ere* wiþstonddyng of þe Frenshe men. & he dede him but litel harme, saf he toke and raunseued many places & tou*n*nes, & meny [15] [16] men lette hem goon after [16] frely.

¶ The same 3er þe King sent *cer*teyne enbassetours to þe Pope, pr*ay*nge hem þat he sholde [17] leue of and melle-not [18] in his court of þe kepynge3 & reseruacious of benefeces in Engelond; & þat þo þat were chose to bisshopes sees [19] & dingnites, frely & wiþ ful right my3te [20] Ioye haue,[21] & be confermed. [22] Of her Metropolanes and

[1] *leaf* 195. [2–2] rightis of holi chirche and þe ffraunchises T.
[3] and his counceyle *om.* TR. [4] in *om.* R.
[5–5] *grace* for þey hadde neuer so R. [6] at T.
[7] and suffred hem *om.* T. to him þat he my3te not R.
[8] to *om.* R. [9] þe *om.* T. [10] at T. at þe R. [11] to turne T.
[12–12] lancastre wente into fflaun*d*ris w*ith* a greet hoost T.
[13] CC^o^ T. CC xxxvij R. [14] Anoon T. Anon R. [15] meny *om.* T.
[16–16] men and after lete hem gone T. men and let ham aftir go R.
[17] wolde T. [18] and not medle TR. [19] sees *om.* R.
[20] ful moche T. right my3te R. [21] haue TR. and haue C.
[22] *leaf* 195, *back.*

Erchebisshops, as þey were went to be of old tyme of þes poyntes, & of oþer toching þe Kinge and his reaume. When þey hadden her answere of þe Pope, þe Pope enioyned hem þat þey sholde certyfie hem aȝen by her letteres of þe Kinges wylle, and of his reaume, or þat þey determened out[1] of þe forsaide articles.

¶ In this same ȝer, deid John, þe Erchebisshop of ȝork, Iohn, bosship of Ely; William, bisship of Worsschestre, in whos stedes folweding, and were made bisship by þe[2] auctorite of þe Pope, Mayster Alexander Nevyle to þe Erchebysshoprich of ȝork, Thomas of Arundell to þe Bisshop[3] of Ely, & sere Herry Wakefeld to þe bysshoprich of Worcestre. In whiche tyme it was ordeyned in þe parlement þat all Cathedrall cherches shold ioy and haue her eleccions hool; & þat þe King, fro þat tyme afterward, sholde not write aȝens hem þat were ychosen,[4] but rather help ham by his lettres to her confirmacioun. & this statut was kept, and dede myche profet & good; & in þis parlement was graunted to þe King a dysme of þe clergye, & a xv of þe lay fee.

¶ The ȝere next[5] after, of King Edwarde xlix, þe v. day of Iuyn, deid Mayster William Wytlesey, Erchebisshope of Canterbery. Wherfor þe monkes of þe same chirche asked & desired a Cardinall of Engelond to be Erchebisshop; and perfore þe King was agreued, & had ment and purposed to have exiled þe monkes of þe same hous[6]; & so þey[7] spended mich good or þey myghte haue þe Kinge3 grace aȝen, & his loue; but ȝet wold not þe King consente ne graunte to her eleccioun of þe Cardinall, ne þe Pope also, ne his Cardinals.

& about þe bygynnyng of August, it was tretid & spoken at Brugges of certeyn poyntes & articles hauyng bytwene þe Pope and þe King of Engelonde; & þis tretis lasted almoste ij. ȝere. At þe[8] laste it was acorded bytwene ham, þat þe Pope, fro þat ty[9]me forþe, shold nout vse ne dele wiþ þe reseruacions of[10] benefices in Engelond; and þat þe King shold not graunte ne lete no benefices by his wryt þat ys yclept[11] 'Quare impedit'; but as touchyng þe eleccions aboue seyd, þere was noþing touchid ne do; & þat was ywyted[12] & put oppon certeyn clerkes, the[13] whiche raþer supposed & hoped[14] to be auaunced & promoted to bysshopriches which[15] þey desired & coueyted, by þe court of Rome þan by eny eleccions.[16]

[1] ought T. [2] þe *om.* TR. [3] archebisshopriche R. [4] chosen TR. [5] nexte yeer R. [6] chirche R. [7] þey *om.* T. [8] þe *om.* T. [9] *leaf* 196. [10] of þe R. [11] clept TR. [12] wyted R. [13] the *om.* T. [14] hoped & supposed R. [15] with that T. [16] þanne oþer wise R.

This same 3er about Candelmasse, þere comen & metten togider at Brugges, meny noble and worþy men of boþe reaumes, to treten of pees bituene þo ij. kingdomes. And this tretys lasted twey 3er, wiþ grete costes & houge spences of[1] boþe parties; & at þe laste þey went & departed þens wiþout eny accorde or effecte.

¶ The next 3er after, þe xlix[2] 3er of Kyng Edward, þe iiij. None of Maii, beyng 3et void & vacaunt[3] þe Erchebisshop of Caunterbury, Maister Symound Sudbury, Bysshop of London, was[4] made Erchebisshop of Caunterbury; & Maister Will. Courteneye, þat was Bisshop of Herford, was þan made Bysshop of London; & þe Bisshiop of Bangor was made Bosshiþ of Herford.

And in þis same tyme, in a certeyn tretys, & speking of pees, trews was take bytwene Fraunce & Engelond, fro[5] Missomere vnto Missomere come a3en, al on hool 3er. ¶ And about the bygynnyng of Aprill, þe Duke of Brytayne, wiþ meny Erles,[6] barons, and noble and[7] worþy men of Engelond, went ouere see[8] into Brytaigne, wher he had al his lust, desire & purpos,[9] ne had þe forsaide trws be so sone ybrake,[10] þe whiche letted hem myche. This same tyme, þe Ile of Constantyn, wher þat the castell of Sent Saurour is yn, þat longe tyme was fought at & byseged of þe Frenshe men, [11]was þan 3olden to þe Frenshemen,[11] wiþ al þe appurtenaunces, into grete harme & hyndryng of þe reaume of Engelond.

And þe[12] same 3er þere were so [13]grete & so passyng hetes, & þerewiþal a grete pestilens in Engelond, & in oþer diuers parties of þe world, þat it destroyed & slow, violently & strongly, both men & wymmen without noumbre.

¶ This same 3er deid Sir Edwarde, þe lord Spencer, a worthy knyȝt and a bolod; & in þe Mynstre of Teukesbury worschipfully is buried.

& lastyng this pestilens, þe Pope, at þe instaunce & prayer of a[14] Englissh Cardinall, graunted to al þe peple þat deid in Engelond þat weren sory and repentaunt for her synnes, & also shryven, ful remyssioun, by ij. bulles vnder lede, vj. monthes þan next to last.

In þis same 3er þe Erl of Penbrook was take & raunsened by[15] Bertram Cleykyn, bytwne Parys & Caleys, as he come towarde

[1] on T. [2] TR. [3] vacaunt & void R.
[4] london was T. london þey R. [5] fro R. for C. [6] erlis & R.
[7] noble and *om.* R. [8] þe see T. [9] purpos and desire R.
[10] ybrake T. take RC. [11—11] was þan 3olden . . . men *om.* T.
[12] this TR. [13] *leaf* 196, *back.* [14] an T. [15] bi for R.

Engelonde oppon Seint Etheldredis day; þe whiche Seynt, as hit was said, þe same Erl oft tymes had offended; & wiþin a while after, he deide. & in Noumbre[1] next after, þere metten at Brugges þe Duke of Lancastre & þe Duke of Angeoy, wiþ meny oþer lordes & prelates of boþe reaumes, forto trete of pees.

Of þe deþe of prins Edward, & of dame[2] Alys Perers, & Piers de la Mare. Capitulo CC xxxviij°.[3]

[*A Parliament held at Westminster*, A.D. 1376. *Alice Ferrers and Lord Latimer.*]

Not[4] longe after þe lj. 3ere of þe regnyng of King Edward, he lete ordeyned & holde his parlement at Westminster, þe grettest þat was sen meny 3ere afore. In þe whiche parlement, he axed of[5] Communaltee of þe reaume as he had done byfore, a grete subsede to be graunted to hem, for defendyng of hem and of his reame; but þe communes answered þat 'þey were so oft, day be day, ygreued & charged wiþ so meny talyage3 & subsidies, þat þey my3te no longer suffre non such berþes ne charges; ¶ and þat þey knewyn & wisten wel þat þe King had ynov for sauyng of hem & of his[6] reaume, yf þe reaume wher wel and trewly gouerned, but þat[7] [8]it had be so long euel ygouerned[9] by euel officers, þat the reaume my3t neither[10] be plenteuous of Chaffare and merchaundise, ne also wiþ[11] richesse: & þese þinge3 þey profered hem self, if þe King wold, certey[n]ly to preue & stonde by. and if it were found & proued after, þat þe King þan had nede, þey wold þen gladly, euery man, after his power and state, hem wold[12] helpe & lene.'

¶ And after þis, þere were publisshed & shewed in þe parlement meny playntes & defautes of officers of[13] þe reaume, & namely of þe Lorde Latymer, þe Kinge3 Chaumberlayn, of his evel gouernaunce, boþe[14] to þe King & eke to þe reame; & at þe laste also þer[15] was tretid & spoken of Dame Alys Pereis, for þe grete[16] wronge3 & evel[17] gouernaunce þat was done by her & by her counceyl in þe reame; þe whiche Dame Alys Perers, þe King had holde long tyme to his lemman. Wherfor hit was þe lesse wonder thogh,

[1] MS. Noũbre. [2] dame *om.* T. [3] CC° T. [4] Not TR. Bot C. [5] of þe R. [6] þe R. [7] þat *om.* R. [8] *leaf* 197. [9] gouerned TR. [10] neuer T. [11] of R. [12] wold *om.* R. [13] diuers of R. [14] boþe *om.* R. [15] þere it R. [16] grete *om.* T. [17] yuyl T. evel R. wel C.

þurgh þe freelte of þe wommannys exciting & her streyng, consentid to her lewednes & evell counceyll. ¶ The which Dame Alys, & also þe Lord Latymer, & also oþer[1] such þat sterid þe King to evel gouernaunce, aȝens his profite & þe reaumes. also al þe commynalte of þe reame desired & asked þat þei shold be meved & done[2] awey, & in her stedes, wyse men & worþy þat were trewe, & welle assayed & proued, and of good gouernaunce, shold be put in her stedes. ¶ So amonge all oþere, þer was on among þe communes þat was a wys knyȝt, & a trewe, & an eloquent man, whos name was Piers de la Mare; & þis same Piers was chosen to be speker for the communes in þe parlement.[3] & for þis same[4] Piers told & publissed þe trewþe, & rehersid meny wronges aȝens þe forsaid Dame Alys, & oþer certeyne persones of þe Kingeȝ counceyl, as he was bode by þe communes, & also trustyng mych forto be supported & maynteyned in þis mater by help & fauour of þe Pryns, anon as þe Pryns was dede, at þe instaunce and [5]request of þe forsaid Dame Alys, þis Piers de La Mare was iugged to perpetuel prisoun in þe Castell of Notyngham, in þe whiche he was ij. ȝere. & þe vj. kalend of Iuyll, lastyng þat same parlement, deid Prens Edwardes ferst sone, þat is forto sey, in[6] Trynite Sounday; in þe worship of[7] whiche feest he was wont euery ȝere, wher þat euere he were in þe worlde, to make & hold þe moost solempnyte þat he myght. ¶ Whos name & fortune of kniȝthood, but yf it had bene of anoþer[8] Ectour, al men, both Christen & heþen, while he leuyd & was in good poynt, wondred mych, & dred him wonder sore; whos body is worshipfully beryed at Crycherche of[9] Cauntȩrbury.

And in þis same ȝere þe man & þe Erles tenauntes of Warwyk arisen maliciously aȝens þe Abbot & þe Covent of Euesham & her tenauntes, & destroyeden fersly þe Abbot & þe toun, & wounded & bete her men, & slowen of hem meny one, & wenten to her maners & places, & dede myche harme, & brekyn doun her parkes & her closes, & brenten & slowen her wild bestes, and chaced hem, brekyng her fisshepond hedis, & lete þe water of her pondes, stewes & ryuers, renne out; & token þe fissh, & bere it with hem, & deden hem al þe harme þat þey myȝte. ¶ In so ferforth, þat forsoþe þey had be distroyed perpetuely, þat abbay,[10] wiþ all her membres &[11] appurtenaunces, but yf þe King þe sonner had

[1] oþer *om.* R. [2] put R. [3] in þe parlement *om.* T. [4] same *om.* R. [5] *leaf* 197, *back.* [6] on R. [7] of þe R. [8] of anoþer *om.* T. [9] in T. [10] þat abbay *om.* R. [11] & *om.* T.

holpen hit & taken heed perto. and perfore þe King sent his lettres to þe Erle of Warwyk, chargyng hym, & comaundyng, þat he shulde stynt, redresse & amende the evel doers & brekers of his pees. and so, by menys of lordes & opere frendes of boþe sides pece[1] & good acorde & loue was made bytwene hem. ¶ And for þis hurlyng, as hit was seyd, þe King wold not be gouerned at þat tyme by his lordes þat þere were in þe parlement; [2]but he toke and made his sone, þe Duk of Lancastre, his gouernour of þe reaume; the which stood so still gouernour til tyme þat he deide.

The same 3ere, anon after Candelmasse, or the parlement was done, the King axede a subsidie of the clergie and of þe lay fee, and hit was graunted him, þat is forto seye, that he sholde haue of euery persone of the lay fee, bothe of men and womman þat passed xiiij. 3er age, iiij d.—outake pore beggers that were knowen opynly for[3] nede, beggers,[4]—and þat he shulde haue of euery man of holy chirche þat was beneficed or promoted, xij d., and of al opere þat were nout promoted iiij d., outake þe iiij. orders of the Frers beggers.

¶ This same 3er, after Myghellmase, Richard, Prin3 Edwardes sone, was made Prins of Walys; to whon þe King also 3af[5] þe Duche of Cornewayl, wyth þe Erldom of Chestre. and aboute þis tyme, þe Cardinallis of Engelond, þe forþe day bifore Mary Maugdalyne day, after mete, sodeynly was smete & take[6] wiþ a palsie, & loste his speche; and on Marye Mawgdalyne day he died.

Of the deth of Kinge Edwarde; and hov Sere John Mounsterworþ, knight, was drawe and honged for his fals tresoun. Capitulo CC^mo. xxxix^o.[7]

Ryght anon after, in þe lij 3ere of his[8] regne, of King Edward, in þe begynnyng of October, Pope Gregory þe xj. brou3t and remeved wiþ hem his court from Aveyon to Rome.

And þe xij. day of Aprill, John Munsterworþe, knight, at London was drawen, hanged, and þen byheded; and after, his body quartered, and sent to þe .iiij.[9] chef tounes of Engelond, and his heed sette oppon[10] London Brigge. ¶ For þis same Iohn was

[1] pece and T. and C. [2] *leaf* 198. [3] for TR. fro C.
[4] nedi pouere beggers T. nedy poer beggars R. [5] yaf also TR.
[6] was take and suiyte T. & take *om.* R. [7] CC^o T. [8] þe TR.
[9] to foure the T. iiij þe R. [10] on T.

ful vntrewe to þe [1]King and to the reaume, and ful coveytous and vnstable; for he toke ofte tymes grete sum*m*es of money of þe King and his counceyll for men of armes wages, that he sholde haue payed ham; and take hit into his owne vse. and he, dreding at[2] the laste he shold he shent and acused, for þe same cause fled pryuily to the King of Fr*a*unce, and was swore to hem, and bicome his man, and behight hym to bringe a[3] grete nave of Spayne in confusion, and distroyende of[4] Engelonde. but rightful God, to whom no pryvite is vnknowe, suffrede hym ferst to be shent and spilt, or that he sholde so trecherously & falsly, his leige lord, the King of Engelonde, and his peple and his reaume—in the whiche ground the same Iohn was bore wickedly, thourgh bataill, destroye, or bryng his cursed purpose aboute.

In the feste of Seynt Gregore þo[5] next sewynge, King Edward 3af to Richard of Burdeux, his eyr, that was Pryns Edwardes sone, att Wyndesore, the ordre of knyghthood, and made hym knyght. the which Kyng Edward, whan he had regned lj.[6] 3ere and more, the xj *kalend* of Iuyn, he deide at Shene, and is beried worshipfully at Westmynster; on whos soule God haue mercy! Amen!

[1] *leaf* 198, *back*. [2] þat at TR. [3] him a T. [4] of TR. al C. [5] þe T. [6] lij R.

APPENDIX B.

[THE CHARACTER OF EDWARD III.]

[*MS. Harley* 753, *fol.* 146 *ff.* (*collated with MS. Harley* 331 = *X*, *Lambeth* 491 = *Y*, *and Lambeth* 738 = *Z*).]

Of þe description[1] of Kyng Edward. Cap^o. CC. xxix^o.[2]

THis[3] Kyng Edward was forsoþe of a passyng goodnesse, and ful gracious amonge aH þe worthymen of þe world; for he passyd and shone by *ver*tue & *grace*[4] yeven to hym fro God, above aH his *pre*decessours þ*at* were noble men & worthy. And he was a wele hard-herted[5] man, for he dred neu*er* of none myshappes, ne harmes ne evyH fortune, þat myȝt falle a noble warryour, and a fortunable,[6] bothe[7] on lond[8] and on þe see.[9] And in aH batayle & assembles, w*ith* a passyng glory and worshyp[10] he had eu*ere* þe victory.

And[11] he was meke and benygne, homely, sobre, & softe to aH man*er* men,[12] as wele to straungres as to his owne subiect*es*, And to oþ*er* þ*at* were vnder his gou*ernaunce*.[13] He was devoute & holy, bope to God & holy[14] chirch; ffor he was worshipped &[15] mayntened holy chirch and her mynystres w*ith* aH man*er* reu*erences*.[16] He was treteable & wele avysed in temp*er*aH & worldly ned*es*, wyse in counseH, and discrete, soft, meke,[17] & good to speke w*ith*. In hys ded*es* & man*er*e, fuH gentiH & wele ytaught, havyng pite on hem[18] þ*at* were in dissese; plentevous in yevyng almesse,[19] Besy[20] & corious in bildyng; And fuH lyghtly he bare & suffred wrong*es* and harmes. And whan he was yeve to any occupac*ion*, he left aH oþ*er* þynges in[21] þe mene tyme, and tent[22] þerto; semly of body, & of mene stature; havyng alwey, to higH & lowe, a good chere. And þ*er* sprang & shone so moch *grace* of hym[23] þ*at*, what

[1] distruction MS and Z. [2] heading *om.* Z. [3] The Z.
[4] vertue of grace YZ.
[5] a wel and a hardy hertid Y. a well and an harty hartid Z.
[6] and so fortunable X. a fortunate Y. a ffortynant Z.
[7] for bothe Y. [8] on þe lond X. [9] on se Z. [10] glory and Joy Z.
[11] And *om.* Y. [12] maner off men Z. [13] his owne Gouernaunce Z.
[14] to holy Z. [15] worshepid halpe and Z. [16] of reuerence Z.
[17] and meke Z. [18] to hem XY. [19] benefytes Z. [20] and Besy Z.
[21] for Z. [22] tent *om.* Z. [23] *leaf* 146, *back*.

man*er* man had byhold his face, or had dremed of hy*m*, he hoped þat day þat aꝉ þyng shold hap[1] to hym Ioyfuꝉ and lykyng. And he gou*er*ned gloriously hys kyngdom into his age. And[2] he was large in yevyng, and wyse in spences. He was fulfilled with[3] aꝉ honeste of good man*er*s, & vertuous; vnder whom to lyve,[4] hit was as for to regne; wherfor his name[5] & his loos sprang so fer*e* þat it came into hethenesse and Barbarye, shewyng and tellyng his worthynesse & manhode in aꝉ lond*es*; And þat in[6] no lond vnder heven had be[7] brought forth so noble a kyng,[8] so gentiꝉ & so blessyd, or myȝt reyse such anoþer whan he were dede.

Neu*er*þelesse,[9] lecchery & mevyng of hys flessh haunted hym in his age; wherefor þe rather, as it was to suppose,[10] for vnmesurable fulfillyng of hys lust, his lyff shorted þe sonner. And herof takeþ good hede, lyke as hys dedys byfore bereth wytnesse; for, as in hys bygynnyng aꝉ þyng*es* were Ioyfuꝉ and lykyng to hym & to aꝉ þe[11] peple, And in hys myd age he passed aꝉ men[12] in high Ioye and[13] worshyp*e* and blessydnesse, Ryȝt so, whan he drow in-to Age, drawyng downward þurgh lecchorye and oþ*er*[14] synnes, litiꝉ & litiꝉ aꝉ þo Ioyfuꝉ and blyssed[15] þyng*es*, good fortune & p*ro*sp*er*ite decresed and myshapped, And Infortunat þyng*es*, & vnp*ro*fytable harmes, with many evele, bygan for to sprynge, and, þe more harme is, conteyned longe tyme after.

[1] ffall Z. [2] And *om.* Z. [3] of Z. [4] þe lyffe Z. [5] fame YZ.
[6] in *om.* YZ. [7] be *om.* XYZ. [8] knyȝt Z.
[9] Neuere the latter Y. Neuyr þe latter Z.
[10] suppose for XYZ. [11] þe *om.* Z. [12] pepill Z. [13] and *om.* YZ.
[14] affter Z. [15] blisfull X.

[C]

[FROM THE CORONATION OF RICHARD II (A.D. 1377) TO THE CAPTURE OF ROUEN (A.D. 1419).]

[*Cambridge University Library MS. Kk.* 1. 12.]

[1] **And aftir King Edwarde the thrid, þat was bore at Wyndesore, Regned Richard of Burdeux, that was Prynce Edwardeȝ sone of Walis; which Prince Edwarde was þe sone of**[2] **King Edwarde þe iij^de^.**[3] **Cap*itulu*m ccxxxix.**

And aftir the gode King, King Edwarde the iij^de^, þat was born at Wyndesore, Regned Richarde þe ij, þat was þe gode Prince Edwardeȝ sone of[4] Walis; which King Richard was born yn þe cite of Burdeux yn Gasquoyn, and was crouned at Westm*inster* yn þe xj yere of his age. ¶ And yn ij[5] yere of his regne fil þe[6] debate þat was betuene þe Lorde Latimer and Syr Raaff Ferers, knyȝt,[7] þat were ayens Hawle & Schakele, squiers, for the prysoner þat was take yn the botayle of Spayngne [8]by þese ij squyers, þe[9] which þe sayde[10] Lorde Latym*er* and S*er* Raaff Ferrers wolde haue had; þe which prysoner was þe Erle of Deene, þat þay toke yn þe batayle of Spayngne.[8] ¶ Wherfore þese ij lordeȝ comyn yn-to Westm*inster* churche,[11] and founde þis on Squier heryng his[12] messe besyde Seint Edwardeȝ schryne; and there þei slow hym þat me callyd Hawle; and Schackele was arestid and put yn-to þe Tour of London; and *þere* he was long tyme, for[13] he wolde not delyu*er* þe Erle of Dene, his p*resone*r, vnto þeȝe ij lordeȝ by S*er* Aleyn Buxhill, Constable of the tour, and be S*er* Raaff Ferrers, one of his adu*er*saryes, tyll þe tyme þat[14] þe king grawnted hym grace.

¶ In the iij^de^ yere of King Richarde come þe[15] galies of Fraunce[16] yn-to Engelonde, vnto dyuers porteȝ, and brent, & Robbyd, and slow moch pepyll of Engelond, þat is to sey,[17] Wynchilse, Rie, Hastynge,[18] Portesmouth, Hampton, Stormore, &[19] Grauysende, and dede moche harm, and wente hom ayen.

[1] *leaf* 110, *back*. [2] of þe T. [3] þe iij^de^ *om.* T. [4] Prynce of T.
[5] þe seconde R. [6] regne for TR. [7] the knyght T.
[8–8] *om.* T. [9] and þe R. [10] sayde *om.* R.
[11] into the Chirche of Westmynstre TR. [12] his *om.* T. [13] and T
[14] þe tyme þat *om.* TR. [15] þe *om.* T.
[16] yeer off his Regne þe galeys of ffraunce come R. [17] seie at T.
[18] hastyng and T. [19] and *om.* T.

[*The Commons' Revolt led by Jack Straw and Wat Tyler.*]

And yn þis same yere was a *par*lement holden at Westm*inster*; and at þat *par*lement was ordeyned þat eu*er*y man, woman & childe, þat were[1] at þe age of xiiij yere & aboue, þor3out all þe Reme, pore folke & Rich,[2] schulde pay to þe talage iiij d; wherfore come aftirwarde grete myschiff & moche dese3e to alle[3] *commun*ialte of þe Reme. ¶ And yn þe iiij yere of þe regne of King Richarde þe comynes loked vp, &[4] arysyn vp[5] yn dyuers parte3 of þe Reme, and dede moche harm, þe which þei callid[6] "hurlyng tyme." And þei of Kent & of Essex madyn hem ij cheveteyne3 to rewle & goueme þe compayne of Kent & of Essex: þat one[7] me[8] callid Jacke Strawe, and þat o*þer*, Watte Tyler; and þai comen and assembled ham vpon þe Blake-Heth yn Kent. And apon the[9] Corpus Christi day and after, þei comen doune yn-to Southwerk, and brekyn vp þe prison hous, þat is to wite, þe Kingis Bench, and þe[10] Marchalsy, & delyverde out alle þe pr*i*soners. And so þe same day þei comen yn-to London; a*n*d þ*er*e thay robbyd þe peple, and slowyn alle[11] alyens þat þay my3t fynde yn þe cyte and aboute þe cite, and despoiled alle her gode3, and made havoke. ¶ And on the Fridai[12] next aftir, þat was on þe morowe, thei comyn vn[13]to þe Tour of London; and the king beyng þ*er*e-yn, þei sette out of þe Tour þe Archebishop of Caunt*ur*bury, Maistir Symond[14] Sudbery, and S*er* Robert Hale3, Pryour[15] of Saint Johnes,[16] and a Whit Frere þat was confessour vn to King Richarde, and brou3t ham vnto þe Tour Hill; and þ*er*e þay smytyn of her hedys, and comyn ayen to London, & slowyn mo peple of men of lawe, and o*þer* worthi men yn dyuers p*ar*teye3 of þe cite. And þanne went þai[17] to the Duke3 place of Lancastre, beyonde Saint Mary Stronde, þat was callyd Savoy.[18] ¶ And þ*er*e þei deuoured & destroyed al þe gode3 þ*at* þay my3t fynde,[19] and bare ham away, and brent vp þe place. And þanne aftir þey went to Seint Johnes without Smythffelde, and destroyed þe godes,[20] & brent vp þat hous, and went to Westm*inster*, and so to Sent Martyne3 þe Graunt, and made hem go[21] out of

Nota of Jacke Staw

[1] weren T. were R. *om.* Kk. [2] and o*þer* T.
[3] a‡ þe T. al þe R. [4] loked vp & *om.* TR.
[5] vp *om.* R. [6] callid þe TR. [7] one *om.* R. [8] þat men T.
[9] Kent on TR. [10] þe *om.* T. [11] alle þe TR.
[12] *leaf* 111. [13] vn *om.* T. [14] *sir* Edmunde TR.
[15] hospitaler p*ri*oure and maistir T. [16] Iohnes house T.
[17] þei wenten T. þey wente R. [18] þe Savey T. [19] fynde þere R.
[20] goodis there T. [21] to go TR.

þe sayntwarye, alle[1] þat were þere[2] ynne for eny maner of[3] gryth.[4]

¶ And þanne cõme vnto þe Temple, and to alle oþer ynne3 of men of lawe, & dispoyled ham and rebbed ham of[5] her gode3, and also taare hir bokis of law; and þai[6] come to London, and brake vp the pryson of Newgate, & droff out alle þe prisoners, felons, & oþir of[7] bothe countres, and alle þe peple þat was with-ynne ham, & destroyed alle þe bokis of bothe countres; and þus þay contynued forth, both Saturday and Sonday,[8] vnto[9] þe Monday next folowyng, yn alle hir[10] malice & wickydnesse. And þanne,[11] on the Monday, King Richard, with his lorde3 þat were *with* hym þat tyme, and[12] with þe Meire of London, William Walworth, þe[13] aldermen & þe co*mm*yne3 of þe cite, come[14] yn[15] to Southwerk[16] to here &[17] know þe entenc*i*on of þese rebellis and misgou*er*ned pepil.[18] ¶ And þis Iak Straw þanne made an oyes in þe felde, þat alle þe pepyl of accorde schulde come nere, & here his clamour and[19] his crye and his will, and þe lorde3, and þe Mayre and þe aldermen, with þe co*mmun*ialte, hauyng indignac*i*on of his Covetise and Falsnesse, and his foule p*re*sompcion; and anon William Walworth, þat tyme beyng Mayre, drew out his knyff, and slow Iack Straw, and ano*n* ry3t *þere* dede smy3t of his hed, and sette it vp apon[20] a spere-schafte; and so it was bore þrou3 London, & set on high vp on London Brygge. ¶ And[21] anon alle þe[22] rysers and mysgouernyd men were voyded and[23] vanysched, as hit hadde not byn þay. ¶ And[24] þe king, of his grete godenesse, and by prayer of his lorde3, made *þere* vj kny3tis of gode & worthi men of þe cite of London, þat is,[25] William Walworth—þat tyme was[26] Mayre and slow Iack Straw,—& ij[de][27] was Nicholas Brembre, þe[28] iij was[29] John Philypot, the[28] iiij was[30] Nicholas Twyfford, þe[28] fyffþe was[29] Robert Lawnde3, þe[28] vj, Robert Gayton. ¶ And þanne þe king, with his lorde3 and his[31] kny3t*es*, retourned ayen vnto the Tour of London; and þ*er*e he restid hym tylle his[32] peple were bettir cecyd, & seet yn

[1] alle *om.* R. [2] with T. *þere om.* R. [3] of *om.* R. [4] gryth *om.* T. [5] of TR. or Kk. [6] þanne þai T. þanne þey R. [7] and of TR. [8] vnto þe Sonday T. [9] and vnto T. [10] her maner of T. [11] þanne *om.* T. [12] and *om.* T. [13] þat was *þat* tyme come with þe TR. [14] and come T. [15] yn *om.* T. [16] Smythfelde R. [17] and to T. [18] peple þat so reuyd and robbid T. [19] and here his clamouris and T. and here his clamour and R. *om.* Kk. [20] vpon T. it vpon R. [21] And *om.* T. [22] þese T. þi3e R. [23] and clene T. & clene R. [24] And thanne T. and þanne R. [25] is to saie T. is to say R. [26] þat was þat tyme T. [27] þe ij[e] T. [28] and þe T. [29] was *om.* TR. [30] was *om.* T. [31] his *om.* R. [32] this T.

rest and pee3. ¶ And þanne, by processe of tyme, as þay my3t gete and take þe3e [1]Rebellis & rysers, they hanged ham vp on[2] the next galous yn eue*ry* lordesschippe throu3 þe[3] Reme of Engelond,[4] be xl & be xxx, be[5] x. & be xij., eue*r* as þay myghte be goton & take[6] yn eny p*ar*teys.

¶ And yn þe v. yere of King Richarde3 Regne was þe grete Erthe quake; and þat[7] was do[8] gene*r*ally ovir[9] alle þe worlde,—the Wedynesday afftir Whitsonday, yn the yere after[10] incarnac*i*on of our Lorde Ihesu crist, m^l^ ccc. iiij xx xj,[11] where-of alle þe peple were sore agast, and drad[12] long tyme aftir, for þe grete[13] vengaunce and grete drede þat our Lorde God schewed and dede.

¶ In[14] þe vj 3ere of his regne,[15] Ser Henri Spense*r*, Bischop of Northwych, went *with* a croyserey oue*r* þe see yn-to þe contre of Flawndre3; & *þere* he[16] gate þe towne of Grauenyng, &[17] þe toun of Oldenburgh,[18] Dunkirk, and Newport; and *þere* þai ladde & fry3t .xj. schyppe3 *with* peleage[19] for to haue come yn to Engelonde *with* alle þese schippes and goodis,[20] and þe Bischop of Northwich and his counsel lette brenne þose schippe3, with al þe peleage, yn þe same havynne, all yn-to hard asches.

¶ And at Dunkirk was don a grete batayle betuene þe Flemynge3 and þe Englisch men; and[21] at þat batayle was slayn a gret multitude of þese Flemynge3, and a passyng noumbre. ¶ And þanne went þe bischop with his retynu vn-to Ipre3, and besegid it a long tyme; but it my3t not be gote, and so he lefte þat sege, and come ayen yn-to Engelond, for our Englischmen were foule destroyed, and mony deied on þe Flyx.

[*Anne of Bohemia comes to wed Richard II.*]

¶ And yn þis same 3ere come Quene Anne yn-to Engelond, for to be spoused vnto King Richard; and hir fadir was Empe*r*our of Almayne, and King of Beeme. And with hir came þe Duk of Tassy and hir vncle, and mony o*þer* worthi lorde3 & kni3te*s*[22] of hir cuntre of Beeme, and of o*þer* Duch tunge3, to do hir reuerence

[1] *leaf* 111, *back*. [2] vpon T. [3] out þe TR. [4] of Engelond *om*. T.
[5] and bi T. [6] be take and gete T. [7] hit T. [8] do *om*. T.
[9] oue*r* T. [10] after the T. after þe R. [11] and xj T. [12] a dred T.
[13] girte *om*. TR. [14] And in TR.
[15] of þe reigne of kyng Richard T. of þe regne of king Richarde R.
[16] and þei T. þey R. [17] & *om*. [18] Broburgh T.
[19] pilage T. peseage Kk.
[20] with these shippis and goodis T. with þe3e shippes & godis R. *om*. Kk.
[21] and *om*. T. [22] knyghtis and lordis T.

and worschip. ¶ And *Ser* Symond Beuyrley, a worthi Knyȝt of þe Gartyr,[1] & oþer knyȝtis and squyers þat were þe Kingiȝ embassetoures, brouȝt hir yn-to Engelond, and so ferthe to London. ¶ And þe pe[p]le of þe cite, þat is to saye, þe Mayre & þe Aldermen and alle þe[2] comyneȝ, rydyn ayens hir to welcome hir; and eue*ry* man yn gode aray, and eue*ry* craft with his Mynstralcye, yn þe best mane*r*, mette with hir on þe Blak-Heth yn Kent, & so brouȝt hir to[3] London þrouȝ þe cite, and so forth yn to[4] Westemystre, vn-to þe kingeȝ palice; and þe*re* sche was spousede vnto King Richard, welle and worthily, yn þe Abbey of Westmynstre,; and þe*re* sche was crouned Quene of Engelond; and alle hir frendis þat comyn w*ith* hir hadde gret yeftis, and hadde grete chere, and were wel refresched[5] as long tyme as þai abyden here.

¶ And yn þis same yere was a batayle do with-ynne þe kingeȝ Palys at Westmynstre, for certeyne poyntis of treson, betuene *Ser* Iohn of Ansley, knyȝt, defendaunt, and Karton, Squyere, þe appellaunt; but þis *Ser* Iohn of Ansley ouyr-come þis Carton, & made hym [6]to yolde hym withynne þe listis, and anon þis Craton (*sic*) was[7] dispoyled of his harneȝ and drawe out of þe lystis, and so forth to[8] Tyborne; and þe*re* he was hangyd for his falsnesse.

¶ And yn[9] the viij yere of his Regne[10] *Ser* Edmu*n*de of Langele, Erle of Cawmebrygge, þe kingeȝ vncle, wente vnto[11] Portingale with a Fayre manye of men of armeȝ and archers, yn helpyng & streyngthyng[12] of þe King of Portyngale ayens þe King of Spayngne and his powe*r*. and þe*re* þe King of Portyngale hadde þe victory of his Enymyeȝ, þrouȝ help and comfort of our Englysch men. And whanne þat iornay was y[13]do, The Erle of Cawmbrige com hom ayen with his peple yn-to Engelond yn haste; blessid be Gode and his gracious yeft! Amen!

¶ And þis same yere, Kinge Richarde hylde his Cristismesse yn þe Mane*r* of Esthæm (*sic*). And þe same tyme, þe King of Ermonye fledde out of his owne londe, and come yn-to Engelond, for to haue socour and help of our King ayens his enymyeȝ, þat hadde dreve hym of[14] his Reme; and so he was brouȝt vn-to[15] þe King to Eltham, þe*re* as þe King hylde his realle feest of Cristismasse; and

[1] MS. gartyd. [2] þe *om.* T. [3] into T. [4] vnto T.
[5] and weren wele cherid and refresshid T. & well were chered & refresshed R.
[6] *leaf* 112. [7] was *om.* T. [8] to þe T. [9] yn *om.* T.
[10] þe reigne of kyng Richard T. [11] into T.
[12] in strengthyng and helpyng T. in strengthinge & helpinge R.
[13] y *om.* TR. [14] out of T. [15] to R.

þere oure King welcomed hym, and dede hym reuerence & worschip, and commawnded alle his[1] lordeȝ to make hym alle þe chere þat þay cowthe. and þanne he besouȝt the King[2] of grace and help, and of his comfort yn his nede, and þat he myȝt be broȝt ayen yn[3]-to his owne kingedom and londe, for þe Turkeȝ hadde deuoured & destroyed moch parte of his londe; and for drede he fledde, & come hider for socoure and helpe. ¶ And than[4] þe King, hauyng compassion of his gret myschiffe and greuos deseȝe, anon[5] he toke his Counsel, and axed what was best to do. and þai answered and sayde, 'yef it likyd hym to yeue hym eny gode, it were welle ydo: and as towchyng his peple, to Trauayle so fer yn-to out-londeȝ, it were a grete ieparde'; and so þe King yaf hym golde and seluyr, and many richeȝ[6] and iewellis, and betauȝt hym to God; and so he passed ayen out of Engelond.

¶ And yn þis same yere King Richarde, *with* a ryall power, went yn-to Scotland for to war ayen[7] þe Scottis, for hir Falsnesse and destroccion þat þay[8] hadde do ayens[9] þe[10] English men yn þe Marchis. And þe[11] Scottis come doun[12] for to trete[13] with hym[14] & with his lordeȝ for trewes, as for certeyn yeres; and so oure Kyng and his Counsel graunted hem trewes certyn yeres[15] vnto her axyng, and our King turned hym hom ayen yn-to Engelonde. ¶ And whanne he was come vnto[16] Yorke, þere he aboode and restyd hym. and[17] þere Ser John Helond, þe Erle of Kentis broþer, slow þe Erlis sone of Staffarde and his heyre with a daggar yn þe cite of Yorke, wherfor the King was sore amoued and grevid, & remevyd fro þenneȝ and come to London; and þe Meire and þe Aldermen and þe commyns, with alle þe solempnite þat þay[18] [19]myghte do,[20] rydyn ayens þe King, and broȝt hym ryally throuȝ the cite, & so forth vnto Westmynstre vnto his owne Palis.

¶ And yn þe ix yere of his regne[21] he hadde[22] a parlement at Westminster, & þere he made ij dukes, and a Markques & v. erleȝ:

[1] þe T. [2] the king *om.* T. [3] yn *om.* TR. [4] than *om.* T.
[5] and *om.* TR. and anon Kk. [6] riche yiftis T. rich ȝiftis R.
[7] vpon R. [8] þe Scottis T. [9] to T. [10] do vnto R.
[11] þanne þe T. [12] downe vnto þe kyng T.
[13] entrete T. [14] with him TR. hym Kk.
[15] yeeris, and so oure kyng and his counceile grauntid hem trewes certeyne yeris T. yeris and so þe king & his counsel graunted ham trewis certayn yeres R. *om.* Kk.
[16] to T. [17] and *om.* TR. [18] þay *om.* [19] *leaf* 112, *back.*
[20] *þat* myghte be do R.
[21] of kyng Richardis reigne T. yeer of king Richardis Regne he held R.
[22] holde T.

þe first þat was mad Duk, was þe Kinge3 vncle, *Ser* Edmunde[1] of Langeley and[2] Erle of Caumbrigge; and hym he[3] made[4] Duk of Yorke; and his o*þer* vncle, *Ser* Thomas of Wodestoke, þat was Erle of Bokingham, he made Duke of Gloucestre, and *Ser* Lover, þat was Erle of Oxynforde, he[5] made Marques of Denelyn; and Henry of Bolyngbroke, þe Duke3 son of Lancastre, he[6] made Erle of Derby; and *Ser* Edwarde, þe Dukes sone of York, he[6] made Erle of Ruthlond; *Ser* John Holande, þat was þe Erle of Kentis brother, he[6] made Erle of Huntyngton; *Ser* Thomas Mombraye, Erle of Notyngham, & Erle Marchall of Engelond; and Ser[7] Michell of Pole, kny3t, he[6] made Erle of Suffolke and Chaunceler of Engelond.

¶ And the Erle of the[8] March, at þat same[9] *par*lement holdon at Westemynstre, yn[10] playne parlement among al þe Lorde3 and Comyns, was proclaymed Erle of the March, and heyre[11] parant vnto[12] þe croune of Engelonde aftir King Richarde. ¶ The which Erle of the[13] Marche went ouyr[14] see yn-to Irelond vnto his lordeschippe3 and londe3, for the Erle of[15] Marche is Erle of Vlcestre yn Irelonde, and[16] by ry3t lyne and heritage. and at[17] a[18] Castill of his he lay þat tyme; and *þere* come apon[19] hym a grete m*u*ltitude yn buschmentis of wilde Iryschmen, hym for to take and distroye, and he come out ffersly of his Castell with his peple, and manly ffau3t *with* ham; and *þere* he was take, and hew al to pecis, and *þere* he[20] deied; on whose soule God haue mercy! Amen!

¶ And yn the .x. yere of King Richarde3 regne, þe Erle of Arundell went to[21] þe see with a grete Naueye of schippe3, enarmed with men of arme3 and gode archers. And as[22] þai come yn to þe brode see, þei mette with þe hole flytte þat come lade with wyne[23] from Rochell; and[24] the wyne3 were Enymye3 godes; and *þe*ron oure[25] Naueye sette apoin[26] ham, and toke ham alle, and brou3t hym yn to[27] diuers porti3 and hauons of[28] Engelond, & su*m* to London: and þere þe my3te haue hedde a ton of Rochel wyne of þe beste for xx s. of sterlynge*s*; and so we hadde gret chep of wyne þrou3-out þe Reme at þat tyme, þankyd be God Almy3ty!

[1] Symonde T. [2] and *om.* TR. [3] he *om.* R.
[4] and he was made T. [5] him T. [6] him he T. [7] *sir* TR. for Kk.
[8] the *om.* TR. [9] same tyme of þe T. [10] *in* þe T. [11] heir of R.
[12] to TR. [13] the *om.* TR. [14] ou*er* þe TR. [15] of the T.
[16] and *om.* R. [17] there at T. þere at R. [18] þe R. [19] vpon TR.
[20] he *om.* T. [21] vnto TR. [22] And as T. and Kk.
[23] comen wyne lade T. with wyne *om.* R. [24] and *om.* T.
[25] and þere oure T. þere our R. and *þe*ron Kk. [26] vpon TR.
[27] vnto R. [28] into T.

How þe .v. lordez arysen at Ratcot brydge, ye schul here.[1] Ca*pitulu*m ccxl.[2]

And yn þe a.xj yere of King Richardez regne,[3] þe .v. lordez reson at Ratcote brygge, yn[4] destroccyon of the[5] Rebell*is* þat weryn þat tyme yn alle this[6] Reme. ¶ The first of the .v. lordez was *Ser* Thom*as* of Wodestoke, þe Kingis vncle, and Duk of Gloucestre; þe[7] ij was *Ser* Richarde, Erle of Arundell; þe[8] iij was *Ser* Richard, Erle of Warwic; þe iiij was *Ser* Harri[9] Bolyngbroke, Erle of Derby, and þe .v. was *Ser* Thom*as* Mouubray, Erle of Notygham. ¶ And þeze .v. lordez sawe þe myschif, and mysgouernaunce, and þe Falsnesse of the Kingez counsell; wherfor þai þat were of þe Kingez kounsel chef,[10] ffleddyn out of þis lo*n*de ou*er* þe see, þat is to say, *Ser* Alisaunder Neuyle, Archebischop[11] of York, *Ser* Robert le Veere, [12]Marquis of Develyn and Erle of Oxynforde; *Ser*[13] Michel de la Pole, Erle of Suffolke and Chaunceler of Engelond. and þese iij. lordez went ouyr see,[14] and cam nevir ayen, for there þay deied. And þan[15] þeze .v. lordez forsaide[16] maden[17] a p*ar*lement at Westmystre, and þ*er*e thay tokyn *Ser* Robert Tresilian, þe Iustize, and *Ser* Nicholl Brembre, knyzt an[18] citezein of London, and *Ser* Iohn Salesbury, knyzt of the Kingis housholde, & Vske, sergeaunt of armez; and mony moo of op*er* peple were take and Iuged vnto[19] deth by þe counsel of þese .v. lordez yn hir p*ar*lement at Westmi*n*ster, for treson þat þai put apon ham, to be draw fro þe[20] Tour of London þrouz þe cite, and so forth to Tyburne; and þere to be hangyd, and þ*er*e her þrotis to be kut; and þus þei were *ser*ued, and deiden.

And aftir þat, yn þis same p*ar*lement, was[21] *Ser* Symond of[22] Beverlay, þat was a Knyzt of þe Garter, and *Ser* John Beauchamp, knyzt, þat was Steward of the Kingis housholde, and *Ser* Iamez Berners, were for-Iuged vn-to[23] deth; and[24] þay wer ladd on fote vn-to[25] þe Toure Hille; and þ*er*e were her hedis smytyn of, and mony other mo, be þeze .v. lordez.

[1] ye schul here *om.* TR. [2] CC° T. CCxlj R.
[3] in the reigne of kyng Richard þe xj^e^ yeer T. þe Regne of king Richarde þe xj yeer R. [4] in þe T. [5] the *om.* TR. [6] þe TR.
[7] and þe T. [8] And þe T. [9] henri of R.
[10] weren that tyme cheef of þe kyngis counceile T. were *þat* tyme chief of þe kinges counseH R. [11] the Erchebisshop T. [12] *leaf* 113.
[13] and *sir* T. [14] þe see TR. [15] þan *om.* T. [16] forseide v. lordis T.
[17] aboue seide maden T. [18] and T. & R. [19] vnto þe T.
[20] þe T. þo Kk. [21] at Westmynstre was T. [22] of *om.* T.
[23] vnto the T. [24] and þanne T. & þanne R. [25] to TR.

[*Jousts in Smithfield*, A.D. 1388.]

¶ In þis[1] forsaide parlement, and in þe xij 3ere of King Richarde3 regne, he let crye and ordeyne[2] generalle Iusti3e, þat is called a turnement, of lorde3, kny3tis and skquiers. ¶ And þese Iustes & turnement were holden at London in Smithfelde, for alle maner of strayngers, of what londe &[3] cunctre þei[4] were, and[5] þidir þei were ri3t welcome; and to hem and to alle oþer was holden opon housholde and grete ffestis; and also grete yftis were yeue to alle maner of straungers. And þay[6] of the kinges syde were[7] alle of on[8] sute: her cotis, her armyour, schelde3, & her[9] hors &[10] trapure, alle[11] was white hertis, with crowne3 about her nekkis, and cheyne3 of golde hangyng þere vp-on, and þe croune hangyng lowe before þe hertis body; þe which hert was þe kinge3 lyveray þat he yaf to lorde3 & ladie3, kny3tis and skquiers, for to know his housholde from oþer peple. ¶ And at þis first comyng to her Iustes, xxiiij ladie3 ladde þese xxiiij lorde3 of þe Garther with cheynys of goolde, and alle yn þe same sute of hertis as is afore sayde, from þe Tour on hors bak þrou3 the cite of London yn-to Smythfelde, þere þe Iustes schulde be do.[12] And þis fest and Iustes was holde general, and[13] to alle þo þat wolde come, of what land or nacion þat euyr he[14] were; and þis[15] was holde duryng xxiiij daye3, of þe kinge3 owne cost; and þese xxiiij lorde3 to answere to[16] alle maner of[17] pepil þat wolde come þidir. And þedir come þe Erle of seint Poule of Fraunce, and mony oþer worthi kny3tes with hym of diuers parteys, ffull welle arayed.[18] And out of Holand & Henaude come þe Lorde Ostrenaunde, þat was þe Duke3 sone of Holande, & mony oþer worthi kny3tes with hym, bothe[19] of Holand & Henaude[20] fulle welle arayede. And whenne þese feste and Iustes was do and[21] endid, þe King þanked þese st[r]ayngers and yaf ham mony grete yeftis; and þanne þei token hir leue of þe King & of oþer lorde3 and ladye3, and went hom ayen yn-to her owne cuntre, with grete loue & moche þanke.

¶ And yn þe xiij yere[22] of King Richarde3 regne, þer was a

[1] this same T. þis same R. [2] ordeyne a T. [3] or TR.
[4] what so euer þei T. [5] of & T. off and R. [6] þay *om.* TR.
[7] þey were R. [8] on *om.* T. o R. [9] & her *om.* TR. [10] & *om.* TR.
[11] and alle T. & all R. [12] holde T. [13] and *om.* T.
[14] thei T. þei R. [15] þis *om.* T. [16] to *om.* TR. [17] of *om.* TR.
[18] MS. Kk. wrongly inserts here ¶ And þe3 Fest & Iustes was endid, þe king thankyd þese. And þes ffest & . . . þese *om.* TR.
[19] bothe *om.* T. [20] henaude *om.* T [21] do and *om.* TR.
[22] *leaf* 113, *back.*

batayle y[1]do yn the Kingis palis at Westmynstre, betwene a skquyer of Nauerne þat was *with* þe king, and anoþer skquier þat me callid John Walsch, of[2] poyntis of treson þat þis Nauerner put vp-on þis Walsch; but þis Nauerner was ouercome, and yelde hym craunt to his aduersarye, and anon he was dispoyled of his armyour, and draw out of þe palis vnto Tyburne, and þere he was hangyd for his ffalsnesse.

¶ And þe xiiij yere of þe regne of King Richard, Ser John of Gaunt, Duk of Lancastre, went ouyr se[3] yn-to Spayne,—for to chalenge his ry3t, þat he hadde be his wife3 tytill, vnto þe croune of Spayngne,—with a gret ost of pepil, of men of arme3 and archers. And he[4] had[5] with hym þe Duchesse, his wyff, and his iij dou3tre3, yn-to[6] Sp[a]yne, and þere[7] þay weryn a grete while. ¶ And at þe[8] last, þe King of Spayne began to trete with þe Duke of Lancastre, and þay were accorded to-gadir þrou3 hir boþe counsel, yn þis maner: þat þe King of Spayne schulde wedde þe Duke3 dou3ter of[9] Lancastre, þat was þe[10] ry3t heire to Spayne, and[11] schulde yeue to[12] þe Duk of Lancastre golde and seluyr, þat was cast yn-to grete wegge3, and mony oþir iewellis, as mony as viij Charietis my3t carye. ¶ And euery yere aftir, duryng þe lyff of þe Duke of Lancastre and of the[13] Duchesse his wyff, .x. M[l] Marke of golde, þe which golde auenture and[14] charge3, þay of Spayne schulde auenture and bryng yerley to[15] Baione to þe Dukes assygne3, be surete made. ¶ Also þe Duk of Lancastre maried anoþer of his dou3tres vnto þe King of Portingale þe same tyme. And whanne he hadde do þis,[16] he come hom ayen yn-to Engelond, and þe gode lady his wyff also; but mony a worthi man yn þat viage deid vpon þe Flix.[17]

¶ And yn þe xv yere of King Richarde3 regne, he hilde his Cristismasse yn þe Manor of Wodestoke; and there þe Erle of Penbroke, a yong lorde, &[18] tendir of age, wolde lerne to Iuste with a kni3t me[19] callid Ser Iohn Saint-Iohn, & redyn to gadir yn þe park of Wodestoke; and þere þis worthi Erle of Pembroke was slayn with þat oþer knightes spere, as he cast hit fro hym whanne

[1] y *om.* TR. [2] for T. [3] þe see T. [4] he *om.* T. [5] ladde R.
[6] ouer þe see with him into T.
[7] and there T. and þere R. and Kk. [8] þe *om.* T.
[9] of TR. *om.* Kk. [10] þe *om.* R. [11] and þe kyng of Spayne T.
[12] vnto TR. [13] his T. [14] and *om.* T. [15] vnto R.
[16] þus T. [17] viage vpon þe flixe died T. [18] and a T.
[19] þat men T. *þat* me R.

he[1] had cowped; and þus þis gode Erle made *þere* his ende; for whose dethe[2] þe King and the Quene made moche sorow.[3]

¶ And yn þe xvj yere of Kyng Richard his regne,[4] Iohn Hende beyng þat tyme Maire of London, and Iohn Walworth & Henry Vannere beyng scherreffes of London, þat[5] tyme a bakers man bare a basket of horsbred yn to Flet-strete, toward an ostrye hous; and *þere* come a yemon of þe Bischoppis of Salysbury, þat was callyd Romayn, and he tok an horsloff out of þe basket of þe baker[6]; and he askyd hym 'whi he dede so.' And þis Romayn turned ayen, and brak þe bakers hedde; and neyboure3 come out, and wolde haue restid þis Romayne; and he brak from ham and fledde yn-to þe lorde3 place. and þe counstablis wolde haue hadde hym out; but þe Bischoppe3 men schitte þe 3atis fast,[7] and kept þe place þat no man my3te entre. And þanne moch more pepil gadryd þedir, & saide þat 'þai wolde haue hym out, or[8] ellis þei wolde brenne vp þe place, and alle [9]that were with-ynne.' ¶ And þanne come þe Maire and[10] Schereffe3, with o*þ*ir myche pepill, and cecid þe malice of þe comyne3, and made eu*e*ry man go[11] hom to his[12] hous, and kepe þe pee3. ¶ Thanne[13] þe3 Romaynes lorde, þe Bischop of Salusbery, *Ser* Iohn Waltam (þat was þat tyme treserer of Engelond) went to *Ser* Thomas Arundel,[14] Archebischop of York, and also Chaun[ce]ler of Engelonde, and to hym made his complaynt[15] vpon þe peple of þe cite of London. ¶ And þanne þe3e ij Bischope3, of grete malice and vengeaunce, comyn vnto[16] the King to Wyndesore, and made a grete complaynte vpon the Maire and the Schereffes; and anon aftirward alle þe cite[17] was before þe King and his co*n*sel, and þai cast vn-to[18] ham a greuous herte, and wondir grete malice. ¶ And anon sodenly þe King sent for þe Maire of London & for þe ij scherreffe3; and þai cam to[19] hym to þe Castell of Wyndesore. And þe King rebukyd þe Maire and þe scherreves fulle foule, for þe offens þat þai hadde do ayens hym & his officers, yn his chaumbir of[20] London. ¶ Wherfore he deposid & put out the Mayre of

[1] þei TR. [2] cende and *þer*fore T. [3] sorow for his deeth T.
[4] of kyng Richardis reigne T. yeer of king Richardis regne R. his regne Kk.
[5] þe same TR. [6] þe bakers basket T.
[7] fast *om.* T. shette faste þe yatis R. [8] and R. [9] *leaf* 114.
[10] and þe TR. [11] to gone T. [12] her T. [13] And thanne T.
[14] of Arundell T.
[15] and þere þe bisshop made his compleynt vnto þe chaunceler T. an þere made his complaynt to him R.
[16] to T. [17] anoon att þe Citee aftirward T. [18] to T.
[19] vnto T. [20] at TR.

London[1] and þe ij[2] Scherreveȝ; and þis was don xiiij[3] daye3 afore þe Fest of saint Iohn the Baptist. ¶ And þanne þe King callyd to hym a kniȝt þat me called Ser Edward Valyngrigge,[4] and made hym warden and gouernoure of þe cite, & Chaumbyr of London, and ouyr alle his pepil þereynne; and so he kept þat office but iiij wokis, because he was so tendir and gentill vn-to þe ceteȝens of London; wherfore þe King deposyd hym, and made Ser Bawdewyn Radyngton, knyȝt, þat was Countroller of þe Kingis Housholde, wardeyne and gouernoure of his chaumbyr, and of his[5] peple þerynne; and chese vnto hym to worthi men of þe cite to be Scherevi3 with hym, for to gouerne & kepe þe kinge3 lawe3 yn the cite; & on me called Gylbert Maghfelde, and þat oþer, Thomas Newenton, And þeȝe iij gode men hadde þe gouernaunce of þe cite vn-to þe tyme of þe Maires eleccion þanne next,[6] þat was called William Stawnden[7]; And þis Gilbert Maghfelde & Thomas Newneton, schereff. ¶ And þanne þe Mayre & þe ij schirreveȝ, and alle þe aldermen, with alle þe worthi craftis of London, went on fote vn to þe Tour; and þere came out þe Counstable of þe Tour, and yaff þe Maire and þe Schereveȝ her othe, and charge,[8] as þay scholde haue take yn the Chequer at[9] Westmynstre yn þe Kinge3 Court of his Iustiȝes & Barons of the sayde[10] Cheker; and þanne went thay whom ayenne.

¶ And þanne þe King and his Counsel, for grete malice of þe Cite of London, and[11] despite, remevid alle his Courte3 fro[12] Westmynstre vn-to þe cete of Yorke, þat is to say, þe Chauncerie, þe Cheker, þe[13] Kinge3 Bench, and also þe Comyn Place, and þere þay hilde alle her[14] Courtis of Law fro mydsomer vn-to[15] þe fest of Cristismesse next comyng. ¶ And þanne þe King & his counsel sawe it not so profitable þere, as it was at London; þanne anon he[16] removid hit ayen to[17] London, and so to Westmynstre, for gret ese of his officers and avauntage of[18] þe King and of[19] alle þe comyns of þe Reme.

¶ And whenne þe[20] peple of London sawe & knew þat þese

[1] of London *om.* TR. [2] and boþe TR. and for the ij Kk. [3] a xiiij T.
[4] Walyngregge T. Walingrugge R. [5] þe TR. [6] next þanne T.
[7] Wiliam Staundon) was chosen mayre T. nexte William Staundon) chosen meire R.
[8] hir charge and oth R. [9] of T. [10] sayde *om.* TR. [11] and for R.
[12] from T. fro R. for Kk. [13] and þe T. [14] þese T. his R.
[15] midsomer that is to saie þe feste of seynt Iohn) þe Baptist vnto T.
[16] *leaf* 114. *back.* [17] vnto TR. [18] for R. [19] of *om.* TR.
[20] þe *om.* TR.

courtis were come ayen, and þe King and his peple also,[1] þanne þe Maire and þe Aldermen, with þe Cheff[2] comyns, let gadir a grete summe of goolde of alle þe comyns of the cite, & ordeyned & made grete rialte ayens his comyng to London, for[3] to haue his grace and gode[4] lordeschip, and also her liberteis and Fraunche3es graunted vnto ham ayen as þai afore tyme hadde. And þann, by grete instaunce and praier of Quene Anne, and of oþer[5] lorde3 and lade3, þe King graunted hem grace: and þis was do at Schene yn Sothereye. ¶ And þan[6] þe King with-ynne ij[7] daye3 aftir, com to London; and þe Maire of London,[8] schereue3, aldremen,[9] and alle þe worthi cite aftirward, redyn ayens þe King yn gode araye vnto þe heth on þis syde þe maner of Schene, submittyng humyly hem self,[10] and mekely, with[11] almaner of[12] obeysaunce3 vn-to hym, as þay owed to[13] do. And þus þai brou3t þe King and þe Quene to London. ¶ And whanne þe King come to þe gate of þe Brygge of London, þere þay presentid hym with a mylke-white stede, sadelled and brydilled, & trapped with white cloth of golde and red parted togadir, and þe Quene a palfraye alle white, trappid yn þe same aray[14] with white and rede, and þe[15] condite3 of London Ronnen white[16] wyne and rede, for al maner pepill to drynke of. ¶ And betuene Seint Poule3 and the Cros yn Chepe, þere was made a stage, a ryalle, stondyng vpon hygh; a[n]d þerynne were mony angelis, with dyuers melodie3 and songe; and an[17] aungell come doun[18] fro þe stage on high, by a vice, and sette a croune of golde & precious stone3 & perles apon þe Kinge3 hed, and anoþer on[19] the Quene3 hed; and so the citezenys brought þe King and þe Quene vnto Westmynstre, yn-to his palice at[20] Westmynstre, & presentyd hym with ij basyns of syluyr, & ovirgilte, fulle of coyned golde, the summa of xx m[l] li,[21] prayng hym, of his[22] mercy and lordschip and specialle grace,[23] þat þay my3t haue his gode loue, and[24] liberte3 & Fraunche3es like as þay hadde before tyme3, and by his lettre3

[1] also *om.* T. [2] cheff *om.* T. [3] and for T. [4] his good TR.
[5] of her T. hir R. [6] þan *om.* T. [7] a ij T. [8] london) with þe T.
[9] aldremen *om.* T. [10] hem humbely T. submittinge ham humbeli R.
[11] with *om.* T. [12] of *om.* TR. [13] for to T.
[14] white and in þe same aray trappid T. and in the same aray trapped R.
[15] also þe T. [16] with white T. alle þe R. [17] oon T.
[18] a downe T. [19] Crowne vpon T. croune vpon R.
[20] paleys And þanne on þe morne aftir þe mayre and þe sherefis and þe Aldermen of london) come vnto þe kyng into his paleys at T. Palis. And þanne on þe morow aftir þe meir and þe sherevis and þe aldermen of london) com vnto þe king in his Paleis at R. [21] xxM[l] pound T.
[22] his hie TR. [23] of his grace T. [24] and leve and R.

patentez confermed.[1] ¶ And þe Quene, and oþer worthi ladez & ladiez, ffillyn on hir[2] kneys, and besouȝt þe King of grace to conferme þis. Thanne þe King toke vp þe Quene, and grauntyd hir alle hir askyng, and þanne þei þanked þe King and þe Quene and went home ayene.

¶ And yn þe xvij[3] yere of his regne,[4] certeyne lordez of Scotlande com yn-to Englonde to gete worschip, as by feet of armez: þese[5] were þe *persons*: þe Erle of Marre, and[6] chalanged the Erle Marchall of Engelonde to Iuste with hym certeyn poyntez on horsbak with scharpe speris. And so þai redyn togadir, as ij worthi knyȝtis & lordes, certayne cours, but not þe fulle chalange þat þe Scottysche Erle made; for he was cast both hors and man, and ij of his rybbis brokyn with þe[7] ffalle; and so he was born out of Smythfelde, hom yn-to his Inne; and with-ynne a litil while aftirward[8] he was caried homwarde yn a liter; & atte York he[9] deied. ¶ And *Ser* Wil*l*i*a*m Darell, knyȝt, and[10] banerrer of Scotland, made anoþer chalange *with* Sire[11] [12]Piers Courteneye, knyȝt; and þe Kinge*s* banerrer of Engelonde, of[13] certeyne courseȝ hit on horsbak yn þe same ffelde. ¶ And whanne he hed y[14]rede certeyne cours hit, and saw he myȝt not haue[15] þe bettyr, yaf[16] it ouyr, and wolde no more of his chalang, and[17] turned his hors and rode hom vnto his owne in.[18] And one Kocborne, squier, of Scotland, chalanged Sir[19] Nicholl Hawberke, knyȝt, of certeyne cours, hit with scharp speris on horsbak; and redyn .v. cours hit togadir; and att eu*e*ry cours þe Scotte was cast doun,[20] both hors and man; and þus our Englisch lordeȝ[21]—þankyd be God!—had þe felde.

¶ And yn þe xviij[22] yere of King Richardeȝ regne, deied þe gode gracious Quene Anne, þat was wiff to King Richarde, yn þe maner of Schene, yn þe schire of Surreie, vp-on Whitsonday. þanne[23] was sche broȝt to London, and so to Westmynstre; and þ*e*re was sche y[24]beryed and worthily entered, besyde saint Edwardeȝ schryne; on whose soule Almyȝti God haue mercy and pite! amen![25]

[1] and patentis And her chartir confermyd T. [2] hir *om.* TR.
[3] xvj T.
[4] of kyng Richardis reigne T. yeer of king Richardis Regne R.
[5] And þese T. [6] and he T. & he R. [7] þat T.
[8] litiH tyme aft*er* T. alitil tyme aftir R. [9] þere he TR. [10] þe T.
[11] *sir* T. sir R. sixe Kk. [12] *leaf* 115. [13] of TR. [14] y *om.* TR.
[15] not haue TR. haue Kk. [16] he yaf TR. [17] but T. [18] his Inne T.
[19] *sir* T. sir R. for Kk. [20] adoun) TR. [21] men R. [22] xvij T.
[23] And þanne TR. [24] y *om.* TR. [25] amen *om.* T.

How King Richarde spoused dame Isabell, þe Kingis dou3tir of Fraunce, yn the towne of Caleys, and brou3t hir yn-to Engelond, and let croune hir Quene yn þe Abbey of Saint Petris of Westmynstre. Ca*pitulum* ccxlj.[1]

In þe xx^ti^ yere of King Richarde3 regne, he went ouyr se[2] to Caleys, with dukis, Erlis, lordis, and Barons, and mony o*þer* worthi squyers, yn grete aray, and comyn pepil of þe Reme yn gode aray, as longith to such a worþi king and prynce, of his nobley[3] to do hym reverence and obseruaunce, as owed[4] to be do to[5] hir liege lorde, and so my3ty a King and Empe*r*our yn his owne, to abyde and resceyve there þat worthi & gracious lady þat schulde be his wif, a yong creature of ix yere of age, Dame Isabell, þe Kingis dou3tir of Fraunce, and mony[6] worthi lordi3 of grete name, bothe Barons and kny3tis, with moche o*þer* pepil *þat* comen vn to þe toun of Grauenyng, and ij Dukis of Fraunce: þat on was þe Duk of Burgoyne, and þat o*þer*, Duk[7] of Barre, þat wolde no fir*þer* lasse þanne þey hadde plegge3 for[8] ham. And þanne King Richarde delyu*er*ed ij plegge3 for ham to goo saaf and come saaf: his ij worthi vncle3, þe Duk of Glowcestre and þe Duk of York. And þei ij went ou*er* þe watir of Grauenyng, & abiden þ*er*e as for[9] plegge3, vnto þe tyme þat þe Maryage and þe fest were do.[10] ¶ And þanne þe3e ij worthi Dukis of Fraunce[11] come ovir þe water at Grauenyng, and so to Caleis, with þe[12] worschepful lady, Dame Isabell, þe[13] Kingis dou3tir of Fraunce. And with hir come mony a worthi lorde and lady,[14] kny3tis and squyers, yn þe best aray þat my3t be; and þ*er*e þai mette with our meyne at Caleys, þe which welcomyd hir and hir meyne with þe grettest[15] honour and reuerence þat my3t be, and so brou3t hir to[16] Caleys toun. And þ*er*e sche was resceyvid with alle þe solempnite and worschip þat my3t be do vnto[17] such a lady. And þanne þei brou3t hir vnto þe King; and þe King toke hir, and welcomed hir and alle hir fayr mayne,[18] and made þ*er*e alle þe solempnite [19]þat my3t be do. ¶ And þanne þe King and his counsel axed of the Frensche lorde3[20] whethir alle þe conauntes and

[1] cc° T. ccxlij R. [2] went hi*m* ou*er* þe see T. þe See R.
[3] nobley and of his owen p*er*sone T. nobleie and of his owen) p*er*sone R.
[4] owith T. [5] vnto T. [6] many o*þer* TR. [7] þe Duke R.
[8] of R. [9] for þe Kk. þe *om.* TR. [10] was done T. was do R. were Kk.
[11] of Fraunce *om.* T. [12] this T. þis R. [13] þat is þe T.
[14] and eek lady and T. [15] beste TR.
[16] brought into T. hir into R. [17] to R. [18] maynce T.
[19] *leaf* 115, *back.* [20] men and lordis R.

forwardeȝ, with þe composicion þat were ordeyned and made on bothe parteys, schulde be trewly kept and holde betwene hem; and þai sayde "ye"; & þere þay sworon and token[1] hir charge apon a boke, and toke[2] hir oth welle and trewli it[3] to holde yn alle maner poyntis and couenauntes, without contradiccion or delay yn euery[4] maner wyse. And þanne was sche brouȝt to[5] Seint Nicholas chirch yn Calis; and þere sche was worthili weddyd, with þe moste[6] solempnite þat eny king or[7] quene myȝt haue, with archebischoppes and Bischopeȝ, and alle[8] mynystreȝ of holy churche. ¶ And þanne were þai[9] brouȝt hom vnto[10] þe Castell, and set[11] to mete, and þere[12] were serued with alle maner of delicaceȝ of alle[13] riall metis and drynkis plenteuously, to alle maner of strayngoureȝ and al oþer. And no creature[14] warned þat Fest, but alle were welcome; for þere were grete halys & tentis sette vp on þe grene without þe castell, for[15] to resceyue alle maner of peple, and euery office redy to serue ham alle; and þus þis worthi mariage was solemli do and ended with alle ryalte.

¶ Thanne[16] þese ij Dukys of Fraunce, with hir peple, tokon hir leue of þe King and[17] Quene, and went ayen to Grauenyng watir; and þere þe Frensch lordeȝ, þat is to say, þe ij Dukis &[18] hir meyne, were comen ovir þe watir of Grauenyng, & þere þay mette, & euerych toke leue of oþer; and so þai departed, and our lordeȝ come ayen to Caleys, and þe Frensch lordeȝ went hom ayen[19] yn-to Fraunce.

And[20] anon aftir, þe King made hym redy[21] with þe Quene and alle his lordeȝ and[22] oþer pepil with ham, & comyn ouyr þe see yn-to Engelond, and so to London, and þe Maire and þe Schereveȝ, with al þe aldermen and worthi comyneȝ, ryden ayens ham vnto þe Blacke-Heþ yn Kent; & þere þay mettyn with þe King and þe Quene, and welcomyd ham, and þat yn gode aray, and euery man in his cloþing of his crafte, and her[23] mynstrelles to-fore ham; and so þay brouȝt ham to Saint Georgeȝ Barre yn Southwerke; and þere

[1] and token T. and took R. and Kk. [2] made TR. [3] hir T.
[4] any T. eny R. [5] vnto TR. [6] with moche T. [7] and T.
[8] alle *om.* T. [9] þai *om.* TR. [10] to T.
[11] sett T. set R. for Kk. [12] þere þei T. [13] alle *om.* R.
[14] creature was T. [15] for *om.* TR. [16] and T. [17] and þe T.
[18] and all T. and alle R.
[19] wenten ouyr þe watir and so home T. wenten ouer þe watir and so hom in to ffraunce ayeen). R.
[20] ayen And T. [21] him redy T. made him redy R. hym Kk.
[22] and ladies and T. & ladieȝ & alle R. [23] here T.

hy[1] tokyn hir leue, and þe King and þe Quene redyn to Kenyngton; and þanne þe peple of London turned hom ayen. And yn turnyng ayen to London brygge, þere was so moche prees both on fote & on hors,[2] þat þere were ded on þe brygge a[3] xj personeȝ of men,[4] wymmen & chyldryn: on whose soulеȝ God haue mercy! amen! ¶ And þanne aftirward þe Quene was brouȝt to the Tour of London, and þere[5] sche was al nyȝt. And on þe morowe[6] sche was brouȝt þrouȝ þe Cete of London, and[7] so forth to[8] Westmynstre, & þere sche was crouned Quene of Engelonde. þan[9] was sche brouȝt ayen yn-to the Kingis Palis, and þere was[10] holde an opon & a ryall Fest after[11] hir coronacion, for al maner peple[12] þat þedir come: and þus[13] was do þe Sonday afftir þe Fest of seint Clement, in þe xx yere of King Richardeȝ regne.

And þan, þe xxv day of august next folouyng, be euyl excitacion & ffals counsel, & for grete wrathe [14]and malice þat he had of olde tyme vnto his vncle, þe gode Duke of Gloucester, and to þe Erle of Arundel, & to þe Erle of Warwic, ¶ The King, by is[15] euylle counsell, late yn the Euenyng on þe same day aboue saide, made hym redy with his streynthe, and rode yn-to Essex vnto þe toune of Chelmesforde, and so come to Plassche sodenly, þere Ser Thomas of Wodestoke, þe gode Duk of Gloucestre, lay. And þe gode Duk come anon to welcome þe King[16]; and þe King hym self[17] arestid þe gode[18] Duke[19]; and so he was ladde doun to þe water, and anon put yn to a schippe, and[20] had vnto Caleis, and brouȝt vnto[21] capteynys warde, to be kept yn holde be þe Kinges commaundement of Engelond: ¶ And þat tyme þe Erle Marchal of Engelond was capten of Caleis. ¶ And anon aftir,[22] be commaundement of þe King and of[23] his fals Counsel, commaunded þe capten to put hym to[24] deth. ¶ And anon certeyn yemen[25] þat had þe gode Duk yn kepyng, tooke her counsel how þei[26] wolde put hym to[27] deth; and þis was her poyntment: þat þai schulde come vpon hym whanne he were yn[28] bedde, and aslepe on a Fetherbed. And anon þei bonde hym honde and[29] foot,[30] & chargid hym to ly

[1] thei T. þey R.
[2] on hors and on foote T. boþe on hors and on fote R. [3] a *om.* TR.
[4] men and T. [5] and þere R. and Kk. [6] morne TR.
[7] aft ouer and T. [8] vnto T. [9] And þanne TR.
[10] was TR. was sche Kk. [11] at TR. [12] of peple T. [13] this T. þis R.
[14] *leaf* 116. [15] his T. [16] duke come to euyll come þe kyng anoon T.
[17] hym self *om.* T. [18] goode *om.* R. [19] duke him silf his owen bodi T.
[20] and anoon T. [21] into þe TR. [22] after sende a T. [23] bi TR.
[24] to þe T. [25] anoon þo men T. [26] þat þei TR.
[27] to þe T. vnto R. [28] a R. [29] and *om.* R. [30] foot and hond T.

stylle; and whanne þai hadde þis[1] do, þe[2] tokyn ij smale tewellys, and made on ham[3] rydyng knottis, and caste þe tewellys aboute þe Dukis nek: and þanne þei token þe fetherbed þat lay vnder hym, and cast hit aboue hym; and þan þei drowen her towell*is* eche waye3; and sum lay vpon þe fethir bed apon hym, vnto þe tyme þat he were ded, because þat he schulde make no*n* noyse. And þus þei strangled þis worthi Duk vn[to] the deth, on whose soule God, for[4] his pite, haue merci! Amen! ¶ And whenne þe King hadde arestid þis worthi Duke, and his owne vncle, and sent hym to Caleis, he come ayen to London yn alle hast, with a wondir grete peple. And as[5] he was come, he sent for the Erle of Arundel and for the gode Erle of Warwic; and anon as þay cam,[6] he arestid ham[7] his owne self. Sir Iohn Cobham [8]& *Ser* Iohn Cheyny, knyȝtis, he arestid also yn þe same wyse,[8] til he made his *parle*ment; & anon þei were put ynto holde. But þe Erle of Arundel went at large vnto þe *par*lement tyme, for he founde sufficient surete to abyde þe lawe, & al maner of answere at þe[9] poyntes þat þe King & his Counsel wolde put vp on hym.

[10]**Off þe grete parlement, and of þe deth of þe Erle of Arundell; and how þe Erle of Derby and o*þer* were exiled, and þe sayde Erle come ayen ynto þis londe; and how King Richarde went ynto Irelond, and how he deide.[10] Cap*itulum* ccxlij.[11]**

And yn the xxj yere of King Richardes regne, he ordend a[12] *par*lement at Westmynstre, þe which was clepid 'þe Grete *Par*lement'; and this *par*lement was made for to iugge þese iij worthi lordes and o*þer* moo, as ham lust[13] at þat[14] tyme. ¶ And for þat iugement þe king let make in alle hast a long and a large hous of tymbir, The which was called an hale, and cou*er*ed with tyles ouyr; and it was opu*n* al aboute on bothe sydes, and at þe endis, þat al mane*r* of men myȝt se þrouȝout; and *þer*e þe dome was holden [15]vpon þese forsaide lordes, and Iugement yeue at this forsaide *par*lement. ¶ And for to come to[16] þis *par*lement þe King sent his writtis vnto

[1] þus R. [2] do thus thei T. þey R. [3] hem ij T. ham ij R.
[4] of T. [5] as sone as T. [6] þei were come T.
[7] hem boþe T. ham boþe R.
[8–8] and he arestid also *sir* Iohn Cobham and *sir* Iohn Cheyney knyghtis T. manere R.
[9] to alle T. [10–10] Off þe grete parlement . . . deide *om.* TR.
[11] ccxliij R. [12] him a T. [13] list TR. [14] this T.
[15] *leaf* 116, *back.* [16] vnto TR.

euery lorde, Baron, knyȝt and squier, in euery schire þrouȝout Engelond; and þat euery lorde schulde grade and bryng his retynu of peple with hym,[1] yn as schort tyme and the[2] best aray þat þay myȝt gete, in maynteynyng and streyngthyng of þe King ayens ham þat were his enymys, and þat þis were do yn alle haste, and þei[3] to come to hym yn peyne of deth. ¶ And þe kyng hym self sent ynto[4] Chestirschire, vnto þe Chefteynes of þat cuntre, and þay gagred and brouȝt a grete and an huge multitude of peple, bothe of knyȝtis & of[5] Squyers, & prynspally of yemen of Chestreschire, þe which yemen and archers þe Kyng toke yn-to[6] his owne court, & yaf ham bothe[7] boge[8] of court and gode wageȝ, to be kepers of his owne body, both be nyȝt and be day, above alle oþer persons, and most ham[9] loued & best trust. ¶ The which sone aftirwarde turned þe King to gret losse, schame, hyndryng, and his vttirly vndoyng and destroccion, as ye schalle here sone aftirward.

¶ And þat tyme come Ser Henry, Erle of Derby, with a grete meyne of men of armeȝ and archers; and þe Erle of Ruthlande come with a strong pouer of peple, bothe of men of armeȝ and archers; and the Erle of Kent brouȝt with hym[10] a grete power of men of armeȝ and archers; The Erle Marchalle come yn þe same wyse;[11] The Lord Spenser yn the same maner; The Erle of Northombirlond and Ser Harry Peercy his sone, & Ser Thomas Perci, þe Erleȝ broþer; & alle[12] þeȝe worthi lordiȝ brouȝtyn a fayre mayne and a strong power, & ech man yn his best aray; And þe Duk of Lancastre and þe Duk of York comyn yn þe same maner with men of armeȝ and archers, folouyng þe King; and Ser William Scrop, Tresorer of Engelonde, come yn þe same maner. ¶ And þus, yn þis aray, comyn alle þe worthi men of þis londe vnto our King; and alle þis peple come to London yn on day, yn so moche þat[13] euery strete & lane yn London & yn þe sowthbarbeȝ weren fulle of ham logged, and .x or xij myle about London euery way. And þis[14] pepil brouȝt þe King to Westmynstre, and went hom ayen vnto hir loggynge, bothe hors & man. ¶ And þan on þe Monday, þe xvij day of Septembre, þe parlement began at Westminster, þe which was clepyd "þe grete parlement"; and on þe Fryday next ffolowyng, þe Erle of Arundel was brouȝt yn-to[15] parlement

[1] retenu with him of peple R. [2] in þe T. in the R.
[3] þei *om.* T. [4] to T. [5] of *om.* R. [6] vnto T.
[7] bothe *om.* TR. [8] bouche T. [9] ham *om.* TR.
[10] with hym *om.* TR. [11] manere TR. [12] alle *om.* T. I alle R.
[13] in R. [14] þese T. [15] in to þe R.

among alle þe lorde3,—and þat was on[1] saint Mathewe3 day þe Apostyll & eua*n*gelist,—&[2] *þere* was[3] foriuged vnto the deth in þis[4] hale, þat was made yn þe palis at Westmynstre. And þis was his Iugement: he[5] schulde go on fote, *with* his hande3 y[6]bounde be-hynde hym, from þe place þat he was foriuged ynne, and so forthe þrou3 þe cite of London vnto þe Toure hyll, and there his hed to be smetyn of; and so[7] it was do yn dede yn þe same place. ¶ And vj. of þe grete lorde3 þat sat on his Iugement redyn *with* hym vnto þe [8]place there he was do vnto[9] deth. And to se þat[10] þe execussion were y[11]do aftir his[12] dome, and by þe Kingis commaundement went with hem[13] on fote men of arme3 and archers, a grete multitude of Chestirschire men yn streyngthyng of the lorde3 þat brou3t þis erle vnto his deth, for þai draddyn þat þe erle schulde haue be rescued and take fro ham, whanne þay come yn-to London. ¶ Thus he passed forth þurgh þe cite vnto his deth; and *þere* he toke it full paciently; on whose soul God haue mercy! amen! ¶ And þanne come þe frere[14] Austyns, and toke vp the body and þe hed of þis gode Erle, and bare it whome yn-to[15] hir hous, and buryed hym yn hir quere. ¶ And yn[16] þe morow[17] aftir, was *Ser* Richarde, Erle of Warwic, brou3t yn-to þe *par*lement, *þere* as þe Erle of Arundel was foriuged; and þai yaf þe Erle of Warwic þe same Iugement þat þe forsaide erle hadde; but þe lorde3 had compassion on[18] hym because he was of grete[19] age, and relecyd hym to perpetuall pryson, and put hym yn-to[20] þe Ile of Man. ¶ And þanne the Mondaye next aftir, þe lorde Cobban of Kent, *Ser* Iohn Cheyne,[21] knyȝt, were brou3t yn-to þe *par*lement, yn-to[22] þe same hale; and *þere* þay were Iugid to be hangyd & draw; but, þrou3 þe prayer and grete Instaunce of alle þe lorde3, þat Iugement was foryeue ham, and relecyd to perpetual prison.

¶ And þis same tyme was Richard Whityngton, Meyre of London; and Iohn Wodekoc and Will*i*am Askam, schereue3 of London; and þai ordeined, at eue*r*y yate and yn eue*r*y warde, strong wacche of men of arme3 and of archers, and prinspally at eue*r*y yate of London, duryng þis[23] same *par*lement.

[1] on TR. of Kk. [2] & *om.* T. [3] he was T. [4] his T. [5] þat he T. [6] y *om.* TR. [7] so *om.* T. [8] *leaf* 117. [9] vnto þe T. [10] þat *om.* R. [11] y *om.* TR. [12] hir TR. [13] with hem wenten T. [14] ffreres of T. [15] home vnto TR. [16] on R. [17] on þe morne T. [18] of TR. [19] more TR. [20] to *om.* TR. [21] *ser* Iohn Cheyne . . . . turned hem *omitted in* R *to page* 358, *line* 30. [22] to *om.* T. [23] þe T.

¶ The King at þis *par*lement[1] made .v. Dukis, a Duchasse, & a Markeȝ, & iiij Erleȝ; & þe first of ham was þe Erle of Derby, & he was made Duke of Hereforde; and þe ij was þe Erle of Ruthland, and he was made Duke of Awmarle; þe iij was þe Erle of Kent, & he was made Duke of Surreye; and þe iiij was þe[2] Erle of Hontyngton, and he was made Duke of Excestre; and þe .v.[3] þe Erle of Notyngham, and he was made Duke of Norfolk; and[4] þe Erle of Som*er*sete was[5] made þe Markeys of Dorset; & the Lord Spens*er* was made Erle of Gloucestre, and þe Lorde Neuyle of Rabye was made Erle of Westm*er*land; & Ser Thom*as* Percy was made Erle of Worscetir, and Ser Will*iam* Scrope, þat was Treserer of Engelonde, he was made[6] Erle of Salysburye. ¶ And whanne þe King had þis[7] do, he helde at[8] þe *par*lement a[9] rial ffest vnto all his lordeȝ, and to al man*er* of pepil þat þidir wolde come.

¶ And yn þe[10] same yere deyed Ser Iohn of Gaunt, þe Kingeȝ vncle, & Duke of Lancastre, yn the bischoppeȝ In yn Holborn, and was brout fro þenneȝ to Saint Pouleȝ and þ*er*e þe King made & hilde his terement welle & worthily w*ith* all his lordeȝ,[11] and þ*er*e he was beryed besyde Dame Blaunch his wiff, þat was douȝtur & heyre to þe gode Henry, þat was Duke of Lancastre.

[*The Fight between Bolingbroke and Norfolk stopt.*]

¶ And yn the same yere þer fil a discencyon and a debate betuene þe Duk of Herford & þe Duke of Norfolke, yn so moche þat þay waged batayle & cast doun her gloues; & þanne þey[12] were take vp and[13] seled, and the day & þe place of batayle assygned at Couyntre.[14] and þedir come þe King and[15] alle his lordeȝ at þat[16] day, and was sette yn þe ffelde; and þan þeȝe ij worthi lordeȝ comyn yn to þe ffelde, clene armed and wel arayed with alle her wepon, and redy to do her batayle, and were yn the place redy to fiȝt at þe vttrest. ¶ But þe King bade hem cese, and tok þe quarel yn-to his honde, and forthwith, þ*er*e present, exiled[17] þe Duk of Herforde for þe terme of .x. yere, and þe Duke of Northfolk for evyrmore;

[1] kyng did T. [2] þe *om.* T. [3] þe v *om.* T.
[4] and dame Margrete þe oold ladi of Northfolk and T. [5] he was T.
[6] Englond made him erle of Wiltshire and sir Iohn Mountagew T.
[7] thus T. [8] þe T. [9] and a T. [10] þis T.
[11] lordes in the chirche of seynt Poules in london) T.
[12] *leaf* 117, *back.* [13] and a T.
[14] sealid and þe bataile synyd and þe day y sett and þe place assynyd and whanne þe day schulde be vttirli assynyd to be doon at Couentre T.
[15] with T. [16] þe T. [17] he exilid T.

and *Ser* Thom*as* Arundel, Archebischop of Caunterbury, was exiled þe same tyme for evyr, and deposed of his ssee, for malice of þe King. ¶ And anon þese iij worthi lorde3 were co*m*maunded and defendid þe King*es* Reme; & anon þay gat hem schippe3 at dyuers hauens, and went ou*er* þe see ynto dyuers londe3, eche his way; & þe Duk of Northfolke went to Veni3e, and þ*er*e he deied: on whose soule God haue mercye! amen!

¶ And þanne King Richarde made *Ser* Roger Walden, a clerke of his,[1] Archebischop of Caunt*er*bury.

¶ And yn þe xxij yere of King Richarde3 regne, be fals counsel and ymaginacion of ffals men and couetous[2] þat were aboute hym, were made & ordeyned[3] blank Charture3, and made ham to be selid of alle man*er* of riche men þrou3out þe Reme, in-so-moche þat þai compellid dyuers pepill to sette to[4] her seele3; and[5] þis was so[6] for gret coueti3e; wherfore alle þe[7] gode hertis of þe Reme clene[8] turned away fro hym[9] euyr eftir, and þat was vtturli[10] destroccion & ende of hym[11] þ*at* was so hygh and so excellent a king, þrough couetyse and fals counsel: Alas, for pite, þat such a king my3t not se!

¶ And þanne King Richarde sette his kingdom and his riall londe to fferme of Engelond,[12] vnto iiij p*er*sone3, þe which were þese, Sir Will*i*am Scrope,[13] Erle of Wilschire & Treserer of Engelond, *Ser*[14] Iohn Busch, Henry[15] Grene, and *Ser* Iohn Bagot, kny3tes; þe[16] whiche[17] turned hem to moche myschef and deth with-ynne a[18] lytil tyme aftir, as ye schal here[19] wretyn sone aftir.

[*Richard II's Expedition to Ireland.*]

¶ Thanne[20] King Richarde made gret ordynaunce, and went ouyr see[21] Into Irelond, and mony grete lorde3 with hym, with grete ostes, for to streyngthe hir king, as men of arme3, archers,[22] and moche grete stuff & ri3t gode ordynaunce, as longith to warre. ¶ And or he passid þe see, he ordeyned and made *Ser* Edmunde of Langeley his vncle, Duk[23] of York, his Lieutenaunt of Engelond

[1] a clerke of his *om.* T. [2] of couetous men T.
[3] ordeynyd and maad T. [4] to *om.* T. [5] to and T. [6] do T.
[7] þe *om.* T. [8] weren clene T.
[9] him þat is þe kyng T. fro hym þe kyng Kk.
[10] and was vttirly his T. and þat vtturli Kk.
[11] of hym *om.* T. [12] of Englond to ferme T. [13] of Scrope T.
[14] and *sir* T. [15] and *sir* Harry T. [16] þe *om.* T. [17] whiche þat T.
[18] a *om.* T. [19] here fynde T. [20] And þanne T.
[21] wente him ou*er* þe see T. [22] *and* archers T. [23] þe duke T.

yn his absence, be[1] þe gouernaunce &[2] counsel of þese iiij kuyȝtis þat had take Engelonde to ferme of the King. ¶ And þanne he passed þe see, and come ynto Irelonde, and *þere* he was welle and worthily resceyved. And þese rebellis of Ireland bith[3] callid 'wilde[4] Irisch men'; and[5] anon her chefteyneȝ & hir[6] gouernoures &[7] leeders comyn doun vnto þe King, & yolde ham vnto hym, bothe body & godeȝ, alle at his owne wille, & swore to be his lige men, and þer-to dede to hym[8] homage & feaute, and gode seruiȝe; & þus he conqueryd[9] þe moste party of Irelond yn a litil tyme.

[*The Return of Bolingbroke.*]

¶ While þat[10] King Richard was þus yn Irelonde, Ser Henry of Bolingbroke, Erle of Derby, þat þe king hadde made before Duk of Herforde—þe which Duk, þe King had exiled out of þis lande—was come ayen yn-to Engelond, for to chalange þe Duchery[11] of Lancastre as for[12] riȝt & trewe heritage. ¶ And he come doun out of Fraunce by londe to Calis, and þere mette hym Ser Thomas of Arundel, þat was Archebischop of Caunturbury, þat was exiled out of Engelond; and with hym come þe Erle of Arundell sone, & his heire, þe which was yn warde and yn[13] kepyng of Ser Iohn Selly, kniȝt, sum tyme with þe Erle of Huntyngton, and with þe Duk of Excestre, þe which was yn the Castell of Rygate yn Suthsex; and þere he stale away from Shelly, & come to Caleys; & þere he was kept welle and worthily til þis[14] oþer ij lordeȝ were come to Caleys. ¶ And þan þis worthi Duk, & þe Archebischop of Caunturbury, Arundel, schippid yn þe hauene of Caleis, and drow his cours Norþewarde, and arryued yn Yorkschyre, Rauensporne, fast by Brydlyngton; and þere he come, and entrid þe londe, & þese ij lordeȝ with hym, and hir meyne. And þanne moche pepil of the Reme, þat wist of his comyng and[15] where he was, anon drowyn to[16] hym, and welcomyd þese lordeȝ, and socurred hym yn alle maner þyngis, and passed forth yn[17] the londe, and gadryd myche peple.

¶ And whanne King Richard wist of þis, & herde[18] þat þese ij lordeȝ were come ayen yn-to Engelonde, and were londed, þanne

[1] be *om.* T. [2] and þe T. [3] ben T. [4] the wilde T.
[5] and *om.* T. [6] hir *om.* T. [7] and her T.
[8] there to him diden T. [9] *leaf* 118. [10] þe T.
[11] dukedom T. [12] for his T. [13] yn *om.* T. [14] these T.
[15] and *om.* T. [16] anoon þei drewe vnto T. [17] into T.
[18] Richard herde and wiste T.

þe King left alle his ordynaunce yn Irelonde, and come yn-to Engelondewarde yn alle þe hast þat he myȝte, & come yn-to[1] þe Castell of Flynt; and *þere* he abode for to take his counsell, and what myght[2] best be do; but to hym com non. ¶ And þanne *Ser* Thomas Percy, Erle of Worcestre, þat was þe Kingis Steward, when he wist[3] and knew þis, anon he com yn-to the halle among alle þe pepil, and *þere* he brake þe yerd of þe Rial Kingis housholde; and[4] euery man went his way, and forsoke his maistir & souereyne lorde, and left hym alone: [5]and þus was King Richard brouȝt adoun and destroyed, and stode alle alone,[5] without counsel, confort & socour[6] of eny man. Allas! for pite of þis ryal King!

¶ And anon come tydynge3 þat Harry of Bolyngbroke was vp with a[7] strong power of pepill, and þat alle þe Schyreve3 of Engelond reysed vp þe Schires yn streyngthing of hym ayens King[8] Richard; and þus sone he was come out of þe Northcuntre to Bristow, and *þere* he mette with *Ser* William Scrope, Erle of Wilschire and[9] Tresorer of Engelond, and with *Ser* Iohn Busch and *Ser* Henry Grene, and Iohn[10] Bagot, but he ascapyd from hym, and went ou*er* þe see In-to Irelonde; & þe3e o*þer* ij[11] kny3te3 were take, and her hedis smytyn of; & þus þei deied for her fals couetiȝe.

¶ And þanne was King Richard y[12]take, & brouȝt vnto þe Duk; and anon þe Duk put hym y[n] saff[13] warde and strong holde, vnto his comyng to London. ¶ And þanne was *þere*[14] a Rumore yn London, [15]and a strong noyse, þat King Richarde was come to Westmynstre; and the pepil of London ranne þider, and wolde haue don moche harm and scathe yn hir wodnesse, ne hadde þe Mayre and þe aldermen, and o*þer* worthi men, cecid ham with faire wordes, and turned hem [16]hom ayen vnto London. ¶ And *þere* was[17] *Ser* Iohn Slake, Dene of the Kinge3 chapel of Westmynstre, take,[18] and brouȝt to London, and put yn[19] Ludgate; and Bagot was take yn Irelonde, and brouȝt to London, & put yn *pri*sone yn Newgate, *þere* to be kept and[20] abide his answere.

[1] vnto T. [2] what myghte T. what Kk.
[3] Steward whenne he wiste T. Steward wist Kk.
[4] and tho hit disparbelid and T. [5–5] *om.* T.
[6] withoute comfort or socoure or good counceile T. [7] a wondir T.
[8] þe kiug T. [9] and *om.* T. [10] *sir* Iohn) T. [11] iij T.
[12] y *om.* T. [13] into faste T. [14] and there was thanne T.
[15] *leaf* 118, *back.* [16] MS. R *begins again.* [17] was take T.
[18] take *om.* T. [19] in *pri*son in T. [20] and to T.

¶ And sone aftir, þe Duk brouȝt King Richard pryuyly to London, and put hym yn the Tour, vndir sure kepyng as a prisoner. And þanne come þe lordeȝ of the Reme, with alle hir counsel, vnto þe Tour to King Richard and saide to hym of his mysgouernaunce and extorcion þat he hadde do, maade, and ordeyned, to oppresse alle þe comyn pepil, & also alle[1] þe Reame; wherfore al þe comyn peple of his Reme wolde haue hym deposed of his kingdom; and so he was deposyd at þat tyme in þe Tour of London by alle his[2] lordeȝ counsel, and by[3] the common assent of al þe Reme. ¶ And þan[4] he was put fro þe Tour vnto þe castel of Ledis yn Kent, and þere he was kept a while; and þan was he hadde fro þenneȝ vnto þe kastell of Pomfret in þe Northcuntre, to be kept yn pryson; and sone aftirward riȝt þere he made his ende.

¶ Whanne[5] King Richarde was deposed, and hadde resyngned his croune and his kingdom, and hym self kept fast yn holde, þan alle þe lordeȝ of þe Reme, with þe comyns assent, and by one[6] accorde, chosyn þis worthi lorde, Ser Henry of Bolyngbroke, Erle of Derby, Duk of Herford and Duke of Lancastre be riȝt lyne and heritage; and for his myȝtful manhode þat þe peple founde yn hym, before al oþer þei choson hym, & made hym King of Engelonde.[7]

Of Ser Henry of[8] Bolingbroke, Erle of Derby, þat regned aftir King Richarde, þe[9] which was þe fourth Henry after þe Conqueste. Capitulum ccxliij.[10]

And aftir Kinge Richarde þe secunde was deposed and put out of his kingdom, þe lordeȝ & þe comyns, alle with on assent, and alle oþer worthi of þe Reme, chosyn Ser Henry of Bolyngbroke, Erle of Derby, sone & heyre of Iohn a Gaunt, Duke[11] of Lancastre, for his worthi manhode þat ofte tyme hadde be founde yn hym, and yn dede previd; vpon Saint Edwardeȝ Day þe Confessoure, he was crouned King of Engelond at Westmynstre, by alle þe Remys assent, next aftir[12] deposyng of King Richard. ¶ Thanne he made Henry, his eldist sone & his heire, Prynce of Walis, Duk[13] of Cornewayle, and Erle of Chestre; and he made Ser Thomas of Arundel, Archebischop of Caunturbury ayen, as he was before;

[1] to alℓ T. [2] his TR. hir Kk. [3] by *om.* T.
[4] there T. þere R. [5] And þanne whenne T. And whanne R.
[6] one *om.* R. [7] Englonde amongis hem. T. [8] *om.* T.
[9] Richarde þe *om.* T. [10] cc° T. ccxliiij R. [11] Iohñ þe duke TR.
[12] aftir þe T. [13] and duke T.

and Ser Roger[1] Walden, that King Richard had made Archebischop of Caunturbury, he made[2] Bischop of London, for þat time it stode voyde; and he[3] made þe Erle3 sone of Arondel, [4]that come ouer the see with him from Caleys into Englond, he made him Erle of Arundall,[4] and put hym yn possession of alle his londe3; and þere he made homage and feaute unto his liege lorde þe King, as alle oþer lorde3 hadde do.

¶ And þanne anon deied King Richard in þe castell of Pountfret yn the Northeuntre, for þere he was enfammed vnto the deth be his keper, for he was kept into[5] iiij or v. daye3 fro mete and drynke; and so he made is ende yn þis worlde. Yet moche pepil yn Engelond and yn oþir[6] lande3 saide þat he was alyue meny yere3 aftir his deth; but wheþer he were a[7]lyue or ded, þei[8] hilde hir fals opynyons and beleue þat þay[9] hadde; and moche pepil aftirward comyn to myschif and to foule deth, as ye schulle here aftirwarde. ¶ And whanne King Henry wist and knew warly[10] þat he was ded, he lete sere hym yn þe best maner þat he my3te,[11] and[12] closed hym yn[13] lynnyn cloth, alle saue his visage, and þat was left opon þat men my3t se and know his person from alle oþer men; and so he was brought to London with torchis ly3t brennyng vnto Saynt Poule3, and þere he hadde his masse and his dirige, with moche reverence and solempnite of seruise. ¶ And fro Poule3 was[14] brou3t ynto þe Abbey of Westmynstre, and þere hadde[15] alle his hole seruise ayen; and fro Westmynstre he was ladd[16] ynto[17] Langeley, and þere he was beryed: on whose soule God haue mercy! Amen!

¶ And yn þe first yere of King Henrye3 regne he hilde his Cristismasse yn þe Castell of Wyndesore; and on þe twelfthe evyn come þe Duke of Awmarle vnto þe King, and tolde hym þat he & þe Duk of Surrey, þe[18] Duk of Excestre, þe[18] Erle of Salusbury, þe[18] Erle of Gloucestre, & oþir moo of her afinite, were accorded to make a mummyng vnto þe King on[19] xij[the] day at nyght; and þere þay cast to sle þe King yn hir revelyng; and þus þat[20] Duke warned þe King. And þanne þe King come þe same[21]

[1] Roger of T. [2] made him TR. [3] he *om.* R. [4–4] RT; *om.* Kk.
[5] in T. [6] *leaf* 119. [7] on T. [8] forth thei T.
[9] men T. [10] verily T. [11] þat he my3te *om.* TR.
[12] and closid hit in a fayre chest with dyuerse spiceries and bawmes T. and closed him in a fair chiste with diuers spice3 and bame3 and R.
[13] in a TR. [14] he was TR. [15] he hadde T. [16] ladde T. hadd Kk.
[17] to T. vnto R. [18] and þe T. [19] on þe T. [20] þis R.
[21] þe same TR. same Kk. þe *om.* R.

nyȝt to London[1] priuili, yn alle þe[2] hast þat he myȝte, to gete hym helpe, socoure, comfort[3] & counsel. And[4] anon þeȝe oþer, þat wolde haue do þe King to deth, ffleddyn yn alle þe haste þat þei mȝghte,[5] for þei knewen welle þat her counsel was bewrayed. ¶ And þanne fled þe Duke of Surrey, and þe Erle of Salusberye with[6] alle hir meyne, vnto þe toun of Siscetre; and þere þe pepil of þe toun wolde haue arestid ham; and þey wolde not stonde to her arest, but stodyn at her[7] defence, & fauȝt manly; but at þe[8] laste þey were ouercome and take;[9] and þere þei smote of þe Dukes hed of Surrey, and þe Erleȝ hed of Salusbury, & mony oþer moo; & þere[10] þay putte þe quarters in sackys, and her hedeȝ on[11] poleȝ born on hy, and so[12] þei were brouȝt þrouȝ þe cite of London vnto London brygge; and þere her hedeȝ were sette vp an[13] hy, & her quarters were sent to oþer gode touneȝ and citeȝ, and set vp þere.

¶ At Oxynforde were[14] take Ser Thomas[15] Blount, knyȝt, Benet[16] Sely, knyȝt, and Thomas Wyntirsell, squyer; and þese were behedid & quarterd; & the knyȝtes hedis were sette on poleȝ & brouȝt to London, & sette on London brygge, and þe quarters sent forth to oþer placeȝ & touneȝ. ¶ And yn þe same yere at Pritwelle yn[17] Essex, was take Ser Iohn Holond, þe Duk of Excestre,[18] with þe[19] comyneȝ of þe cuntreye; and þay brouȝt hym fro þe mille vnto Plasche; and to þe same place þere King Richard hadde arestid[20] Ser Thomas of Wodstoke, þe Duk of Glowcestre. And riȝt þere, yn þe same place, þei[21] smytyn of þe Duk of Excestreȝ hed, & brouȝt it to London vpon a poole; and it was sette on London Brygge. ¶ And yn þe same yere, at Bristow, was take þe Lorde Spenser, þat King Richard hadde made Erle of Glowcestre; & þe comyneȝ of the toune of Bristow[22] toke hym, and brouȝt hym in to þe Market place of the Toun; & ther thay smyte of his hed and sent hit to London, and hit was sette on London brygge. ¶ And yn þe same yere was Ser Bernarde Brokeys, kniȝt, take and

[1] to London TR. *om.* Kk. [2] þe *om.* R. [3] and comfort T.
[4] And *om.* T.
[5] haste þat þei myghte T. haste þat þey myȝte R. *om.* Kk.
[6] *and with* R. [7] her *om.* TR. [8] þe *om.* T. [9] took hem T.
[10] þere *om.* T. [11] vpon T. [12] so *om.* T. [13] on TR.
[14] were TR. we Kk. [15] *ser* Thomas *om.* T. Iohn) R.
[16] and Benet T. [17] in a mille in TR.
[18] Essexe there *sir* Iohn) holande þe duke of Excestre was take T. Essex þere sir Iohn) holande þe Duke of Excestre was take R.
[19] þe *om.* R. [20] hadde arestid T. hadde arested R. arestid Kk.
[21] thei T. þey R. þe Kk. [22] *leaf* 119, *back.*

arestid, & put yn-to þe Tour of London; and *Ser* Iohn Selley, kniȝt, & *Ser* Iohn Mawdeleyne & *Ser* Willi*am* Fereby, *per*sons of King Richardeȝ, were[1] arestid and put yn-to þe Tour of London. and þedir come þe Kingeȝ Iusticeȝ, and saat vpon hem yn the Toure; and *þere* were[2] dampned alle iiij vnto þe deth.[3] And the dome was yeue vnto *Ser* Bernarde Brokeys, þat he shulde go on fote fro the Tour þrouȝ þe toun of[4] London vnto Tyburne, and *þere*[5] to be hangyd, & aftir his hed to ben[6] smyten of & sett on London Brigge, & *Ser* Iohn Selley, knyȝt, and *Ser* Iohn Maudeleyn & Sir Willi*am* Feriby, *per*sons, weir draw þrouȝout London to Tyburne, & *þere* hanged.[7]

¶ And yn þe[8] same yere King Henry sent Quene Isabell, þat was King Richardeȝ wiff,[9] hom ayen yn-to Fraunce,[10] and yaff hir Golde & siluer and mony o*þer* Iewelleȝ; and so[11] sche was[12] discharged of alle hir dower, & sent out of Engelond.

¶ And yn þe secu*n*de yere of[13] King Henri þe iiijth, was *Ser* Rogg*er* of Claryngdon, kniȝt, & ij of his men, & þe Priour of Launde, & viij frere Menoures, and su*m* Maistres of diuinite, & o*þer*, for treson þ*at* þay wrouȝt ayens the King, were drawe & hangyd at[14] Tyborne, alle xij presoners & *per*soneȝ.[15]

¶ Tha*n*[16] beganne þe[17] discencion[18] & debate yn þe cuntre of Walis betwene þe Lorde Grey Rithyn[18] & Oweyn of Glyndore, Squier of Walis. And þis Oweyn rerid a nownbyr of Walschemen, and kept þat[19] cuntrey about ryȝt strong, & dede myche harme, and destroyed þe Kingis touneȝ and lorschippeȝ þrouȝout Walis, & robbyd & slowgh þe Kingis pepil, both Englisch and Walsch; and þus he endured xij[20] yere large. And he toke þe Lorde Gray of[21] Rithyn presoner, and kept hym fast yn holde tylle he was raunsonde of prysoners of þe March, and kept hym long tyme yn holde; and at þe[22] last he made hym wedde on of his douȝtris,[23] and kep[t]e hym stylle *þere*[24] with his wiff, and sone after he deyed.

[1] and þei weren T. [2] þey weren T. [3] vnto þe deth alle four R.
[4] þe tour of *om.* TR. [5] þere *om.* T.
[6] aft*ir* his heed T. aftir his hed R. his *om.* Kk.
[7] hangid and her heedis smyten of and sett on londo\n/ brigge T. hanged and hir hedis smyte*n* of and set on london Brigge R. & sett on London Brigge *om.* Kk. [8] þis T. this R. [9] þat was . . . wiff *om.* T.
[10] ffraunce þe which was kyng Richardis weddid wiff T. [11] so *om.* T.
[12] was so T. [13] of þe reigne of T. [14] at þe T.
[15] & *per*soneȝ *om.* TR. [16] There T. Ther R. [17] a T. þe *om.* R.
[18–18] and a debate bitwene þe lord Grey Reffen in þe cuntree of Walis T.
[19] att þat TR. [20] a xij T. [21] of *om.* T. [22] þe *om.* T.
[23] his douȝtris TR. douȝtris *om.* Kk. [24] there stylle T.

¶ And þanne þe[1] King,[2] knowyng þis myschef, destruccion and treson, þat þis Oweyn hade y[3]wrou3t, þen anon he ordeyned a strong power of men of arme3 and of archers, & moche o*þer* stuffe þat longid to warre, for to abate & destroye þe malice of þe[4] fals Walschemen. And þanne þe King come yn-to Walys with his power, for to destroy þis Owen and o*þer* rebellis, fals Walschmen. And[5] anon þei fledde*n* yn-to þe mountayne3; and *þere* my3te þe Kinge do hem no*n* harme yn no maner of[6] wyse; but ofte þei toke þe Kingis cariage, and eu*ery* day destroyed his peple. But Oweyn and his men, þe moste p*arte*, ascapid harmele3; ffor þe King ne his meyne my3t not come[7] to hem yn no mane*r* of[8] wise for þe mountayne3; and so the King come to[9] Engelond ayen, for lesyng of moo of his peple, and þus he[10] spedde not *þere*.

¶ In þis same yere was gret scarsite of whete yn Engelond, for a quarter of whete was at xvj s.; [11]and merchaunthes were sent out of Engelond ouyr see[11] ynto Spruce for whete. anon[12] þay hadde lade & freight shippe3 ynow, & came hoom yn saafte, blessid[13] be God of[14] alle his yeftis!

¶ And yn the iij^de^ [15]yere of King Harrye3 regne, ther was a sterre seyne in þe firmament, þat schewed hym-self þrou3 alle[16] þe worlde, for dyuers tokenns þat schulde befalle sone after; þe which sterre was named & called be clergie[17] 'Stella comata.' And on Seint Marye Magdaleyne day, next aftir,[18] yn þe same yere, was þe Batayle of Schrouysbury; and þedir come Ser Henry Percy, þe Erle3 sone of Northombirlonde, with a grete multitude of men of armes & archers, and yaf[19] batayle to[20] King Harry þe iiij^the^, þrou3 fals[21] counsel and wicked reede of Ser Thomas Percy, is vncle, Erle of Worcestre; and *þere* was Ser Harry Percy slayn, and þe most p*arte* of his mayne, yn the feelde,[22] and Ser Thomas Percy take, and kept yn holde ij daye3 tylle þe King hadde sette rest among his peple on both sydes. And þanne Ser Thomas Percy was Iugid to be ded, þat is to wete, drawe, hangyd, & his hed

[1] þe *om.* T. [2] king Harry T. [3] y *om.* TR. [4] þese T. þis R.
[5] and *om.* T. [6] of *om.* TR.
[7] nought come T. not come R. not *om.* Kk.
[8] of *om.* TR. [9] into TR. [10] he *om.* R.
[11–11] and þanne was marchaundise of Englond sente ou*er* þe see T.
[12] and anoon T. and anon) R. [13] and comen in haste y blessid T.
[14] in R. [15] *leaf* 120. [16] out al R.
[17] & called be clergie *om.* T. [18] folowyng T. folowynge R.
[19] yaf a T. [20] to þe T. [21] the fals T.
[22] *Percy* slayn) in þe felde & þe moste part of his meyne R.

smyte of for his fals treson at Schrowesbery, & his hed brou3t to London & set on London-is[1] Brygge. And al[2] o*per* peple þat[3] were slayne *þere*,[4] on þe Kinge3 syde[5] and yn boþe p*ar*teys,[6] þe King let bury: and *þere* was slayn on þe Kingy3 syde yn the[7] batayle, þe Erle of Staffarde, and *Ser* Water Blount yn þe Kingys kote armyour, vndir þe Kinge3 baner, and mony mo worthi men; on[8] whose soule God haue mercy! amen!

¶ And yn þe iiij[the] yere of King Harrye3 regne, come þe Emp[*er*]oure of Constantynoble, with mony grete lorde3 and kny3tes and moch o*per* peple of his cuntre, in to Engelonde, to King Harry, with hym to speke[9] and to disporte hym, and see[10] þe gode gouernaunce & þe condicione3 of our peple, and know[11] þe *com*modite3 of Engelond. And our King, with alle his worthi lorde3, godely and worschepfully hym resceyved, and welcomed hym[12] and alle his mayne þat come with hym, and dede hym alle þe reuerence & worschip þat þay cowthe and my3te. And anon þe King commawnded al mane*r* officers þat he schulde be se*r*ued as worthily & as[13] ryaly as it longith to[14] such a worthi lorde & Empe*r*our, on his owne cost, as long as þe Empe*r*our was[15] yn Engelond, and alle his men þat comyn with hy*m*.

¶ And yn þis same yere came dame Iohane,[16] þe Duchasse of Bryttayne, yn-to Engelonde, and landed at Falemouth yn Cornewayle; & fro þenne3 she was brou3t to þe cite of Wynchestre, and *þere* sche[17] was weddyd vnto King Harry þe iiij[the] yn the Abbey of Saynt Swythens of Wynchestre, with alle þe solempnite þat my3t be do and made. ¶ And sone after, sche was brou3t fro þenne3 to London; and þe meyre, with[18] þe aldermen and þe comyns of þe cite of London, rydyn ayens hir, and hir welcomed,[19] and brou3t hir throu3 þe cite of London vnto Westmynstre; and *þere* sche was crouned & made[20] Quene of Engelond; and *þere* þe king made a ryalle and a[21] solempne fest for hir, and for al maner men þat þedir wolde come.

¶ And yn þis same yere, Dame Blaunche, þe eldist dou3tir of

[1] is *om.* TR. [2] alle þe T. [3] that there T. þat *þer* R.
[4] *þere om.* TR. [5] side in þat Batalle R.
[6] slayne on boþe parties T. and yn boþe p*ar*teye *om.* R.
[7] kyngis side in þat T. þat R. syde *om.* Kk. [8] of T.
[9] to speke with him T. [10] to see T. to se R. [11] to knowe T.
[12] hym *om.* R. [13] as *om.* R. [14] vnto T.
[15] Emperoure was T. Emperour was R. was Kk. [16] Iane TR.
[17] sche *om.* T. [18] and T. & R. [19] welcomyd hir T.
[20] & made *om.* R. [21] and a TR. and *om.* Kk.

King Harry þe iiij^{the}, was y[1]sent ouyr see[2] with þe Erle of Somersete, hir vncle, and with Maister Richarde Clyfforde, þanne [3]Bischop of Worcestre, and with mony oþer lorde3 and worthi knyȝtis, ladie3,[4] and Squyers,[5] as longed to such a worthi lady, and come vnto Coleyne. And þedir come þe Duke3 sone of Barrey, with a faire mayne, and resceyved þis worthi lady, and þere the Bischop[6] of Worcestre wedded & sacred ham to-gedir, as holy churche it[7] wolde; & þere was made a ryalle feest and a[8] grete Iustiȝe, yn[9] reverence and worschip of ham, and to alle peple þat þedir come. ¶ And whanne þis maryage and fest was do, þe Erle and þe Bischop, with alle hir meyne, token her leve of lorde3 and ladie3 and come home ayen yn-to Engelond in saafte, y[10]þankyd be God!

¶ And yn þe .v. yere of King Harrye3 regne, þe Lorde Thomas, King Harrye3 sone þe iiij^{the}, and þe Erle of Kent went ouyr see,[11] and mony oþer lorde3 and kniȝtes, and men of armys & archers, and went to[12] þe se to chastise þe rebellis þat afore hadde do moch harme to our Englisch[13] Marchaunte3 & to mony tounes and portis yn Engelond vpon þe se costis. ¶ And þe Lorde Thomas, þe Kingis son, cam yn-to Flaundres, toffore a toun þat is callid þe Scluse, among alle þe schippe3 of dyuers nacyons þat were þere; and after, þai rydyn with her schippe3 among ham, and went alonde, & sported ham þere ij. daie3, and cam ayen to hir schippe3, & token þe brode se, & þere þay mettyn with iij carrake3 of Iene, þat were lade with dyuers Marchaundiȝe, and welle y[14]manned; and þere þay fouȝtyn to-gadryȝe longe; but þe Englischmen hadde þe victorye, and brouȝt þe Carrake3 yn-to þe camere before Wynchylse; and þere þay cantid þes gode3, and on of þeȝe Carreke3 was sodenly þere brent, & þe lorde3 and hir peple turned hom ayen, and went no firthir at þat tyme.

¶ And yn that same yere, Serle, yoman of King Richarde3 Robys, come yn-to Engelond out of Scotland, and saide to diuers peple þat 'King Richard was alyve yn Scotlond'; and so, moch of

[1] y *om.* TR. [2] þe see T. [3] *leaf* 120, *back*. [4] and ladies TR.
[5] and worthi squyers T. worthi squiers R.
[6] the bisshop T. þe Bisshop R. bischop Kk.
[7] it *om.* TR. [8] a *om.* TR.
[9] in þe T. [10] y *om.* TR.
[11] iiij^{e} wente ouer þe see and þe Erle of kent T. wente ovir see and þe erl of kent R.
[12] archers a greet meyne wenten to T. archers a greet meyne went R.
[13] Englisshe men T. [14] y *om.* R.

þe peple beleued yn his wordeȝ; wherfore mych of þe peple of þe Reeme were yn gret erroure and gruching ayens þe King, þrouȝ fals informacion[1] þat þis Serle hadde made, for moche peple beleuyd & trustid to[2] his seyng; but at þe[3] last he was take yn the North cuntre, and by lawe juged to be draw þrouȝ eu*er*y cite & gode burgh toun yn Engelond; and so he was s*er*ued. And at þe[3] last he was brouȝt to London, vnto Gilde[4]-halle before þe justiȝe; and þ*er*e he was juged to[5] be brouȝt to þe Tour of London, and þ*er*e to be laide vp[6]-on an hirdille, & þan to[7] be drawe þrouȝ þe cete of London to Tyborne, &[8] hangyd, & þan quarterde, and his hed smyte of & set on London Brygge, & his quarters to be sent to iiij gode townеȝ of Engelond, & þ*er*e set vp: & þus endid he his[9] fals treson & desceit.

¶ And yn þe vj yere of King Henryeȝ regne, þe Erle of Marre, of Scotland, be saaf condit come ynto Engelond for to chalange S*er* Edmu*n*de, þe Erle of Kent, of certeyn cours of warre on hors-bak; & so þis chalange was accept and graunted, and þe place take yn Smythfelde at London. And þis Erle of Marre, þe[10] Scot, com proudly [11]yn-to the felde, as his chalange asked. And anon com yn þe Erle of Kent, and rode vnto þe Scot, and manfully rydyn togadir with scharp[12] speris dyuers cours; but þe Erle of Kent hadde þe Felde, and gate hym moch worschip & þanke of al m*a*ner of[13] men for his manful dedis.

¶ And þis yere[14] S*er* Richard Scrope, Archebyschop[15] of York, and þe lorde Mounbray, Erle Marchal of Engelonde, gadrid vnto hym a strong meyne yn þe North cuntre ayens King Henry. and þan King Henry, heryng[16] þ*er*of, yn alle þe hast þat he myȝte, come with his power northwarde, and mette with ham at York; and þ*er*e were þei[17] ij lordeȝ take, and brouȝt to[18] þe King, and ano*n* þe Iugeȝ weryn sette, and þese ij lordeȝ brouȝt forth; and þere þai were dampned vn-to þe[19] deth, þat boþe her hedis schulde be[20] smyte of; and þ*er*e þay made her ende: on whose soulеȝ God, for his pete, haue m*er*cy! Amen!

[1] thorugh informacion) of lesyngis and falslies T. þoruȝ informacion) of his lieȝ and fals lesingis R.
[2] þeple trustid him and bileeuyed in TR. [3] þe *om.* T. [4] þe Gilde T.
[5] forto T. [6] vp *om.* TR. [7] to *om.* R. [8] and þere TR.
[9] for his TR. [10] a T. [11] *leaf* 121. [12] scharp *om.* T. [13] of *om.* R.
[14] And in þe same yeer of kyng Harries reigne þe iiij^t T. And in þe vi. yeer of kinge henries regne þe iiij^the R.
[15] þe Erchebisshop T. [16] þanne þe kyng heryng T.
[17] þese T. þeȝe R. [18] vnto T. [19] þe *om.* R. [20] heedis were T.

¶ And whanne[1] þis was do, þe King come to London ayen, a[nd][2] restyd hym. And anon, God, of his grete godenesse, wrou3t and schewyd meny grete myracles for his worthi Clerke, þe[3] Archebischop of Yorke, þat þus was dovn to[4] deth.[5]

¶ And yn þe vij yere of King Henrye3 regne come[6] Dame Luce, þe Duke3 sistir[7] of Millane, yn-to[8] Engelond, and so vnto London, and *þere* was weddid to *Ser* Edmu*n*de Helond, Erle of Kent, yn þe priory of Saint Mary Ouerey yn Southwerke, with moche solempnite and grete worschip: and *þere* was þe King hym selfe, and yaf hir at þe churche dore. ¶ And whanne[9] þay were weddyd, and masse do,[10] þe King, his owne *per*sone, brou3t and ladde þis worthi lady yn-to þe Bischopis place of Wynchestre; and *þere* was a wondir grete fest helde, to alle man*er* of pepil þat come þedir.[11]

¶ In þis[12] same yere, *Ser* Robert Knollis, kniy3t, þe worthi warriou*r*, deied at his Maner yn Northfolke: and fro þenne3 he was brou3t to London on[13] an hors beere, with myche torche lyghte; and so was he brou3t to[14] þe Whit-Freris yn Flet-strete; and þere was do and [15]made a ryal &[16] solempne terement for hym, for þem[15] þat þidir wolde come, bo*þe* pore & rich; and *þere* he lyth beryed[17]; on whose soule God[18] haue mercy! Amen!

¶ And[19] yn the[20] same yere *Ser* Thom*as* Ruston,[21] kni3t, Constáb[l]e of þe Tour of London, was dreynt yn[22] Themys[23] at London Brygge, as he com fro Westmynstre towarde þe Tour yn a barge; and al þrou3 lewdenesse. And yn þe same yere Dame Phelyp, þe yongyr dou3tir of King Henry þe iiij[the], was ladde ou*er* þe see with *Ser* Richarde, þe Duke3 brothir of Yorke, and *Ser* Edmu*n*de Courteneye, bishop of Norwiche, and mony o*þer* lordi3, kni3tis and squyers, ladie3 and gentil-wymmen, as[24] *per*teyneth to[25] such a worthi Kingis dou3tir, and come yn-to Denmarke, to a toun[26] þat is callyd Elsyngborgh. And þedir come þe King of Denmarke, wi*þe* his lordis, and resceyvid þis worthi lady for his wiff, and welcomyd

[1] as T. [2] and there T. and þere R. [3] þe *om.* TR.
[4] vnto R. [5] vnto þe deeth T. [6] come *om.* T. [7] doughtir T.
[8] come into T. [9] And as sone as T. [10] and þe masse was doon T.
[11] þedir *om.* T. [12] þe TR. [13] vpon TR. [14] vnto T.
[15–15] maad for him a solempne feste and a roiall terment for tho T. þo R.
[16] and a R.
[17] buried bi dame Constaunce his wiff in mydde of þe bodi of the churche T. beried be Dame Constance his wiff in þe myddel of þe body of þe chirche R.
[18] god of his pitee T. god for his pite R. [19] And þus T.
[20] this R. [21] Rempston R. [22] in) þe R. [23] yn Themys *om.* T.
[24] þat TR. [25] vnto T. [26] Toure T.

þese worthi lordeȝ, and dede ham moche reuerence & gret worschip. ¶ And þanne þei were brouȝt to a toun þat is[1] callid London yn Denmark, and *þere* was this lady weddid and sacryd to þe King of Denmark with moche solempnite; and *þere* was sche crouned Quene of Denmark, Norwey and Swethyn; & *þere* was made a rialle fest. ¶ And whanne þis Fest and mariag was do & endid, þeȝe lordeȝ [2]and ladieȝ tokyn her leve of the[3] King and Quene, and comyn home ayen yn-to Engelonde yn hast, þanked be Ihesu!

¶ And yn the viij ȝere of King Harryeȝ regne, *þer* was a man þat was clepid 'þe walsch clerke,' and[4] apelyd a knyȝt þat me callyd *Ser* Perciuale Sowdon, of treson; and *þere* þey were ioyned to fiȝt vnto þe deth, within[5] þe listeȝ, & þe day,[6] tyme and place assigned and lymytid to be do and ende, yn Smythfelde. At þe which day þe ij personeȝ comyn yn to þe felde, and fouȝtyn soore and myȝtili togadris; but at þe[7] last þe knyȝt ou*er*came þe clerke, and made hym yelde[8] creaunde of his fals plechement þat he sayde on hym; and þan was he dispoyled of his armeo*ur* and drawe out of þe ffelde to Tyburne; & *þere* was he hangyd, and þe kniȝt take to grace, and was a gode man.

¶ And yn þis same yere, *Ser* Henry,[9] erle[10] of Northombirlande, & þe Lorde Bardolf, comyn out of Scotlande, yn preiudice & destruccion of King Harry; wherfore þay of the Northcuntre arysyn vp,[11] and[12] smytyn of her hedis, and[13] sent þe hed of the Erle, and þe[14] quarter of þe lorde Bardolfe, to London; and þere þey were set vp on þe brygge, for fals treson þat þay had purposed ayens þe Kinge.

¶ And yn þe ix yere of King Harreȝ regne, was *Ser* Edmu[n]de[15] Holonde,[16] Erle of Kent, made[17] Amerel of Engelonde, for to kepe þe see. And he went to þe see with mony ryalle[18] schippis, þat were full well arayed and[19] enarmyd with mony a gode man of armeȝ & of[20] archers, and of gode defence of[21] warre yn þe Kinges name of Engelonde; and so he londit at þe[22] laste yn þe costes of

[1] men T. me R. [2] *leaf* 121, *back*. [3] the *om*. T. [4] and he TR.
[5] in T. *with* ynne R. with Kk. [6] day and T. [7] þe *om*. T.
[8] yelde him TR. [9] *ser* henry *om*. T. [10] þe Erle T.
[11] vpon hem T. vp on ham R.
[12] and faught with hem and sconcfitid hem and took hem and T. and faust with ham and scomfited ham & took ham & R.
[13] and quartrid her bodies and T. and quartred hir bodies and R.
[14] a TR. [15] Edmũ Kk. [16] of holonde T. [17] was maad T.
[18] a roiall T. [19] and apparellid and T. and appareiled & R.
[20] of *om*. TR. [21] in T. [22] þe *om*. T.

Brittaigne, in þe Ile of Bryak, with alle his peple; and he besegid þe castel and assauted it. and þai with-ynne[1] with-stode hym with grete defence & streinþe, and anon let sette his ordynaunce; & yn þe leyngthe of a gune com a quarel, & smot þe gode Erle yn þe hed, & þere he cauȝt his deth-wownde, but yet þei left not tylle þay hadde gotyn þe Castell and alle þat was þere-ynne; and *þere* þis gode lorde deid: on whose soule God haue *mercy*.[2] ¶ And þanne his[3] meyne comyn hom ayen in-to Engelond with þe Erleȝ body, and was buried among his auncetryeȝ riȝt worthily. ¶ And yn þe same yere was a gret frost[4] yn Engelond, þat dured xv wokeȝ.

¶ And yn þe[5] x yere of King Harryes regne þe iiij[the], come þe Senescall of Henaud, with o*þer* meyne, yn-to Englond, for[6] to seke[7] auntreȝ, and to gete hym[8] worschip yn dedis of armeȝ, boþe on horsbak and on foote, of al maner poyntis of[9] dedis of armeȝ and[10] warre. And þe Senescal Chalanged þe Erle of Som*er*set; and þe Erle delyuerde hym manfully yn al his chalangeȝ, and put his adu*er*sari to þe worsse yn alle poyntis, & wanne hym *þere* grete worschyp and degre[11] of the ffeelde. ¶ And þe next day come yn to þe ffeelde a no*þer* man of armeȝ of the Seneschallys party; & ayens hym com S*er* Richard of Arundell, knyȝt; and þe[12] Henauder hed[13] þe bettyr of hym [14]on fote in on poynt, for he broȝt hym on his kne. ¶ And þe thrid day come yn[15] a no*þer* man of armeȝ yn to the felde; and ayens hym S*er* Iohn Cornewayle, knyȝt; and manly & knyȝtly quyt hym yn alle maner of poynteȝ ayens his adu*er*sary, and had þe bettyr yn the felde. ¶ And[16] þe iiij day come yn[17] a no*þer* man of armys of Henaude, yn[18] þe felde; and ayens hym com S*er* Iohn Cheynees sone,[19] and manly quyt hym ayens his adu*er*sary, for he caste bothe[20] hors & man into þe feelde; and þe King, for his manhode at þat tyme, dubbyd hym knyȝt. ¶ And þe v day þer com a no*þer* man of armeȝ of[21] Henaudeȝ party yn-to þe ffel[d]e; and to hym come Iohn[22] Stewarde, squyer, and manfully quyt hym þere yn al man*er* of poyntis, and hadde þe bettir. ¶ And þe vj day come a nother Henauder; & to hym come Will*iam* Porter, squier; and manfully he quitte [23]hym yn þe ffelde, and hadde þe bettir,[23] and þe

[1] with-ynne *om.* T. [2] mercy Amen TR. [3] his TR. þis Kk.
[4] forst Kk. [5] þe same T. [6] for *om.* TR. [7] seke T. seihe Kk.
[8] hym *om.* T. [9] and T. & R. [10] and of TR. [11] and þe gree T.
[12] þe he R. [13] hed *om.* R. [14] *leaf* 122. [15] yn *om.* T.
[16] And on TR. [17] yn *om.* T. [18] into TR. [19] his sone T.
[20] bothe *om.* TR. [21] of þe TR. [22] sir Iohn) T. to him yn sir Iohn R.
[23–23] quytte him and hadde þe bettir in þe ffelde and T. him and hadde þe bettir in þe felde R.

King dubbid hym kniȝt þe same time. ¶ And þe vij day come a noþer Henauder yn-to[1] the felde; & to hym come Iohn Standisch, Squyer, and manly quit[2] hym on his aduersary, and hadde þe bettir yn þe ffelde; and *þere* þe King dubbyd hym kniȝt þe same day. ¶ And yn[3] þe same day come a noþer Henauder; and to[4] hym come a squier of Gasquoyne; and[5] proutly & manly he quitte hym on his aduersarye, and *þere* hadde þe bettir, and anon þe King dubbyd hym kniȝt.

¶ And[6] þe viij day com yn-to þe ffelde ij men of armes of Henaude; and to ham come ij soudiers of Calis þat were brepryn, y[7]-Clepyd þe Boroughes; and welle and manly quit hem on hir aduersaries, and hadde þe bettir yn þo[8] felde; and þus endid þis Chalanged with moche worschep. And þe King, at þe reuencens of the straungers, made a grete ffeest, and yaff rych yeftis; and þay tokyn hir leue, and went whom yn-to hir cuntre.

¶ And yn þe xj ȝere of King Hen[r]yeȝ regne þe iiij[the], *þere* was a gret Batayle yn[9] Smythfelde betwene ij squiers; þat on[10] men callid Glowcestre, and[11] þat was[12] appelaunt, and[13] Arture, þat was[14] defendaunt; and welle and manfully fouȝtyn togadrys longe tyme. And the King, for hir manfulnesse and of his grace, toke hir quarell yn-to his honde, and mad ham go[15] out of þe felde at[16] ones; and[17] so þay were dyvyded of hir bataile; and þe King yaf ham grace.

And yn[18] þe xij ȝere of King Henryeȝ regne þe iiij[the], Rys ap[19] die, a Squier of Walis þat was a rebell & a ryser,[20] and[21] supporter of Owen of Glyndore þat dede moche destruccion to þe pepil yn[22] Walis, was[23] take, & brouȝt to London. And *þere* he come afore þe Iustiȝe, and was dampned for his treson; & þan he was leyde on[24] an hirdyl, and so draw forth to Tyburne þrowghe the cite, and *þere* was hangyd, & lete doune ayen, and his hed smytyn of; and his bodi quarterde and sent to foure townes, and his hedde sette on London Brygge.

¶ And the[25] xiij ȝere of King Henryeȝ regne,[26] deyed

[1] to *om.* T. [2] he quytte TR. [3] on TR. [4] vnto T.
[5] þat T. [6] And in T. [7] y *om.* TR. [8] þe TR.
[9] doon in T. do in R. [10] on *om.* R. [11] and *om.* R.
[12] was þe TR. [13] and þat oþer T. [14] was þe TR. [15] to go T.
[16] boþe at T. [17] and *om.* R. [18] þanne T. yn *om.* R.
[19] rose vp oon T. of R. [20] & a ryser *om.* T. [21] and also T.
[22] of T. [23] Walis and at laste he was T. [24] vpon TR.
[25] in þe T. [26] of King harries T. of king henrieȝ Regne þe iiij R. of his regne Kk.

Ser Iohn Beauford, Erle[1] of Somerset, þat was [2]Capteyne of Caleys, and was beryed at þe Abbey of Tour-hille: on whose soule God haue mercy! Amen! And yn þe same yere þe Lorde Thomas, King Harrye3 sone, wedded þe Countesse of Somerset. And þe[3] same yere come þe ambasceturs of Fraunce yn-to Engelonde, from þe Duk of Burgoyne, vnto the prince of Engelonde, King Harrye3 sone and his[4] heire, for help & socour of men of arme3 and archers ayens the Duk of Orlyauns. And he sent forth[5] þe Erle of Arundell, Ser Gylbarde Vmfrauylle,[6] Erle of Kyme, and þe Lorde of Cobham, Ser Iohn Oldecastell, and mony oþer gode kny3tis, and worthi squyers and men of arme3, and gode archers, ouyr see[7] yn-to Fraunce, and comyn to[8] Parys, to þe Duk of Burgoyne, *þere*[9] he resceyvyd and welcomyde þese[10] Englisch lordis and alle hir meyne. ¶ And þanne it was do hym to wete þat þe Duk of Orlyaunce was come to Senclowe, faste by Parys, with a grete noumbre of men of armys & arblasters; and þedir[11] went our Englisch men, and fou3tyn *with* ham, and gotyn þe brygge of Senclowe; & *þere* þay slow mony[12] of the Frensch men and Armenacke3, and þe remenaunt fledde, and[13] wolde no lengir abide. And oure Englysch men comyn ayen to Paris; & *þere* þay tokyn hir leue of the Duke, and comen hom ayen yn-to Engelonde yn saafte, & he[14] yaf ham gret yeftis. ¶ Anon folowyng, the Duk of Orlyaunce sent ambassetours yn-to Engelond, to King Harry þe iiij[the], besechyng hym of his help & socour ayens his dedely enymye, þe Duke of Burgoyne. And þan þe King made Thomas, his sone, Duke of Clarance, & his oþer sone Iohn[15] Duke of Bedforde, and his oþer sone Vmfray Duk of Gloucestre; & Ser Thomas Beauforde, Erle of Somerset[16]; & þe Duke of Awmarle he[17] made Duk of Yorke. ¶ And þan þe King ordeyned his sone Thomas, and[18] Beauford, Erle of Somerset,[19] and Sir Iohn Cornewayle, and meny oþer lordis, kni3tis[20] & [21] squyers, men[22] of arme3 and[23] archers, to go ouyr[24] yn-to Fraunce, yn

[1] þe Erle TR. [2] *leaf* 122, *back*. [3] þis T. in this R.
[4] his *om*. T. [5] And thanne ther went ouer þe see T.
[6] vmfrauylle *om*. T. [7] wente ouer þe see T. þe se R. [8] into T.
[9] and þere TR. [10] welcomyd wele and goodly these T.
[11] tho T. [12] moche peple T.
[13] and wente and T. [14] and þe duke T. Duk R.
[15] sone Iohn TR. John *om*. Kk. [16] Dorsett T. Dorset R.
[17] þe whichche T. [18] and *om*. TR. [19] dorsett T. Dorset R.
[20] lordis and many oþer knyghtis T. and kny3tis R.
[21] & *om*. R. [22] and men TR.
[23] and many oþer T. [24] to gone ouer þe see T. to go over þe se R. to ouyr Kk.

helpyng & streyngthyng of the Duke of Orlyaunce. ¶ And þese worthi lordez, with alle his retynu, schippyd at Hampton, and sayled ouyr yn-to Normandy, and landed at Hoggez. And þere mette with ham þe lorde Hambe, at hir londyng, with vij M[1] men of armez of Frenschmen[1]; and alle were put to flyzt, and takyn of hem vij C men of armes & iiij C hors, *with*-out þo þat were slayn yn the felde. And so þei ryden forth þrouzout Fraunce, and token Castell & tounez, & slowz mych pepil of Frenschmen þat with-stode ham, and tokyn meny prysoners as þay roode; and so þai passyd[2] forth til þay comyn to Burdeux; and *þere* þay restid ham a while, and sette þe cuntre yn pees & rest tylle þe vyntage were redy to sayle; and þanne þe Duk with his mayne com hom yn-to Engelond yn saafte, þankyd be God! ¶ And yn þe same yere was þe Kingis coyne[3] chaynged þrouz-out Engelond, by þe King and his counsel, þat is to say, þe noble, half noble, & ferthyng of goolde.

¶ And þe [4] xiiij yere of King Harryez regne þe iiij[the], he lete make galaiez of warre, for he hadde hopid to haue past þe grete se, and so forth to Ierusalem, and þere to haue endid his lyf. but God vised hym[5] sone aftir with Infirmytez and grete sekenessez, þat he myzt not wel endure no while, so feruentli he was y[6]tak. And he was[7] yn Bedde at Westmynstre yn a faire Chaumbre; and as he lay abedde, he axed his Chaumbirleyn what he[8] callyd that Chaumbyr þat he lay-ynne: he answarde and sayde 'Ierusalem.' þanne[9] he sayde, his *pro*phecie sayde 'he[10] schulde make an ende and deye yn Ierusalem.' and þan[11] he made hym redy vnto God, & disposed alle his wille, and sone aftir he deyed, and was caryed be water fro Westmynstre yn a barge to Feuere*sham*, and fro þennes to Caunturburye be londe, with moche torchelyzt brennyng, yn-to þe *Pri*orie[12] of Crichirch, and *þere* he was worthili entered & beried besyde saint Thomas shryne of Cawnturburye. And þus endid þis[13] worthi King Henry abowte myd Lent Sonday, in þe yere of our Lorde Ihesu Cr*i*st, M[1]CCCCxiij,[14] on whos soule God haue mercy! Amen!

[1] frensshmen þre sergeauntes of armes with him T. [2] riden R.
[3] yeer þe kingez coyn was R.
[4] *leaf* 123. [5] him so TR. [6] y *om.* TR.
[7] take and brought T. was brouzt R. [8] thei T. þey R.
[9] and þanne T. and thanne R. [10] þat he T.
[11] þan *om.* T. [12] abbey T. [13] the T. þe R.
[14] and xiij T.

And aftir þis King Henri, regnyd his sone Henry, þe v^the^ aftir þe conquest.[1] Capitulum CC.xliiij.[2]

And aftir þe deth of King Harry þe iiij^the^, regnid King Harry his sone, þat was born at Mummoth yn Walis, þat was[3] a worthi King, and a gracious man, and a gret conqueror. ¶ And yn þe firste yere of his regne, for gret loue & gedenesse, he sent to þe ffreris of Langeley, *þere* as his Fadir hadde do burye King Richard þe ij^de^, & let take vp his body ayen out of the erthe, and dede bring hym to Westmynstre, yn a ryal chare couert with blak veluet, & baners of diuers armes alle aboute. & al þe horsses drawyng þe chare were trappid yn black, & bete with diuers armes, and mony[4] a torch brennyng, by alle þe wey, til he come to Westmystre. And þere he lette make for hym a ryalle & a solempne terement, and buried hym be Quene Anne his wiff, as his owne desire was, on þe firther syde of Seynt Edwardes schryne, yn the Abbey of Saint Petris of Westmynstre : on whose soule God haue mercy ! Amen !

¶ And yn þis same yere weren[5] certeyne of Lollardes and fals heritikis takine, þat hadde pu[r]sued, þrouȝ fals treson, to haue slayn þe[6] King, and for to haue destroyed alle þe clergy of þis Reme. & þai myȝt haue hadde her fals purpos, but oure Lorde God wolde not suffre it ; for yn hast þe[7] King hadde warnyng *þer*of, & of alle hir fals ordinaunce & worchyng, and come sodenly with his power to Saint Johnes-without-Smythfelde ; and anon þei tokyn a certeyn of þe Lollardes & fals heritikes, and brouȝt hem[8] vnto þe Kingis *pr*esens, & *þere* þei[9] tolde all her fals purpos & ordinaunce, how þey wolde haue do & wroȝt, & þay myȝt haue regned &[10] hadde her wylle, and *þere* þei tolde which were her captens & her[11] gouernours. & þan þe King commaunded ham to þe Tour of London ; & þanne þey took moo of ham, boþe *with*in þe cite & *with*out, [12]and sent ham to Newgate and to[13] bothe[14] Counties. And þan *þere*[15] were [þei] brouȝt yn[16] examynacion before þe clergy and þe Kingis Iustices ; & *þere* þei were *con*uicte of[17] hir fals heresye, & dampned before þe Iustices for hir fals treson : & þus[18] was her Iugement, þat þay

[1] regnyd Harry *his* sone T. [2] CC.xliiij *om.* T. CC.xlv R.
[3] Walis and he was T. [4] many TR. moy Kk. [5] weren a TR.
[6] oure TR. [7] oure T. þey R. [8] hem *om.* T. [9] þei *om.* T.
[10] and haue T. [11] her *om.* T. [12] *leaf* 123, *back.* [13] into T.
[14] bothe the T. [15] thei T. [16] into T.
[17] thei were com*m*ited bifore þe clergie for T. conuict befor þe clergie for R.
[18] þis T. this R.

schulde be drawe fro þe Tour of London, þrou3 London, vnto seint Gyle3 felde; & þere to be hangid & brent on[1] þe galows. ¶ And also was[2] take Ser Roger Acton, kni3t, bo3e for Lollardye & eke for treson ayens þe King and þe Reme. and he come afore þe clergye, and was conuict of[3] his[4] lewed Lollardye, and[5] [6]before þe Iusti3e ydampned to be brent,[6] &[7] to be draw fro þe Tour of Lundon þrou3 þe cite to Saint Gyle3 felde, & to[8] be hanged & to be[9] brent.

¶ And þe[10] ij yere[11] of King Harrye3 regne[12] þe y^the^, he hilde a counsel of alle þe lorde3 of the Reme at Westmynstre; and þere he put ham þe[13] demaunde, & prayed[14] hem of hir godenesse and of her gode counsel[15] to schewe hym, as touchynge þe titile &[16] ry3t þat he hadde to Normandy, Gasquoyne & Guyenne, þe which þe King of Fraunce withhilde hym[17] wrongefully and vnri3tfully, þe wh[i]che his auncetre3 before hym hadde holde be trewe titill of conquest, & ri3t heritage. ¶ The which Normandye, Gasquoyne & Guyenne, þe gode King Edward of Wyndesore, and his[18] ansetrye3 before hym, hadde holde alle hir lyve3 tyme. And his Lorde3 3af hym counsel to sende ambassetours vnto þe King of Fraunce and his counsel, þat[19] he schulde yelde vp to hym his ri3t heritage, þat is to[20] say, Normandie, Gasqueyne, & Guyenne, þe[21] which his *pre*decessoris had y[22]holde afore hym, or ellis he wolde it wynne with dunt of swyrde yn schort tyme, with help[23] of Ihesu. ¶ And þanne þe Dolfynne of Fraunce answeryd to our[24] ambassetours, & sayde yn[25] þis manere: þat þe[26] King was ouyr yonge &[27] tendir of age to make eny warre ayens hym, and was not like yette to be no gede (*sic*) warryor to[28] make such a conqueste þere vpon hym; &[29] yn scorne & despite he sent to hym a tonne fulle of teneys-ballis, be-cause he schulde[30] haue sum what to[31] play with-alle, for hym & for his[32] lorde3; '& þat become hym bettir þanne to mantayne eny warre,' he sayd.[33] ¶ And þanne our[34]

[1] in R. [2] ther was T. [3] was com*m*ited for T. for R.
[4] his clergie and TR. [5] and *om.* R.
[6–6] to be brent and dampnyd bifore the Iustices T. Iustice to be brent & dampned R.
[7] and *om.* T. [8] *þere* R. [9] to be *om.* TR. [10] in the R.
[11] And in the yeer T. [12] regne *om.* R. [13] this TR.
[14] praide and bisoughte T. praide & besou3te R.
[15] counceile and good wille T. counsell and goodwill R. [16] and the T.
[17] hym *om.* TR. [18] his TR. hir Kk. [19] and þat TR.
[20] is to TR. is Kk. [21] Gascoigne and Gyene and Normandie þe T.
[22] y *om.* TR. [23] þe helpe T. þe help R. [24] oure T. our R. *om.* Kk.
[25] on T. [26] oure T. [27] and to T. [28] to do and to T. and to R.
[29] And sum what T. [30] wolde R. [31] forto T.
[32] for his TR. for Kk. [33] he sayd *om.* T. [34] anoon oure T.

lordeȝ, þat were ambassetours, tokyn hir leue & comyn yn-to Engelond ayen, & tolde þe Kinge and his Counsel of the vngodely answere þat þay hadde of the Dolfyn, and of þe present þat he hadde[1] sent vnto the Kinge. ¶ And whanne þe King hadde herde here wordeȝ, and the answere of the Dolfyne, he was wondir sore agrevyd, & ryȝt evil payed towarde the Frenschmen and towarde þe King & þe Dolfyn, and þouȝt to venge hym apon hem as sone as God wolde sende hym grace and myght; and anon lette[2] make tenysballis for the Dolfyn in alle þe haste þat þay myȝte be maad,[3] & þat þei were harde & grete gune-stonys, for þe Dolfyn to play with-alle. ¶ And þanne anon þe King sent for alle his lordeȝ, & hilde a gret [4]Counsel at Westmynstre, and tolde vnto hem þe answere þat he [5] hadde of the Dolfyn, and of [6] his worthi present to [7] hym and to [8] his lordeȝ, to play with-alle. And *þere* þe King and his lordeȝ were accorded þat þay schulde be redy yn armys with hir power, yn þe best aray þat myȝt be,[9] and gete [10] men of armes and archers,[11] and alle *oþer* stuff þat longed *þerto*,[12] & to be redy with alle hir retynu to mete at Southhampton be Lammesse next folouyng, without eny delaye; for the King ordeyned is[13] Naueye of schippeȝ, with al *maner* stuff [14] & vitaile þat longid to such a warri*our*, of al *maner* ordinaunce,[15] yn the hauen of Southhamton, in[16]-to þe nowmbir of iij^{c} xx^{ti} sayle. ¶ And *þere* fil[17] a grete deseȝe & a foul myschif; for þer were iij lordeȝ þat[18] þe King tryst moche ynne, þat,[19] for fals couetiȝe purpoȝid [20] þe Kingis deth, & þouȝt to haue slayn hym and alle his breþryn or he hadde take þe see, þe which were named þus: *Ser* Richarde, þe Erle of Caumbrydge, broþer to þe Duk of York; þe ij was þe Lord Scrope, Treserer of Engelond; þe iij was *Ser* Thom*as* Gray, knyȝt, of the Northcuntre. And þeȝe iij lordeȝ afore sayde, for lucre of Moneye, had made promis to þe Frenschmen to [21] haue slayne oure King and alle his worthi brethryn, by a false trayne sodenly, ere þay hadde be war. But God, of his gret grace, hylde his holy hand ouyr ham, & saued

[1] whiche he hadde T. þe whiche he hadde R. þat hadde Kk.
[2] he lete T. [3] maad TR. padde (*sic*) Kk. [4] *leaf* 124. [5] thei T.
[6] of *om.* R. [7] that he sente to T. þat he sente to R. [8] to *om.* T.
[9] be done T. be do R. [10] to gete T.
[11] archers þat myghte be geten T. archers þat myȝte be goten R.
[12] longid toward it T. to it R. [13] þanne his T. [14] of stuff T.
[15] of ordinaun*c*is T. [16] in *om.* T.
[17] And thanne felle ther T. And þanne fil þer R. [18] which þat TR.
[19] ynne þat *om.* T. þat *om.* R.
[20] couetise þat þei hadde purposid & Iugid T. couetiȝe þat þey hadde purposed and iuged R. [21] forto TR.

hem from þis *pa*relous meyne. ¶ And for to haue do[1] þis, þei resceyued of þe Frenschmen a mylyon of golde, þat[2] was *pere* oponly previde; and for þer fals treson þey were all iij Iuged vnto deth[3]; and þis was þe Iugement: þat þai schulde be ladde þrou3 Hampton, and without þe[4] Northegate, *pere* to be hedid; & þus þai endide, for her fals couetyse and treson.

¶ Anon as þus[5] was do, þe King and alle his meyne made hem redy, and wenton to schyppe, &[6] sayled forth *with* xv^{c} schippe3, and arryued with-ynne Sayne, at Kitcaws, vpon our Ladie3 Evyn, þe[7] Assumpcion, yn Normandye, with al his ordynaunce; & so went[8] forth to Hareflyte, & besegid þe toun al aboute, by londe and[9] by watir, and sent to þe capteyne, and bade hym delyuer þe towne: and he saide, 'non[10] he delyuerd hym, ne non he wolde to hym delyuer,[11] but bade hym do his beste.' ¶ And þan þe[12] Kinge leyde his ordynaunce vnto þe toun, *þat* is for to saye, Gunne3, Engyne3,[13] Tripgettis, & schet and cast vnto þe wallis & eke yn-to þe toun, & caste doun both toure3 and toun, & layde ham vnto þe grounde: & *þere*[14] he played at[15] tenys with his harde gune-stone3 þat[16] were *with*ynne þe toune. ¶ Whanne þai schulde plai, þai songyn 'welawaye and allas þat[17] eny suche tenye3-ballis were made,' and cursed al þo þat warre beganne, & þe tyme þat[18] þei were born. ¶ And on þe morow þe King dede crye at *euery* gate of þe toun, þat *euery* man schulde be redye, on þe morowe erlye to make assaute vnto þe toun. ¶ And Gilli*am*[19] Bocher & Iohn Gaunt,[20] *with* xij o*þer* worthi burge3, comyn to þe King, and besou3t hym, of his ryall mageste & power, to[21] withdrawe his malice and[22] destruccion þat he dede vnto hem, & besou3t hym of viij daye3 respite and trewe3, yef eny rescu my3t come vnto hem, and ellis to yelde vp þe toun vnto hym, with alle her gode3. ¶ And þan þe king sent forth þe Capteyne, and kept þe Remenaunt stille with hym. And þe lorde Gancort went fforth to Rone yn alle hast, vnto þe Dolfyn, for[23] help & soco*ur*; but *þer* was non, ne no maner rescu[24]; for þe Dolfyn wolde not abyde. ¶ And þus þis Capteyne come ageyne to[25]

[1] þo R. [2] and þat R. [3] the deeth T. [4] þe *om.* R.
[5] this T. þis R. [6] and token and T. [7] þe *om.* T.
[8] wente him T. [9] and eek T. [10] that noon T. [11] yelde TR.
[12] oure T. [13] Engynes and T. engyne3 and R. [14] *þere om.* T.
[15] at the T. at þe R. [16] to hem that T.
[17] that euer T. þat evir R. [18] that euer T. *þat* euer R.
[19] William T. And thanne William R. [20] Grannt R.
[21] *leaf* 124, *back* [22] and his T. & his R. [23] forto haue T.
[24] reson R. [25] vnto TR.

þe King, and yelde vp þe toun, and delyverde hym þe keyȝ. And þan he callyd his vncle, þe Erle of Dorset, and made hym Capteyne of the toun[1] of Hareflete, & delyuered hym þe keiȝ, and bade hym go put out alle þe Frensch peple, both man, woman and chylde, & stuffe þe toun[2] with Englisch men. ¶ And þan þe King sent yn to Engelonde,[3] þat what crafti man wolde come þidir, & ynhabit hym þere ynne þe toune, he scholde have hous and housholde to hym & to his heyreȝ for euyrmore. And þidir went mony dyuers Marchaunteȝ & Crafti men, & inhabited ham þere, to streynth þe toune, & weryn welcome. ¶ And whenne þe King saw þis, þat hit was[4] welle stoffed both of vitaile & of men, þis worthi Prynce & King toke his leve, & went hym to Caleys warde by londe. ¶ And þe Frensch men herde of his komyng, and[5] þouȝt to stoppe his way, þat he scholde not passe þat way; & yn hast broken alle þe brygges þere eny passage was for hors & man, yn-so-moche þere[6] myȝt no man passe ouyr þe see Ryuers, noþer on hors ne on foote, but yef he schulde be drounde. ¶ Wherefore our[7] King, with alle his peple, went & souȝte his way fer vp to[8] Paris warde; & þere was alle þe ryal power of Fraunce redy to yef hym batayle, and to destroy al his pepyl; but God[9] almyȝti was his gide, and saued hym and alle his peple,[10] and withstode alle[11] his enymys purpos, þankyd be God, þat so sauyd[12] his owne knyȝt & King yn his riȝtfull tytyl! ¶ And[13] our King saw[14] þe multitude & nowmbre of his enymys to withstonde his way & for to yeue hym bataile, þanne þe King, with a meke hert and a gode spiryt, lyfte vp his handeȝ to Almyȝti God,[15] besechyng hym of[16] help & socour, and þat dai to saue his trew seruauunteȝ. ¶ And þanne our King gadryd alle his lordeȝ togadir,[17] and oþer pepil aboute hym, and bade hem alle to be of[18] gode chere, for þei schulde haue a[19] fayre daye and a gracious victori, and þe bettir of al hir[20] enymys; and prayed hem alle to make hem redy vnto þe batayle; for he wolde rapere be ded þat

[1] towne that is to seie T.
[2] stuffid this towne of Harflete T.
[3] Englond and dide crie in euery good towne of Englond T. Engelonde and dede crie in everi good town of engelonde R.
[4] þat hit was T. saw þat it was R. þat is Kk.
[5] thei T. [6] þat ther T. þat þer R. [7] þe R. [8] ferre vnto T.
[9] god that is T. [10] meynee T. meyne R. [11] alle *om.* TR.
[12] that sauyd so T. saued so R. [13] And thanne TR.
[14] king biholding and seyng T. beholdinge and seynge R.
[15] god and TR. [16] of his TR. [17] togadir *om.* TR.
[18] of TR. a Kk. [19] haue a TR. schulde a Kk. [20] his TR.

day, in batayle or yn felde,[1] þan be[2] take of his enymys; for he wolde nevir put þe rem of Engelond to no Rawnson for his *per*sone. ¶ And þe Duk of Yorke fill on his[3] kne, and besau3t þe King of a bone, þat he wolde graunte hym þat day þe vawnt-ward yn his batayle: and þe King graunted hym his asking, and sayde, "gramarcy, Cosyn of Yorke!" and prayed hym to make hym redye. ¶ And þanne he bade euery man to[4] orden hym a stake of tre, and[5] scharp both[6] endis, þat þe stake my3t be pyght yn[7] the erthe a-slop, þat hir enymye3 schulde not ouyr-ryde hem,—for þat was hir fals purpos,—and arayed hem al[8] *þere* for[9] to ouyr-ryde our meyne at þe first comyng of ham sodeynly yn þe first bront.

¶ And alle ny3t before þe bataile, þe Frenschmen made mony grete fires, and moche revell with hontynge, and[10] played our King and his lorde3 at þe dys, and an archer for[11] a blanke of hir moneye; for þei wende hadde[12] be heyre3.

[*The Battle of Agincourt.*]

¶ The morow[13] aros, þe day gan spryng, and þe King, be gode avis, lette arme[14] his bataile and[15] wynge3, and charged eue*r*y man to kepe hym hoole togadir, & prayed hem al to be of gode chere. And whanne þay were redy, he askid what tyme of þe day it was, & þay sayde 'pryme.' ¶ "Thanne," said our King, "nowe is gode tyme, for alle Engelond prayeth for vs; and *þer*fore be of gode chere, & lette vs go to our iorney." And þanne he sayde with an hygh voyce: ¶ "In þe name of Almy3ti God and[16] Saynt George, avaunt banarer! and Saynt George, þis day þyn help!"

¶ And þanne þe3e Frenschmen come prikkyng doun as þei wolde haue ouyr-rydyn alle oure meyne; but God and our archers made hem sone to stomble; for our archers schet neuyr arowe amys, but it[17] perisched and brou3t to grounde man and hors[18]; for þey schet þat day for a wager; and our stake3 made hem top ouyr terve, eche on o*þer*, þat þay lay on hepis ij spere lengthe of heighthe. And our King, with his meyne and with[19] men of arme3, evir

[1] wolde rathir that day be deed in the feld T. þe feeld R.
[2] to be T. [3] his *om.* T. [4] *leaf* 125.
[5] of tre and *om.* T. [6] at bothe R. [7] into TR.
[8] hem all T. hem alle R. al Kk. [9] for *om.* T.
[10] and shoutyng and T. and showtinge and R.
[11] all for T. al for R. [12] all hadde TR. [13] morne T. morn R.
[14] araie TR. [15] and his TR. [16] and of R. [17] that it T.
[18] hors and man T. [19] with *om.* R.

[1]layde doune; for he most fi3t[1] with his owne honde3; and our[2] gode archers lackid[3] on[4] arowes, and[5] layde on with stake3. ¶ And þus Almy3ti God and Saint George brou3t our enymys to grounde, and 3af vs þat day þe victori; & þere were slayn of Frensch-men þat day yn þe ffelde of Agyncourt, moo þan a[6] xj M[l], without prysoners þat were take. & þere were nowmbred þat day of Frenschmen yn the felde, mo þan vj xx M[l], and of Englyschmen nou3t vij M[l]; but God þat day fau3t for vs.

¶ And aftir come[7] þer tydynge3 to þe[8] King, þat þere was a new Batayle of Frenschmen ordeyned, redy to stele on hem, and comyn towarde hym. Thanne[9] anon þe[10] King lette crye þat euery man scholde sle his prysoner þat he hadde take; and anon arrayed his bataile ayen redy for[11] to fi3t with þe Frenschmen. ¶ Whanne þay say þat our men killyd doun[12] her prysoners, þanne withdrow þay[13] ham, and brak hir batayle and alle hir araye; and þus our King (as a worthi conqueror) hadde þat day þe victory yn the ffelde of Agyncourt yn Pycardye.

¶ And þanne our King returned ayen þere þe Batayle was, to se what pepil was ded of Englyschmen, and yef eny were hurt þat my3t be holpe; and þere were ded yn þe ffelde, on þer party[14] þe Duk of Barry, þe Duk of Launson,[15] þe Duk of Braban, the Erle of Nauerne, þe Chief counstable of Fraunce, and viij oþer erle3, and þe Archebischoppe of Saumte, and of gode Barons C[16] and moo, and of worthi kni3tis of grete alyaunce of Cote armyours, M[l] C.[17] And of Englyschmen was ded þat day, þe[18] Duk of Yorke and þe Erle of Suffolk; and of alle oþer of Englisch[19] Nacyon þere were not ded passyng xxvj bodie3, thanked be God! And þis batayle was on a Friday, þe[20] which was Crispyn & Crispiniane3 day, yn the moneth of October. And anon þe King commawnded to bery ham, and the Duke of York to be caried forth with ham, and þe Erle of Suffolke. And þere were tak[21] prisoners, þe Duk of Orlyance, þe Duk of Burbone, þe Erle of Vandom, þe Erle of Ewe, þe Erle of Richmond, and Ser Bursigaunt, Marchal of Fraunce. And mony

[1—1] leide downe for him bifell to fighte that day T. laide doun for him fil to figte R.
[2] our *om.* T. [3] þat lackeden T. [4] on *om.* T. [5] and *om.* T.
[6] a *om.* TR. [7] that come T. [8] oure T. our R.
[9] And T. Thanne *om.* R. [10] oure T. our R. [11] for *om.* TR.
[12] a downe T. [13] thei withdrewe T. [14] on þer *party om.* TR.
[15] Alaunsonn T. [16] an C T. [17] A M[l] and v C T.
[18] þe good T. þe gode R. [19] *leaf* 125, *back.* [20] þe *om.* T.
[21] take *om.* T.

oper worthi lordes were take yn þis batayle of Agyncourt, and brouȝt vnto þe toun of Caleys, and so ouyr se [1] with þe King yn-to [2] Engelond, and londid at Douer, yn Kent, with alle his prisoners in suafte,—þankid be Ihesu!—and so cam to [3] Caunt*ur*bury, and offred at Saint Thom*as* Schryne; and so roode forth þrouȝ Kent þe next way to Eltham, & *þere* he restid hym tylle he wolde come to London. ¶ And þan þe Meire of London and þe Aldermen and [4] þe Schereffes,[5] with alle þe worþi Comeners and craftis, comyn to þe Blake-Heth, welle and worthilye arayed to welcome our Kyng with dyuers melodye, and [6] þanke Allemyȝty god of his *gra*cious victory þat he hadde schewed to [7] hym.

[*Henry V's Reception in London.*]

¶ And so þe King and his prysoners passyd forth by ham, til he com vnto [8] Seint Thomas watryng; and *þere* mette [9] with hym alle þe Religious with precession, and welcomyd hym; and so [10] þe King come ridynge [11] with his prysoners þrouȝ þe cite of London, where *þere* [12] was schewyd mony a faire syȝt at alle þe Conditeȝ and at þe Cros yn Chepe, as yn heuynly aray, angelis,[13] archaungelis, Patriarchus, prophetis,[14] and virginis with dyuers melodieȝ, sensyng [15] and syngyng to welcome our King, and alle conditus [16] rennyng wyne. And þe King passyd forthe vnto Saint Paules; and *þere* [17] met with hym xiiij Bischopes, reuersed and mitryd, with Censers to welcome þe King, and sungu*n* for his gracious victori *Te deum laudamus*. And *þere* þe King offred, & [18] roode forth [19] to Westmynstre; and þe [20] Maire toke leue [21] of þe King, and rode hoom ayen.

¶ And yn þe thrydde yere of King Henryes regne þe v^the^, Came þe Emp*er*our of Almayne, King of Rome & of Hungary, yn-to Engelonde, and so to þe cite of London. And þe Maire, aldermen,[22] and schereviȝ,[23] with þe [24] worthi craftis of London, be þe Kingiȝ co*m*maundement, met with hym on the Blake-Heth yn þe best aray þat þay cowthe, on hors bak; & *þere* þay welcomyd hym, and brouȝt hym to London with moche honour and grete reuerence.

[1] þe sea T. [2] king of T. [3] vnto T. [4] & R. and *om.* Kk.
[5] london with the sherefis and þe Aldirmen T. [6] & to R.
[7] for TR. [8] to T. [9] þei mette T. [10] so *om.* T. [11] MS. adynge.
[12] that ther T. [13] of Aungels TR. [14] prophetis *om.* R.
[15] of sensyng T. [16] þe Condites T. þe conditis R. [17] þanne T.
[18] & took and T. [19] forth *om.* T. [20] thanne the T. þenne þe R.
[21] his lene T. [22] and the aldirmen T.
[23] with the sherefis T. and shereues R. shereviz Kk. [24] and þe T.

And atte Seint Thomas watryng þere mette with hym the King and alle[1] his lordez yn gode aray. And þere was a worthi metyng betwene þe Emperour and þe King; & þere thay kussid togadrez, & braced ech othir; and þan[2] þe King toke þe Emperour be þe hande; & so þai come rydyng prouȝt þe cite of London vnto Saint Poulez; and þere þay lyȝte, and offred; and alle þe[3] Bischopez stode reuersed, with censers yn here hondez, censyng. ¶ Thanne[4] þei tokyn hir hors, and ryden to[5] Westmynstre; and þere the King loggyd the Emperoure yn his owne palis, & þere[6] restid hym a grete while, and alle atte þe Kingis cost.

¶ And sone aftir come þe Duk of Holond yn-to Engelond, to[7] se þe Emperour, and to speke with hym and with þe King; and he was worthily resceyved and loggyd yn the Bischopis In of Hely, and alle at þe Kinges cost. ¶ And whanne þe Emperoure hadde wel restid hym and sey þe lande yn dyuers partees, and knew þe commoditees, þanne, be processe of tyme, he toke his leue of the King; but ere he went[8] he was made Knyȝt of the Gartir, & resceyved and weryd þe lyuerey; and þanne he thanked þe King and alle[9] his worthi lordez; and[10] þe King & he went ouer þe see to Calys, and abydyn þere longe tyme, to haue an onswere of the Frensch King. And atte þe[11] last hit come, and plesyd hym riȝt nought; and[12] þe Emperour toke his leve of the King, and passyd forth yn Goddis name; and oure King come ouyr ayen yn-to Engelond, yn alle þe hast þat he myȝt; and þat was on Saynt Lukes eue þat he come to Lambehithe; and on the Monday next ffoluynge he come yn[13]-to the parlement atte Westmynstre. And yn þis same yere was a gret derth of Corne yn Engelond, but,[14]—thankyd be God!—hit lastid not long.

How the King went þe secunde tyme yn-to Normandy; & of þe sege of Roone.[15] Capitulum CC xlv.[16]

And yn þe forth yere of King Harryez regne[17] þe fifthe, he hilde his parlement at Westmynstre yn the begynnyng of[18] moneth of October, and lastid vnto þe purificacion of our Lady þanne next folowyng. And þere was grawnted vnto þe King, to maynetayne

[1] the kyng and alle T. hym alle Kk. [2] thanne T. þan *om.* R.
[3] þe *om.* R. [4] And þanne T. And þenne R. [5] *leaf* 126.
[6] þere he TR. [7] to come and T. [8] þede T. yede R.
[9] alle *om.* T. [10] And thanne TR. [11] þe *om.* T. [12] And thanne T.
[13] yn *om.* R. [14] but *om.* T. [15] How the king . . . Roone *om.* TR.
[16] CC xlvj R. [17] regne *om.* T. [18] of the T. of þe R.

his warres, bothe of[1] sp*irit*ualte & temp*or*alte, an hole taxe and a dyme.[2] ¶ And[3] anon þe King prayed al his lorde3 to make hem redy to streynth hym yn his ry3t; and anon he lette make a new retynu, and charged alle men to be redye at Hampton yn þe[4] Whitson woke þanne next folowyng, *with*out eny delay. ¶ And[5] þe Kinge made þe Duke of Bedforde Protector & defender of his Reme of Engelond yn his absens, and charged hym to kepe his lawe3, &[6] mayntayne boþe[7] sp*irit*ualte and[8] temp*or*alte. ¶ And whanne þe King hadde þus do, and sette alle þyng yn kinde, on Saint Marke3 day, þat was þat tyme Hocwedynesday, he toke his hors atte Westmynstre, and come rydyng to Poulis; & þere he offred, and toke his leue, and[9] rode forth þrow þe cite, taking his leve of alle man*er* of[10] peple, as welle of[11] pore as of[11] Rich, praynge alle hem[12] yn gen*er*all to pray for hym. And so he roode forth to Saint George3, and þere he offred, and toke is leve of þe Maire, Chargyng hym to kepe welle his Chaumbre; and so rode forth to Hampton, and þere abode tille his retynu was redy and come to hym; for þere was alle[13] his Naueye of schippe3, with his ordynaunce, gadred and welle stuffyd, as longyd to such a ryalle Kinge, with alle man*er* of[14] vitayle3 for his[15] pepille, as welle for hors as for man, as longyd for such a warriour, þat is to say, armure, Gonne3, tripgettis, Engyne3, sowe3, Bastille3, brygge3 of lethir, scaling laddres, mallis,[16] spade3, schouylle3, Pykys,[17] bowe3 and[18] arowe3, bowstrynge3, scheftis,[19] &[20] pipis fulle of arowe3, as nede for such a worthi warriour þat no þing was to sech. &[21] whanne tyme come, þedir come to hym scheppe3 lade with[22] gunepowder.

[*Henry V's second Invasion of France.*]

¶ Whanne[23] þis[24] was rede, and his retynu come, þe King and his lorde3, with alle his rial host, went to schippe, & tokyn þe see & sayled yn-to Normandye, and landed at Towk vpon[25] Lammas Day þan next; and þere he made xxviij[26] knightis at his londyng.

[1] of þe T.
[2] dyme in susteynyng of his warres T. dyme in susteynynge of his werris R.
[3] And þanne T. and thenne R. [4] þe *om.* T.
[5] And there T. and þere R. [6] and to T. [7] boþe the T.
[8] and þe T. [9] and so TR. [10] of *om.* T. [11] of the T.
[12] hem alle T. ham alle R. [13] alle *om.* T. [14] of *om.* R.
[15] for such a roiall T. for such a rial R. [16] *leaf* 126, *back.*
[17] Pikeyses Pavises T. Pikeys Pavis R. [18] and *om.* T.
[19] Tonnes Cheftis T. Tonnes Chiftis R. [20] & *om.* T. [21] & *om.* TR.
[22] with Gonnes and T. [23] And whanne R. And whenne T.
[24] all this T. [25] vpon þe T. [26] xlviij TR.

¶ And þanne þe King, hering of mony enymys vpon þe see, þat is to sey, ix grete Carylis, hulkys,[1] Galeye3 & schippi3, that were come to[2] destroye his Nauey, anon[3] he commaunded þe Erle of the March to be chyff Capteyne, and mony worthi lor[d]e3 with hym, with[4] men of armys and archers, to go to the see, þat non enmyes defouled his Nauye[5] ne entred his londe yn no maner party for to destrowble his viage ne[6] corneye. ¶ And anon þe erle toke his meyne, and went to schyppe, and skimmed the see, and kepte þe see-coste3, þat no maner[7] enymys durste rowte[8] vpon þe see. ¶ And anon þe Kinge sent his heroudes vnto þe Capten of Towke, & chargyd hym to delyuer is[9] Castell and his toun, & ellis he schulde leve neyþer[10] man ne child a[11]lyve. And anon þe Captene & iiij oþer burge3 brou3t the keye3 vnto þe King, and besou3t hym of grace; and þe Kinge delyuerd[12] to Ser Iohn[13] Kighley þe keie3, and made hym Capteyn, & commawnded hym to put out[14] alle þe[15] Frenschmen, bothe of þe Castell and of the toun. ¶ And þere besyde was þe Castell of Louers; and þedir þe King sent þe Erle Marchall, with a faire mayne, and sawted þe toun; and anon it was yelded vp vnto[16] þe Erle, & brou3t hym þe keye3,[17] & he brou3t þe keye3 to þe King; & þe King toke to[18] hym þe keye3, and made hym Capteyn of the Castell of Louers & of alle þat longed þerto, and charged him to[19] delyuer oute alle þe F[r]enschmen.

¶ And þan þe King[20] hilde forth his way to Cane, þat was a strong toune and a faire, and a ryalle Castell þerynne. And anon he sent his herodde3 vnto þe Capteyn, and Chargyd hym to delyuer þe toun and his Castel, or ellis he wolde hit gete with[21] streynth of hond.

¶ And þai answerd and sayd to him, 'non of hym he toke,[22] ne non þey[23] wolde delyuer vnto hym.'[24] ¶ And þanne[25] anon he leyde his sege to þe toun, and layde gunne3 on euery syde, and bete adoun both walle3 & toure3, and slow myche pepil yn hir[26] howse3 & eke yn stretes. ¶ And þe gode Duk of Clarens, he[27] layde doun[28]

[1] hulkis and T. [2] forto T. [3] And anoon T. [4] of R.
[5] his Navie T. his Naucie R. Nauye Kk.
[6] ne his TR. [7] maner of TR. [8] come T. [9] him his TR.
[10] neiþir leue T. neyther leve R. [11] on T. [12] dide delyuer T.
[13] Iohn of R. [14] putte out TR. put Kk. [15] þe *om.* TR.
[16] yolden to T. yolde to R. [17] and þe keies brought to him T.
[18] to *om.* TR. [19] him to T. to RKk. [20] And þe kyng þanne T.
[21] with dynt of swerde and T. [22] saide he took him noon R. [23] he R.
[24] and seide he took hem noon ne noon he wolde delyuer to him T.
[25] thanne *om.* T. [26] hir *om.* T. [27] he *om.* R. [28] a downe T.

þe wallis on his syde vnto þe grounde; and so with ynne a while þe King be his counsel assauted þe toune alle aboute; and anon þe Duk of Clarans had entyrd yn-to the toun, and slowȝ doun ryȝt til þat he come vnto þe King, and spared neþer man ne childe; and euyr þai cryed "a Clarans, a Clarans, Seint George!" & slouȝ doun riȝt; and þere was ded on þe wallis,[1] on þe Kingis syde, a worthi man þat me callid Sprengehose, þe which þe King commaunded to be beryed yn þe abbey of Cane, fast by William Conqueroure: on whose soule, God haue mercy! amen! [2]And thanne[3] þe King come yn-to þe toun, with his Broþer þe Duk of Clarens, and mony oþer worthi lordeȝ,[4] with moche solempnite and myrthe, and þanne þe King commaunded þe[5] Capteyne to delyuer his[6] Castell; and he besouȝt þe King þat he wolde yeue[7] hym xiiij dayeȝ of[8] respite, yef eny rescu wolde come; and yf non come, to delyuer hym þe keyeȝ and þe Castelle atte his owne commaundement. ¶ And vndir þis composicion was the toun[9] & þe Castell of Bayons, with oþer touneȝ, fortaliceȝ & villageȝ, yn-to þe noumbre of xiiij tounes. And[10] vpon þe hylle before the castell of Cane, þe[11] King pyght alle his tentis, þat semyd a toun as moche as Cane. & by þat come tydyngis þat no rescu[12] wolde come þere; and[13] so, at þe xiiij dayes ende, þe Capteyne come out, and delyuered þe keyeȝ and þe Castell to our King; And Bayons and þe oþer xiiij touneȝ weryn delyuerd vnto[14] hym also. and anon þe King delyuerd þe keyes to þe Duk of Clarans, and made hym Capten, both of the toun and of þe Castell, & made hym Capteyn of Bayons, & of al þe oþer touneȝ also, and so[15] entred þe Castell & þe toun[16] also; and þere he hylde his Seint Georgeȝ feste; and þere he made xv KniȝtIs of the Bath.[17] And þe King commaunded to[18] put out alle þe Frenschmen, boþe man & womman; and no man so hardy to defoule no womman, ne take no maner gode away from ham, but late hem passe yn pees, vpon[19] deth; and þere passed out of the toun, yn on day, moo þan xv c wymmen.

[1] on þe wallis *om.* T. [2] *leaf* 127. [3] thanne T. þanne R. when Kk.
[4] and many oþer lordes T. [5] commandid þe kyng vnto the T.
[6] him his TR. [7] kyng to yeue T. þe kinge to yeve R. [8] of *om.* R.
[9] was the towne T. was þe toun) R. the toun *om.* Kk.
[10] And *om.* T. ac Kk. [11] oure T. oure R.
[12] rescue T. rescu R. [13] and TR. [14] to T. [15] so *om.*
[16] þe toun) and þe castell R.
[17] Bath there was ser lowes Robserd Salyn Cheyne Mongomerie and many oþer were maad knyghtis T. Bath and þere was sir lowis Robessart Salyn Cheyne Mountgomery and meny oþer R.
[18] hem forto T. ham forto R. [19] vpon þe T.

¶ And þanne þe[1] King lete stuffe þe Toun and þe Castell with Englisch men, and ordeyned ij Capteyne3, on for the toun and a-noþer for the Castell, and chargyd ham, vpon her lyf, to kepe wel the toun and þe Castell. And or he[2] went penne3, he gat valeys Newelyn, & leyde sege[3] to Chierburgh. And þat[4] sege layde þe Duk of Gloucestre with a strong pouer, and be processe of tyme gat it, and made *þere* a Capteyne. And þe[5] same tyme þe Erle of Warwic layde sege[6] to Dounstdunt, & gat hit, and put *þer*yn a capteyne.

¶ And for to speke moore of the Erle of the Marche, þat þe King hadde sette[7] to scom þe see and þe Coostes of Engelonde for enymys, þe wynde aros so vp-on hem, þat þei wende alle for[8] to haue loste her lyves; but þrou3 þe grace of God, and goode gouernaunce, þey þat were within the Ile of Wight, ryden al þat storme þere.[9] ¶ And *þere* were lost ij Carreke3 & ij balyngers with marchaundis godis, and alle þe pepyl þat were *þer*ynne; & anoþ*er* Caryk droff before Hampton, and drew his Mast ouyr the toun wallis; and þis[10] was on[11] saynt Barthelemewe3 day. ¶ And whaun alle þis storme was cecid, þis worthi Erle of the Marche tooke his schippe with his meyne, and went ayen[12] to þe see, and loudid yn Normandy at Hogge3, and so rode forth towarde þe King; and euyr as he cam, þe Frenschmen fledde. ¶ And[13] there com to hym an Antony pygge, and folowed þe ost al þat way tyl thay come tylle[14] a grete wasch; and *þere*[15] þay drad to haue be ded, for the wat*er* closed ham so þat þay my3t noughere goo[16] out. ¶ But atte þe[17] last, þis pygge [18]and God[19] brou3t hem out alle[20] saaf; and *þere* þay cau3t a gyde that knewe alle the cuntre aboute,[21] and he brou3t ham þrou3 quicsonde, and so yn-tille[22] an Ile; and *þere* they toke meny prysoners yn her way[23] toward the King yn her iourney[24] towarde[25] Cane.

And *þere* þe King welcomyd hym, and toke his iourney towarde[26] Argenton, & anon it was yolde vnto þe King, and þai[27]

[1] oure T. our R. [2] And eer þat oure kyng T. þey R. [3] a sege T.
[4] at þat T. [5] þat T. [6] a sege T. [7] kyng took T. [8] for *om.* T.
[9] þei ride*n* withinne the Ile of wight there in aft þat storme T. þey that were wight ryden al þat storme þere Kk.
[10] þat T. [11] vpon T.
[12] and wente ayen T. and wente R. went Kk. [13] And þanne T.
[14] to TR. [15] *þere om.* T. [16] gete T. [17] þe *om.*
[18] *leaf* 127, *back.* [19] and god *om.* T. [20] ham alle out R.
[21] aboute *om.* T. [22] to TR. [23] wey as thei wente T.
[24] yn her iourney *om.* TR. [25] vnto T. [26] to T. vnto R.
[27] there thei T.

hadde her lyues, & went hir way. ¶ And þanne þe[1] King remeued to a strong toun[2] callyd Cessy, and þere was a fayr Mynstre, and þay yelde it anon vnto[3] þe King. And[4] þe King went anon[5] fro þenne3 to Launson,[6] and gat[7] þe toun and[8] brigge. And[9] þe King sent þe Erle of Warwic to a toun me[10] callith Belham, with a strong power; and anon þay yelde ham,[11] and put ham yn the Kingis grace[12]: and so dede mony mo stronge toune3 & castellis þat were in þo partee3. ¶ And fro þennes þey went to Vernyl in Perche; and anon it was yolden to[13] þe King, bothe toun & castell, bodye3 and godes, at the Kingis grace. And so þe King gat and conquered alle the toune3 and Castelles, Pile3,[14] Streynthis, and Abbeye3,[15] vnto Pountlarge, & fro þenne3 vnto the Cite of Roone.

[*The Lollard, Sir John Oldcastle.*]

¶ And yn þe .v. yere of King Henrye3 reing þe v^the^, Ser Iohn Oldecastell, knight, þat was þe Lorde of[16] Cobham, was arestyd for Lollardye, and brou3t yn-to[17] the Tour of London. And anon aftir he brak out of þe Tour, and went ynto Walis; and there he kept hym longe tyme. ¶ And at the[18] laste, þe Lorde Powis mette with hym and tooke hym; but he stode at grete defence longe tyme, and was soore wounded or he wolde be take; and so þe Lorde Powys meyne brou3t hym out of Walis to London yn a whirlecole; & so he was brou3t to Westmynstre, & there was[19] examyned of certeyn poynte3 þat were put vpon hym. & he sayde not nay; and so he was conuycte be[20] þe clergy of[21] Lollardye, & dampned before þe Iustize vnto[22] deth for treson; and so he was hadde vnto þe Tour ayen, and þere he was laide on a hurdil, and draw þrough þe cite to Saint Gyle3 Felde, & þere was made a new paire of Galows, and a stronge chayne, and a coler of yron for hym, and þere he was hanged and brent on þe galous, & alle for his lewdeness &[23] fals opynyons.

[1] oure T. our R. [2] towne þat men T. town) þat me R.
[3] to TR. [4] And þanne TR. [5] anon *om.* TR.
[6] Alaunsonn T. [7] wanne T. wan R. [8] and þe TR.
[9] And *om.* T. [10] þat men T. þat me R.
[11] ham *om.* T. [12] hem in his grace and in þe kyngis T.
[13] vnto TR. [14] Piles and T.
[15] and abbeies T. & Abbeye3 R. abbeye3 Kk. [16] of *om.* R.
[17] vnto T. [18] the *om.* T. [19] he was T. [20] of TR.
[21] for TR. [22] vnto the T. vnto þe R. [23] and for his TR.

[1]How the King sent his vncle Syr Beaufort, Duk of Excestre, before the cite of Roon, and there displayed his Baner.[1]

And[2] yn the vi[the] yere of King Harrie3 regne þe v[the], he sent his vncle, Sir Thomas Beauforde, Duk of Excestre, *with* a fayre manye of men of arme3 and archers, a[3]fore þe cite of Roone, & *þere* displayed his baner, & sent herode3 vnto þe toun, and bade hem yelde it[4] vnto oure King, her lige lorde. ¶ And þai saide he[5] toke hem non to kepe, ne *non* he schulde haue *þere*, but yf it were ry3t dere bou3t and medid with hir hande3; for other answer wolde þey *non* yeve.[6] ¶ And þere þe[7] Duk toke gode[8] avysement of the toun and[9] of the grounde al about; and anon *þere* yssued out of þe cite a grete meny of *men* of arme3, bothe on horsbak & eke[10] on fote; & anon our mayne mette with ham, [11]and ovirthrew an hep of hem; and there were slayn and take xxx[ti] *persone*3 of right gode menne3 bodie3; and þe rempnaunt fledde vnto[12] the toun. And þe Duk went ayen[13] vnto Pountlarge vnto þe King and tolde hym alle how he hadde sped, and how hym lykyd þe grounde. ¶ And anon as he was go, þey cast adoun al her[14] subbarbe3 about þe cite, vnto þe harde grounde, for þe King schulde haue *þere*[15] *non* refreschyng at his comyng. ¶ And the Fryday before Lammas day þen next, our King *with* his ost come before Roone, and layde[16] his sege rounde about *þe*[17] cite, and anon leet leye his owne[18] ordinaunce vnto the toun. ¶ And þe King and his lorde3 were logged yn the Charterhous, and gret streyngth about hym, and þat was yn þe est partye of þe cetey. And þe Duk of Clarans loggyd *hym* at þe westende, yn a wast abbeye before þe porte of Caux. ¶ And the Duk of Excestre yn the North syde, before þe Port Denys; and betwene þe Duk of Clarens & þe Duk of Excestre was þe Erle Marchal logged, with a strong pouer, before[19] þe castell Gate. ¶ And þan was þe Erle of Ormonde, and þe Lorde Haryngton, and þe lorde Talbot with his[20] retynu, next hym; and þanne Ser Iohn Cornewayle, and mony *oþer* noble kni3tis of name with hir retynu, lay with þe Duk of Clarens. And from þe Duk of Excestre

[1–1] *om.* TR. [2] Of the Sege of Roone. And T.
[3] to R. [4] þat Citee T. yelde *þat* Cite R.
[5] þat he T. [6] yeue but Gonnes T.
[7] there the T. *þere* þe R. *þere* Duk Kk. [8] gode *om.* T.
[9] of the toun and *om.* TR. [10] eke *om.* TR. [11] *leaf* 128.
[12] ayen into TR. [13] ayen *om.* T. [14] þe T.
[15] there schulde haue T. [16] and anoon he sette T. sette R.
[17] that T. [18] owne *om.* TR. [19] with a strower bifore T.
[20] her T. hir R.

towarde þe King weryn logged þe Lorde Roos, þe Lorde[1] Wylughby, þe Lorde Fitzhugh,[2] and *Ser* Wil*li*am Porter, knizt, with hir retynu, before þe Port Seint Hillary. ¶ And þan was þe Erle of Mortayne, with his retynu, logged yn þe Abbey of Saynt Kat*er*yne; and þe Erle of Sawlesbery with is retynu lay on þat on[3] syde of Saynt Katerynes; & *Ser* Iohn Gray, knight, was logged at þe[4] Mount Saint Mychell; and *Ser* Philippe Leiche, knight, þe Kingis tresorer, was logged betwene þe watir of Sayne and þe abbey, and kepte þe warde vndir þe hille. And þe Baron of Carew was loggid[5] on þe watir syde to kepe þe passage, and Iemco þe skquier lay next hym on þe water syde; & þay[6] ij Squiers kept manly þe watir of Sayne, and fauzt *with* her enymys oft tymez. And on þat oþ*er*[7] syde of Sayne lay þe Erle of Hontyngton and Maistir Nevyle, þe Erlez sone of Westmerlonde, and *Ser* Gilbert Homfrauile, þe Erle of Kyme, *Ser*[8] Richarde of Arundell, and þe Lorde Ferrers *with* hir retynu, before þe Port de Pount; & eche of these lordez hadde strong ordynaunce. ¶ And þe King dede make at Pountlarge, ouyr þe watir of Sayne, a strong and a myzty Cheyne[9] of Iren, & put it þrouz grete pilez ffast pyght yn the grounde; & þat went ouyr þe Ryver of Sayne, þat no vessell myzt passe þat way in no kind. And aboue þat chayne þe King leet make a brygge ouyr þe watir of Sayne, þat man & horse & alle othir [10]Carrage myzt go to and fro, at[11] alle tymez whanne þat[12] nede were.

¶ And thanne come þe Erle of Warwic, and hadde gote Dounsrount vnto þe King; and anon þe King sent hym[13] to Caudebeek, to besege it. And whenne he com before the toun, he sent hys heroudez vnto þe Capteyne, and bade hym yelde vp þe toun[14] on[15] payn of deth. And anon he layde his sege; & þan þe Capteyne besouzt þe Erle þat he myzt come vnto[16] his presens & speke with hym; and so þe gode Erle graunted hym. ¶ Thanne[17] he come out, and iiij oþ*er* burgez with hym, and Entretyd so with þe Erle þat this toun was vndir composic*i*on to do as þe cite of Roone dede; and þe Erle *grau*nted and consentyd þer-to, vpon þis condic*i*on, þat þe Kynge3 Nauey, *with* his ordynaunce, myzt passe vp by ham in

[1] lord of TR. [2] lord Phelew T. [3] oþ*er* T.
[4] þe abbey þat is called T. þe *om.* R.
[5] was loggid T. was logged R. was loggid *om.* Kk.
[6] and þo T. & þay *om.* R. & þay and þay Kk. [7] one R.
[8] and *sir* T. [9] Brigge R. [10] *leaf* 128, *back.*
[11] at TR. and Kk. [12] þat *om.* TR.
[13] sent the Erle of Warwik T. sente þe erle of Warwick R.
[14] þe towne up T. [15] in T. [16] to T. [17] And þanne T.

saafte, without eny lette or dysturbaunce; and to þis composycion þei sette her[1] seele3, and þe Schippe3 passed vp by ham yn saafte, & come before þe cite of Roon, into a C.[2] schippe3, and þere þay cast her[3] anchors, and þanne þis citee[4] was besegid bothe be lond & by watir.[5] ¶ And whanne alle þis was do, and þe schippe3 come vp, þanne come þe Erle of Warwic ayen vnto þe King, and loggyd hym betwene þe Abbey of Saint Katerynes & þe King, til þat þe[6] abbey intret, and was[7] yolde vnto þe King; and þanne he remeved fro penne3, and loggyd hym before þe Poort Martevile. ¶ And þanne[8] was þe Erle of Salusberye commawnde be þe King to make hym redy for to ryde; but þere come hasti tydynge3 and made hym to abyde; & so he retourned ayen and logged hym besyde3 þe Erle of Hontyngton til þe sege was endyd. ¶ And þann come þe Duk of Gloucestre, þe Kinges broþer, from þe sege of Chierborugh þat[9] he hadde wonne & gotoun, & stuffed ayen to[10] þe Kinges behoue & pr[o]fit.[11] And whanne he[12] was come to[13] the King before Roon, anon he logged hym with grete ordynaunce before þe Port Saint Hyllarye, more nygh[14] þe toun and his enymys þanne eny oþer man[15] be xl rode3 of lengthe, withynne schotte of quarell; & with hym lay þe Erle of Suffolk & þe Lorde of Bergeveny with alle hir retynu & strong ordynaunce, & manly & proutly fau3t euery day with hir enymys evere whanne þay issued out of the Cete. ¶ And þanne com þe Pryour of Kylmaynon yn[16] Irelond, ouyr the se vnto þe King, with a fayre mayne of men of arme3 of hir owne cuntre gise, vnto[17] the summe of xv c of gode[18] monne3 bodye3. And þe King welcomyd ham, and made ham ry3t grete[19] chere.

¶ And þanne come tydynge3 to[20] the King þat þe King of Fraunce, and þe Dolffyn and þe Duke of Burgoyne, [21] wolde come doun[22] to rescu þe cite of Rone with a strong power of alle maner[23] nacione3, and[24] breke þe sege; and he cast hym to entre on þe North syde of the oste, because þat þere was þe beste entre, and

[1] to her T. [2] ij C T. [3] þer T. [4] Citee T. cite R. sege Kk.
[5] boþe bi watir and bi londe. T. [6] þe *om.* T. [7] and was T. was Kk.
[8] And þanne T. And thanne R. And Kk.
[9] þe whiche TR. [10] vnto TR.
[11] and profit vnto þe crowne of Englond and T. profit to þe Croune of engelonde R.
[12] whanne he *om.* T. [13] vnto T. [14] nere T. nerrer R.
[15] lay RT. [16] of T. [17] vnto *om.* R.
[18] gise þe nombre of xv C goode T. [19] good TR.
[20] vnto T. [21] *leaf* 129. [22] a downe T. [23] of dyuerise T.
[24] and forto T.

most playne groun[d]e. And þerfore þe King assyngned þe Prio*ur* of Kilmaynon with is power, and logged hy*m* on þe northe syde of the oste, to stoppe hir passage, and was be þe forest of Lions; and of his[1] ordinaunce þei were fulle gladde. And þai[2] went forthe yn haste, and kept the[3] grounde, and þe place þat þe King & his counsel hadde assygned vnto ham; and þai quitte ham as gode warrioures vnto þe[4] King.

¶ Now wyl y telle you which were þe Chyff Capteyne3 & gou*er*nowres of þis cete of Roone: Mouns*er* Guy Botelere was chyff capteyne, bothe of the cite & of the castell; and Mouns*er* Turmegan, he was capten of þe[5] Port de Caux; Mouns*er* le Roch was[6] capteyn de Syne; Mounse*r* Antony, he was lieutenaunt to Mounse*r* Guy[7] Botelere; Henry Chaunfewe, he was capteyne of the[8] Port de Pount, Iohn Mat*ri*bas, he was capteyne of the Port de la Chastell; Mouns*er* de Peneux, he was capteyne of þe Port[9] Saint Hillary; þe Bastarde of Tyne, he was capteyn of the Port Martivile; and graunt Iake3, a worthi warryour, he was capteyn of alle[10] warryoures, and[11] gouernoure outwarde, bothe on horsbak & on foote, of alle men of arme3: whenne þei issued out of the cite, of alle þe portis, he hem arayed as þey schulde countre with our meyne. ¶ And ech of these capteyne3 hadde[12] v M[l] men of arme3, & some mo. And at[13] þe first comyng of[14] oure King, þ*er*e were noumbred be heroudes ynto an CCC M[l] of men,[15] wymmen, & childryn, what yong & olde. And among alle þese was many a manful man of his hand; and so þay prevyd ham whanne þei issued out of þe cite, bothe on horsbak & on foote, for þay come neu*er* out at on gate alone, but at iij or iiij; and at eu*er*y gate .ij. or iij. M[l] of gode men of arme3, and[16] manfully counted with our Englisch-men, & moche pople slayne dyu*er*s tyme3 with Gune3, quarell, & o*þer*[17] ordynaunce3. And þis sege endured xx[ti] woke3; and eu*er* þai of the toun hopyd[18] for to haue be rescued; but þ*er* come non. ¶ So at þe[19] laste, þei kept so longe þe toun þat þ*er*e deied mony thowsande3 withynne þe toune for defaute of mete, of[20] men, wy*m*men and chyldryn; for þay had ete al her hors, doggis and

[1] þis T. [2] so þei TR. [3] kepte þe TR. kept Kk. [4] her T. hir R.
[5] þe *om.* T. [6] he was TR. [7] Guy de TR. [8] de T.
[9] Port de T. port of R. [10] alle the T. alle þe R.
[11] and he was TR. [12] ladde T. [13] And whenne aſt T.
[14] was of T. [15] men and T.
[16] goode men*n*es bodies y armyd and T. gode menne3 bodie3 yarmed and R. [17] o*þer om.* R.
[18] hopid T. hoped R. hopyp Kk. [19] þe *om.* T. [20] bo*þe* of T.

catte3, þat were yn the toun. And ofte tyme3 þe men of arme3 droff out þe pore pepyl at the gatis of the toune3, for spendyng of vitayle; and anon our Englischmen droff ham yn-to þe toun agayne. So at þe[1] last, þe capteyne3 of the toun, seyng þe myschif þat þay were nou3t rescued, and also þe scarcite of vitayle, & þat þe peple so deied for defaute of mete, euery daye mony thowsande3, and also saue yonge childryn lye & sowke her modir pappis þat weryn ded, þan anon þey sent vnto[2] þe [3]King, besechinge him [4]of his grete mercy & grace,[3] and brou3t þe keyes of[5] þe toun vnto the Kinge, and delyuered the toun to[6] hym; and alle[7] soudere3 voyded the toun, with hir hors & harne3; and þe comune3 of the toun for[8] to abyde and dwelle stille yn the toun, yerely to pay hym[9] and to his successours, for al maner custome3, see[10] seruie3 & quateryme3 [*blank*] Marc. ¶ And þanne þe King entred yn-to þe toun, & restyd hym yn the Castell tylle þe toun were sette yn rewle and gouernawnce.

[1] þe *om.* T. [2] to TR.
[3—3] king bisekyng him of grace and mercy T. king besechinge him of his grace and mercy R. besechinge him *om.* Kk.
[4] *leaf* 129, *back.* [5] of TR. to Kk. [6] vnto T. [7] alle þe TR
[8] for *om.* T. [9] to him TR. [10] and fee T. and see R.

APPENDIX C.

FULLER VERSION OF THE TIME FROM 1399-1401.

Compare p. 361, l. 16 ff.

[*MS. Rawlinson, B.* 173.]

[1]And at Oxonford were take *Sir* Thomas Blounte, knight, and Benet Cely, knight, & Thomas WyntershiH, Squier. ¶ And these were be-hedyd and quarterd; And the knightes hedes were set on poles, and brought to Londoñ, and set on Londoñ Brygge; And the quarters sent forth to other places and townes. And in the same yere, at PriteweH, in a Mille in Essex, there was *Sir* Iohn Holand, the Duke of Excestre, take with the commons of the Contre. ¶ And they brought him from that Mille vnto Plassh, And to the same place þere as King Richard Arested *Sir* Thomas of Wodestocke, Duke of Gloucestre. ¶ And right there, in the same place, they smote of the Duke of Excestres hede,[2] and brought hit to Londoñ vppoñ a pole, And hit was sett on Londoñ Brigge. And in the same yere, at Bristowe, was take the Lorde Spencer þat King Richard hadde made Erle of Gloucestre. ¶ And the commons of the towne of Bristowe toke and brought him into the Market-place of the towne; And there þey smote of his hede, and sent hit to Londoñ, & hit was set oñ Londoñ Brigge. ¶ And in the same yere was *Sir* Barnard Brokeys, knight, take and Arested, & putte into the Toure of Londoñ, And *Sir* Iohn Shelley, [3]knight, and *Sir* Iohn Magdaleyñ, And William Ferby, persons of King Richard; And þey were arested and put into the Toure of Londoñ. And there come the Kinges Iustices, and satte vpoñ them in the Toure; And þere they were dampned aH iiij vnto deth. And þe dome yeue to *Sir* Barnard Brokeis, that he shulde come on fote from the Toure, þrough Londoñ, vnto Tyborne, And there to be hanged, and his hede smetyn of. And *Sir* Iohn Shelley, knight, *Sir* Iohn Magdaleyñ & *Sir* William Ferby, persons, were drawe þrough-oute London to Tyborne, And there honged, and her hedes smetyñ of, & set oñ Londoñ Brige.

And in the same yere King Henry sent Quene IsabeH

[1] *leaf* 213. [2] 16 Jan. 1400. [3] *leaf* 213, *back*.

home ayene into Fraunce, the whicħ was King Richard*es* wedid wiffe, And yaff her golde and siluer And many other Iuellys; And so she was discharged of aH her doure in Englonde. And in the ij yere of King Henry the iiijth, was *Sir* Roge*r* of Claryndoñ, kniȝt, and ij of his meñ, and the *P*rioure of Launde, and vij freris Minours, and so*m*me maistres of Diui*n*ite, and other, for tresoñ þat þey wrought a-yenst þe King, were drawe and hanged at Tyborne, aH xij p*er*sones to-gedyr. And þus was here ende there for her treson.

And in the same yere bigañ a discencioñ and a debate in the Contre of Walys, bitwene þ^{e} Lorde Grey Riffyñ and Oweñ Glendore, [1]Squier of Wales. And this Owen arered a nombre of Walshe-men, And kept aH the Contre Aboute right strong, and did moche harme, & distroyed the Kinge*s* townes and lordshjppis þroughoute Wales, and robbed and slewe the Kingys peple, both Englissħ-men and Walshe-meñ: And thus he endured xij yere large. ¶ And he toke þ^{e} Lorde Grey Ryffyñ p*r*isoner, And kept him ffast in holde tyH he was Raunsomed. ¶ And in the iij yere of King Henry, Oweñ brent a towne of the Erles of Marcħ in Walys, þat hight Kinghton. ¶ And on the morowe after Seint Albones day, was the batayle bitwene *Sir* Edmond Mortymere and Oweñ; And þis bataile was on the blacke hyH beside Pymareñ. And *þer* Oweñ toke *Sir* Edmond Mortymer, þ^{e} Erles brother of the Marche, prisoner, and kepte him long tyme in holde; And at the laste he made him wedde one of his doughters, and kept him there styH with his wiffe; and sone after he died. And þañ the King, hering And knowyng that myscheffe, distruxioñ & tresoñ that þis Oweñ wrought, ¶ Thañ anone he ordeyned him a strong power of meñ of Armes & Archers, And moche other stuffe þat longeth to werre, for-to abate and destroye þ^{e} malice of these false Walshmeñ. And whañ [2]the King come into Wales for-to destroye thys Oweñ and other rebelles, false Walshmen, Anone they fleddeñ into the Mounteyns; And there might no mañ do hem harme In no mane*r* wise; but ofteñ-tymes they toke the Kinge*s* Cariage, and eue*r*y day destroyed his peple; but Owen and his meñ for the most p*ar*ty scaped harmeles, For the King ne his meyne might not come by him in no maner wise, for the Mounteynes. And so the King come into Englond a-yene, for lesing of mo of his peple; and þus he sped not there.

[1] *leaf* 214. [2] *leaf* 214, *back.*

[D]

CONTINUATION OF THE BRUT CONTAINING JOHN PAGE'S POEM ON THE SIEGE OF ROUEN.

FROM THE SIEGE OF ROUEN [1418] TO A.D. 1430.

[*Galba E. VIII.*]

[1] How kynge henry the v. leide sege to the Cite of Rone, and how he gate the Cite with strengthe and manhode well and worthily.

And in the vi. yere of Kynge Henryis Regne [2] the v; the Kynge sent his vncle Sir Thomas Beauford, Duke of Exeter, with othir lordis and knyghtis, men of armys and archeris,[3] to the Cite of Rone, and there displayid her baneris opynly byfore the cite of Rone, and sent herodis to hem that were withynne the Cite, and bade hem yolde vp the cite in alle haste,[4] that was the kyngis righte, or ellis thei shuld deie an harde and sharpe dethe, and withoute eny mercy or grace.

And there he be-hild the g[r]ounde aboute [5] the Cite, how thei myght beste sette her sege to gete that Cite.

¶ And ansuere wold thei none yeue, but meuyd with her hondis ouyr the wallis, as who seyth 'voydith the grounte and the place that ye ben on'; and shotte tho many gunnys to hem. And thanne [6] there Issewid out of the Cite many men of armys, of Frensshe men on hors bakke, and countrid with oure Engelisshe men, and ffaughten manlyche. And there were sleyne and take of the Frensshe men a grete hepe; and the remanent fledden ayen into the Cite.

¶ And thanne the Duke of Exetir turnyd ayen with his pepuH, and come to Pountlarge; and there he met with the Kynge,[7] and told hym alle how he had spede and don in his message.

¶ And now for to telle how thei that weren withynne the cite of Rone, had deuowrid and distroyid alle the subarbis rounde aboute the Cite, into the bare grounde, for the Kynge shuld no refute haue,[8] ne non refressynge haue there at his comynge; and how thei had strongly newe dichid, with many othir dispiteffuH and crueH ordynauncis that thei coude deuyse and ordeyne, with alle the [9]

[1] *leaf* 137. [2] Regne A. Regnyd G. [3] archeris come A.
[4] in haste A. [5] rovnd aboute A. [6] þus A.
[7] he fonde þe kyng A. [8] haue *om.* A. [9] the *om.* A.

ymaginacionys, congettis and sleythis, rounde aboute the cite, ayens the Kyngis hoste, yn-so-moche thei bite and keste adoun the perisshe-chirchis, abbeyis, and alle maner[1] of housyngis more and lesse, in-so-moche that thei hewe adoune alle maner of treis that weren stondynge, in Gardeynys or yn eny othir placis, neighe the cite, and hewe a doune alle the[2] Busshis that weren stondynge, and made[3] aH playne vnto the harde erthe.

And thanne oure Kynge remouyd him from Pountlerge with alle his pepuH, and come before the cite of Rone the Friday beforn Lammesse day. And he made ordynaunce, and leide and set a sege rounde aboute the cite, with moche strengthe and grete ordynauncis, so that the Frensshe-men myght no where in no parties ascape away but if thei weren dede and take. And furste the Kynge loggid hym-self in a Geste howse that is callid an hous of charite, with many lordis and strengthe[4] of pepuH aboute hym; and that was in the Este partye of that cite. And thanne the Duke of Clarence, his brothir, loggid hym wyth his pepuH at an abbey withoute the cite, in the weste ende by the port Kaux. And thanne was the Duke of Exetur loggid with alle his pepuH at Port Denyse in the northe syde of that cite. ¶ And thanne, betwix the Duke of Clarence and the Duke of Exetur, was the Erle MarchaH loggid, with alle his retenewe and strengthe, bi the casteH gate. And thanne was the Erle of Vrmonde and the Lord Aringdon and the Lord Talbot, with alle her retenewe and ordynauncis, next hym. ¶ And thanne Sir John Cornewale, and many othir knyghtis of name, with alle her retenewe and ordynauncis, lay with the Duke of Clarence in his strengthe. And ffrom the Duke of Exetur toward the Kynge, weren loggid the Lord Roos, the Lord Wilby, and the Lorde Fytz-Hugh and Sir William Portere, knyght, with alle her retenewe, and loggid hem before the Porte Seint Hillari. And thanne was the Erle of Mortayne loggid, with alle his retenewe and ordynauncis, in the abbey of Seint Katerynys. ¶ And thanne the Erle of Salusbury, with alle his retenewe and ordynauncis, was loggid on that othir syde of this abbey. ¶ And thanne Sir John Gray, knyght, with aH his retenewe and ordynauncis, was loggid at the abbey that is callid Mount Seint MycheH. And thanne Sir Philip Leche, knyghte, the Kyngis tresorer, with alle his retenewe and ordynauncis, was loggid

[1] all maner A. maner *om.* G.
[2] *leaf* 137, *back.*
[3] & made A. made and G.
[4] & oþer grete strength A.

betwene the watir of Sayne and the abbey, &[1] kepte that ward vndir the hille. ¶ And thanne the Baron of Carewe, with alle his retenewe and ordynauncis, was loggid with his compeny alone by the watir-side, to kepe the passage there. And Ienyco the Squyere lay there nexte hym, with his retenewe and ordynauncis, and helpe to kepe the watir syde of Sayne; and manly and worthili he werrid and faught with his enemyes at alle tymes. ¶ And on that othir side of the watir of Sayne, lay the Erle of Huntyngdon, and the Lorde Neuyle (the Erlis sone of Westmerlond), Sir Gilbert Omffreuyle, Sir Richard of ArundeH, and the lord Ferreris, with alle hir retenewe and ordynauncis, at Port de Pount.

¶ And thanne the Kynge lete ordeyne and make at the Pount-large, ouyr the watir of Sayne, a stronge and a myghti cheyne of Iron, and put it thorough piles[2] faste pite in the grounde, ouyr the ryuer of Sayne, that no vesseH myght rowe that wei in no kynde. And thanne, aboue that chayne, the Kynge lete make a brygge ouyr the watir, that man and hors and aH othir cariage myght passe to and fro at alle tyme whanne nede were.

¶ And tho come the Erle of Warwike, and had goten Domfferauncte,[3] and come doun there the Kynge lay at the sege of Rone; and the Kynge comaundid hym with his pepuH to gon to Cawde-becke[4] and besege hit. ¶ And whanne he come before the toune, the gouernouris of the toune come oute, and tretid with the Erle of Warwike, and seid that thei wolde don and be gouernyd aftur the Cite of Rone; and so thei grauntid in composicion, and asselid it vp, in fuH condicion that thei shuld suffre and lette passe alle oure flete of Shippis by hem, with-oute eny lette or disturburaunce. And so oure Shippis passid alle yn, and come be hem, and comen before the Cite of Rone, and there keste ankre as thikke as thei myght stonde; and so they segid the Cite of Rone bothe be watir[5] and by londe.

¶ And whanne the Erle of Warwike had thus endid and don with the toune of Cawdebecke, and alle the Engelysshe shippis were come vp in the watir of Sayne, and set before the cite of Rone, ¶ Thanne the Erle of Warwike turnyd hym ayen with alle his pepuH, and come to the Kynge, and loggid hym with alle his pepuH betwyxt Seint Katerynys and the Kynge, tille that an abbey

[1] & A. of G. [2] þorugh grete piles A.
[3] Domfferauncte A [*i. e.* Domfront]. do in ffrauuce G.
[4] Caudebeck A. [5] *leaf* 138.

that was in trete there, was yolden to the Kynge; and thanne anon aftur he went thens and loggid hym, with alle his pepuH and ordynauncis at Porte Morteuyle, to kepe that porte of the Cite.

¶ And thanne was the Erle of Salusbury comaundid by the Kynge to make hym redy to ryde. And tho hasty tithyngis come, and returnynge[1] hym ayen, and did hym byde; and there he bode be sidis the Erle of Huntyngdon, tille that the sege was endid, and wonne vp in-to the Kyngis hondis.

¶ And thanne come Sir Vmfrey, Duke[2] of Gloucestre, the Kyngis brothir, from the sege of Cherborugh, wiche he had wonne and gotyn be sawte and good fete of werre, and aftur lete hit stuffe with Engelisshe pepuH, and with vitaile, and with othir stronge ordynauncis, as longid to werre and to worship[3] and prophite to the Kynge of Engelond. ¶ And whanne he was come doune to fore the Cite of Rone, he loggid hym with his pepuH and ordynauncis at the Porte Seint Hillare, more nere his enemyes to the toune thanne eny othir man by xl. rodis of lengthe, with-ynne shotte of Gounne and quareH. And with hym lay the Erle of Suffolke and the[4] Lord Begeyne, with alle[5] her retenewe and alle her[6] ordynauncis; and manfully euyry day they[7] ſlaughten with her enemyes whanne they issewed oute of the Cite.

¶ And thanne come[8] the Pryore of Kylmayne, oute of Irlond, ouyr the see, with a feyre compeny of men of armys on her Guyse,[9] the summe of xv. c., good bodyes and manfuH men to werre, and come with-ynne[10] Sayne Mouth, and aryuyd and landid at Hareflete, and spede hem in alle haste to the Kynge, and come vnto the sege of Rone: and the Kynge tho welcomyd the pryore of Kilmayne and alle his pepuH.

¶ And thanne come tydyngis to the Kynge[11] that the Frensshe kynge, with an huge powere of pepuH of dyuerse nacionys, and the Duke of Burgoyne with hym, with an huge compeny of Burgoynys, of Flemmyngis, and of othir Duche tungis, wold come doun to breke the sege, and keste hem to entre on the northe syde of oure hoste, because that there was lefte entre and moste pleyne grounde.

¶ And thanne the Kynge assyngnyd the Pryoure of Kylmayne,

[1] tidyngis returnyd A. [2] vmffray þe duke A. [3] unto worship A.
[4] the *om.* A. [5] alle *om.* A. [6] alle her *om.* A. [7] they *om.* A.
[8] þanne come A. þanne G. [9] on her contre quyse A.
[10] with ynne A. with G. [11] kyng of Englond A.

with alle his pepuH, to logge hem on the northe side, for to stoppe and kepe the weyis and passagis by the foreste of Lyonys, that none enemyes might come doune that weyis to the sege, with-oute that thei countrid with hem in fight: and of that ordynaunce thei weren fayn and glad; and thei yeden forthe in haste, and kepten the grounde and the [1] place that the Kynge and his counseile had asingnyd hem to; and as good warriouris and as prowde men of armys they shewid hem at alle tymes vpon her enemyes, wherefore the Kynge had hem in heighe cherite for her grete manhode.

¶ Now wolle y telle you who weren the cheeff capteynys and gouernouris of the cite Rone.[2] Furste, Moune-seighnour Guy de Botelere, cheef Capteyne, bothe of the [1] cite and of the [1] CasteH; Moune-*seighnoure* Ternagon, and he was Capteyne of the Porte Cauxs; Moune-*seighnoure* le Roche was capteyne of Porte Denysine; Moune-*seighnoure* Antony, he was leue-tenaunte to Moune-*seighnoure* Sir Guy the Botelere, Henry Chamfewe was capteyne of Porte de Pount; Iohn Matreuas was captayne of Port de la CasteH; Moune-*seighnoure* Peneuxe was tho captayne of Port Seint Hillari; the Bastard of Teyne was tho captayne of Port Marteuyle. ¶ And Graunde Iakis, a worthi warrioure, was capteyne of alle the ordynauncis of [3] oute-warde on hors backe, and on ffote of men of armis, and [4] Issewid oute of the Cite at alle the portis, to don there ffetes yn the poyntis of werre ayens her enemyes; and euyry [5] of these Captaynys led v. M^{li}. men of armys and moo.

¶ And whanne alle the comenmalte weren with-ynn the Cite, men myght sen many a M^{li}; for the heraudis nombrid hem that weren with-ynne the Cite at the bygynnynge of the sege, of men, women and childeren, iij C. M^{li}. and x. M^{li}. bodyes, yonge and olde. And amonge hem weren many manfuH pepuH and hardy, for [6] often tymes they Issewid oute of the Cite, pepuH welle yarmyd, on hors backe and eke on ffote, oute of [7] euyry yate an ij or iij M^{li}. men of armys, welle arayed, and manfully countrid and foughten with oure Engelissh pepuH yn dyuerse parties of the sege. And tho that myght ascape, turnyd into the cite home ayen; and thus thei endurid longe tyme; and moche werre come fro the Cite wallis, as shott of Gounnys and quareH, for thei shot euyry day from the wallis [8] and touris of the cite, with-ynne the space of an houre, an

[1] the *om.* A. [2] of þis Cite of Rone A. [3] of *om.* A. [4] þat A.
[5] *leaf* 138, *back.* [6] for A. for hai G. [7] at A. [8] wall A.

C of Gonne-stonys and moo, and quarellis with-oute nombre; and so thei sloughe and hurte moche Engelisshe pepuH.

¶ And oure Kynge lete make an[1] diche aH withoute, Rounde a-boute the cite, and strongly stakid it, and heggid it, for these prykeris oute on hors backe, and comaundid Syr Robert Babthorp, knyght and Countroller, to ouyr-se that this werke were don; and he did it make in alle haste. ¶ And thanne they issewid oute on ffote, and fought manly[2] as good werriouris: and tho myche pepuH weren slayn on[3] bothe sidis. And they at the wallis and at the touris of the Cite shotten euer[4] Gounnys, quarellis, Trepgettis, Spryngollis[5]; and alwey on[6] the Duke of Gloucestreis side thei diden moche[7] harme, for thei weren loggid nexte of alle pepuH to the Cite. And euyr ther come tydyngis newe that the Burgoynys wold come and reskewe the Cite; and for ioye thereof they ronge alle the bellis in the Cite; and fro the ffirste tyme of shittynge of the yatis of the cite they ronge neuyr bellis but for tho tydyngis tille the cite was goten and yolden to the Kynge of Engelond.

¶ And tho the Kynge wende the Frensshe hoste had byn come, and with good wordis comfortid his pepuH, and bad hem ben of good chere. And anon tydyngis[8] come ayen that thei were turnyd to Paris-ward ayen. ¶ And thanne with-ynne ffewe dayes thei were come to Pounteyse, the nombre of iiij. M[iij][9] good ffightynge men, and welle arayed. ¶ And thanne the Kynge made a kry, and comaundid that euyry mane shuld ligge yn his herneys, and byn at alle tymes redy whanne her enemyes come. And tho the Kynge lete make a lerge duche, alle withoute his hoste, and pight it fuH of stakes ymade sharpe, that wold perisshe, and with turne-pykes, and leid there-by Gounnys redy bent in euyry partye rounde aboute this diche. And the kynge tho comaundid his countroller Sir Robert Babthorp, knyght, to spede in alle haste this were don by his ouyr sight; and so anon this werke was endid.

¶ And anon come tydynges to the Kynge, there as he lay at seege; and this was on the[10] Thorisday, that the ffrensshe hoste lay but xx. myle from hym, and wold byn there on the morough on the Fryday; and the same tydynge[11] come to hem that were with-ynne the Cite. ¶ Of these tydynge oure Kynge made moche[12] ioye and myrthe, and artely[13] thankyd God. And so on

[1] a A. [2] manfully A. [3] in A. [4] euer A. eu G. [5] & engynys A. [6] vpon A. [7] most A. [8] tidyng A. [9] iij M[ii] A. [10] a A. [11] tidyngis A. [12] grete A. [13] hertily A.

the Fryday oure Kynge rode to the Erle of Huntyngdon, and told to hym a wile and a good ffete of werre, and made hym ordeyne ij. Bateillis of men of armys. ¶ And the ffirste bataiH thei and he redenn, and her backes[1] toward the Cite; and that othir bataiH come oute of the wode, with standerdis and baneris of the Duke of Burgoynys armys. And these ij hostis metten, as thei had countrid, and foughten to-gederis; but non did othir harme. And this was ordeynyd and don by the kyngis deuyse and conseile, for thei that weren with-ynne the Cite shuld haue vtturly hopid and trustid that reskewis had ben come,[2] and that thei that weren with-ynne the Cite of men of armys shuld boldely haue issewid oute, and ffoughten vtturly with the pepuH of the sege; but thei dorste not come oute of that[3] Cite at that tyme, for thei doutid and drad, and supposid to hem but trayne, and wold not issewe oute for drede of dethe, as for that [4]tyme, but abodyn and lokid aftur helpe, socoure, and reskewis of these Burgoynes, but ther come no comforte to hem. but yet tho afturward the men of armys issewid oute ayen of the Cite as thei did beforn, and ffoughten manfully with oure Engelisshe-men, and myche pepuH weren slayne on bothe sydis at dyuerse tymes.

¶ And tho it drewe nere Cristemesse; and by that tyme her vitaillis scarsid sore with-ynne the Cite, for they[5] hade nothir bred, ale, nor wyne, but watir and vynegur, that was her drynke. And flesshe nor fisshe they had non, but eten hors,[6] [7]doggis, Mis, Rattis and Cattis; for an quarter of an horse, were he lene or[8] fatte, was tho sold[9] in the Cite amonge the pepuH for an C. s. good payment, and an hors hede[10] for xx. s., and a[10] Ratte for xl. d.; [11]and for xiij. s. iiij. d. thei sold a Catte,[11] and a mows for xx. d.; and these wormys weren bought and eten so faste that vnnethe thei fonde eny for[12] to selle[13] for no money. ¶ And tho[14] was[15] a ferthynge lof boght in the Cite[16] for a ffranke. And thanne hem failid bothe whete, and mele, and alle othir graynys that thei myght make of eny brede[17]; but[18] branne and broken wo[r]tis, and nepe-rotis, and lekis, was to hem mete of grete valewe; for a leke was sold for

[1] redenn & her bakkis A. redenn & her *om.* G. [2] to hem A.
[3] þe A. [4] *leaf* 139. [5] þay A. the G. [6] hors fflessh A.
[7] *From here to page* 402, *line* 21, *to word* "trayne," *missing in* A.
[8] or were he B. [9] sold þo B. [10] a dogge for B.
[11–11] and . . . Catte *om.* B. [12] for *om.* B.
[13] to selle B. to slee selle G. [14] tho *om.* B. [15] þas a B.
[16] in the Cite *om.* B. [17] make eny brede of B. [18] but of B.

xij. d., and an[1] Egge for ix d., and an appuH for x d.: siche merchaundyse was there with-ynne the Cite a gret while; and ther was many a carefulle creature, for her[2] vitailis were alle wastid and spent, and þey[3] myght come to no new by[4] no maner wey; for the sege that[5] lay withoute, rounde aboute the Cite, wold[6] suffre no vitaile come in, to hem, neythir by watir neythir[7] be londe.

¶ And thanne be-ganne the pepuH with-ynne the Cite to deie faste, bothe smale and grete, for the passynge hungur and enfamen that was amonge hem, by[8] C.C. personys and moo day by day; and there as was firste ioy and pryde, and grete boste, tho was there amonge hem weylynge, sorow and[9] care, and wepynge, and wryngynge with[10] hondis. ¶ And though a child shuld deie, the modir wold yeue it no brede ne nought ellis of[11] othir fode, ne wold not departe no morselle though she myght saue the lif of her[12] child of[13] hir body borne, but wold saue her selfe while she myght; for loue and hertly kyndenesse was tho from hem passid. Nor the child wold not profir the modir; for eche of hem caste hymself to leue; for alle kyndenesse and loue tho was[14] sette beside[15]; for euyr the childe wold hide his mete[16] and his drynke[17] fro his modir and from alle his othir ffryndis, for his mete thei shuld not see, for thei ete hit alle in pryuete. ¶ And we may preue by that pepuH there, that houngir passithe kyndenesse and eke loue, that made her[18] vnrightwesnesse and her cursid leuynge and pryde that regnyd amongis hem in tho dayes, wherefore God sent hem a yerd of chastisement. But yet thei that kept the wallis and[19] touris of the Cite rounde aboute, be-cause the pepuH withoute shuld not knowe nor wete of her grete nede and myschef that thei weren ynne, euyr to[20] hold her courte and[21] contynaunce of opyn werre, bothe with shot of Gounnys and quarellis.[22]

¶ But amonge ther issewid summe pepuH of the Cite oute; and they come forthe, and weren take of the wacchemen withoute at the[23] sege Cite. ¶ And they affraynyd hem how it stode with the[24] pepuH that weren lefte with-ynne the Cite. ¶ And they ansuerid and told to the Engelisshe pepuH of the grete nede,

[1] and an B. and G. [2] theyr B. [3] and þey B. and G.
[4] in B. [5] þat þer B. [6] wold not B. [7] nor B. [8] by *om.* B.
[9] and *om.* B. [10] of B. [11] nought ellis of *om.* B.
[12] her owne B. [13] of of G. [14] was þo B. [15] a syde B.
[16] hys mete wolde hyde B. [17] and his drynke *om.* B.
[18] her grete B. [19] and the B. [20] to B. to and to G.
[21] and cursed B. [22] querell and gonnes B. [23] the *om.* B. [24] hys B.

46348

scarste, hungir and[1] dethe, that was euyry day[2] amongis hem. [3]But our folke wold not beleue nor truste hem,[3] be cause that the pepuH with-ynne hilde[4] alle tymes contynaunce like in werre, day be day,[5] as thei did beforne vpon the sege withoute; wherefore thei had[6] hem in[7] no truste in no degre.

And thanne with-ynne a lituH[8] while aftur, the worthi men that weren with-ynne the Cite, gederid alle the pore pepuH that tho weren with-ynne the Cite, man, woman, and child, and brought hem to the yatis, and put hem oute at euyry porte by an C personys on[9] a rowte, and bad hem helpe hem-self in her beste maner that thei myght, for there thei shold no lenger abyde yn no wyse with hem. ¶ And thanne thei come forthe toward[10] the Engelisshe seege, knelynge on her kneis, and wepynge sore, bothe man, and woman with yonge sowkynge children [11]in her armys, and olde febuH men knelynge besyde hem, makynge there a dilfuH crye; for alle they cryed there atonys "haue mercy on vs, ye good and[12] Cristen and worthy men."[13] ¶ And thanne oure Kynge had[14] rewthe on hem and pite,[15] and yaf hem brede and drynke, and made hem turne ayen to the Cite; and there thei kepte hem in the diche, that thei shold not knowe nor here the ordynaunce nor counseile of the seege, ne of her wacche in no wyse, for trayne and treson that myght falle.

¶ And whanne these pore pepuH shuld turne[16] ayen, thei made high sorough and grete murmuracion amonge hem-self, and seyden they had leuyr byn sleyn there thanne go ayen into the Cite, and dilfully, with high voycis[17] bannynge and cursynge her[18] owne nacion, for thei that weren with-ynne the Cite wold not suffre hem come in ayen; wherefore y trowe thei diden grete synne and mys-chieff to hem-self; for meny of him deiden there for colde, that, and thei had byn with-ynne, her lifis[19] might haue byn sauyd and kepte.

¶ And tho was come the tyme of Cristmesse, in whiche oure Kynge did tho grete mercy and relef to his enemyes, at the reuerence of that Glorious feste of the byrthe of oure Lorde Ihesu Criste and of his blessid modir, oure Lady Seynt Marye, that

[1] and *om.* B. [2] day new B. [3–3] But . . . hem *om.* B.
[4] hilde at B. [5] day by day in werre B. [6] had of B. [7] in *om.* B.
[8] litull *om.* B. [9] in B. [10] wolking to B. [11] *leaf* 139, *back.*
[12] and *om.* B. [13] englyssh man B. [14] had grete B.
[15] & pytee on hem B. [16] shuld algatis turne A. [17] voice A.
[18] her A. he G. [19] lyuys A.

gracious and mercifuH virgyne. For, of high pite, mercy and[1] grace, and at the reuerence of[2] that tyme of the holy feste, the Kynge, of high compascion that he had in hert, and of his worthi and excellente manhode, sent oute his heraudis in good araye, bothe to hem that weren wyth-ynne the Cite as welle as with-oute the Cite, on the Cristemesse day self, to hem[3] that lackid vitaile, that thei shold come and haue mete and drynke ynow, in worship of the Feste, and sauf-condite to come and to goo. And thei seiden alle 'gramersis' lightly, as thei had no nede there-to, and set no pryce by his sonde. And vnnethe thei wold graunte space vnto the[4] pepuH of her owne nacion to ben releuyd that layn in the diche vndir the Cite wallis, that thei had drouen and put oute of grete myschieff. But two preestis and iiij seruauntis for[5] to brynge hem vitailles, mete and drynke; and if ther come eny moo personys, thei wold shete to hem and sle hem to dethe. ¶ And thanne weren alle these pore pepuH set arowe; and these two preestis with her iiij. seruauntis broughten hem plente of mete and drynke, of the Kyngis gracious almys; and so thei weren at[6] that tyme made welle at eese; and replete of mete and drynke. And as thei sete her mete to fonge, this talkynge thei had amongis hem. ¶ "A, almyghty God," thanne thei seide, "the[7] Engelisshe-men by[8] of good and treue[9] herte! Lo, how here this excellent Prynce and Kynge that we thought neuyr to[10] obey vnto, ne neuyr profre ne don hym homage, now hathe he on vs more pite and compassion by a M[li]11 thanne hathe oure owne nacion; therefore, oure Lord God, that art fuH of myght, graunte hym grace to wynne and gete his trewe right!" Thus the pore pepuH for the Kynge prayde; that God kepe and mayntene hym in alle his nedis. ¶ Whanne thei had thus seruyd alle the pore pepuH with mete and drynke, and were welle reffresshid, oure folke turnyd ayen to[12] the Kynge, for the trewse lastid no lengur but that same day.

¶ And whanne the nyght be-ganne to apere and shewe, thanne thei on the wallis beganne newe werre ayen vpon the seege, and wacchidden a ward that[13] fuH streyte bothe day and nyght with hungir smerte, for that tyme her vitaiH weren alle wastid and spente. And meny a worthy body for defaute of lyuelod of mete

[1] and A. an G. [2] of *om.* A. [3] þeym A. [4] the pore A. [5] for *om.* A. [6] at *om.* A. [7] þese A. [8] ben A. [9] treue A. treue of G. [10] to *om.* A. [11] M[li] parte A. [12] vnto A. [13] þat was A.

and drynke was[1] spent and ded, for euyr grete houngir brekithe herd stonen waH yn hir grete nede; for euyr the lif is dere and suete.

¶ Thanne alle the Capteynys of that Cite, bothe Baillis, Burgeses and comunnalte, toke her counseiH with-ynne hem self to trete with the Kynge; and with the pepuH the cause pryncipaH for the high myschieff that tho was amongis hem[2] of enfamenynge for hungir; for thei knewe welle thei myght note longe endure so; and for the sodeyne and [3]multitude dethe that was euyry day amonges hem for lakke of ffode, vpon the New Yeris Euyn at nyght, the pepuH with-ynne come to the wallis at euyry porte to the seege, and clepedyn a knyght to speke with hem; and there was non man that tyme that hem herd tille thei come to the Porte de Pounte of Sayne. ¶ And that was on that side[4] as the Erle of Huntyngdon kepte the ward. And there thei weren herd, and answerid tho ayen, and askid what thei wold: and thei ansuerid and seid, and prayed at the [5] reuerence of AHmyghty God,[6] if ther were eny gentiH knyght that wold here her complaynte, and bere her erende vnto the Kynge. ¶ And thanne oon ansuerid and seid, he was a knyght; and thei preyd hym to telle hys name. And he seid, "my name ys Vmfreuyle;" and thei thankid God and oure Lady that thei had mette with hym, for he was of the old blode of that contre of Normandye; "and we praye you to helpe vs haue an ende betwene youre Kynge and vs." And he seid, "what is youre wille?" and thei seid at fewe wordis: "we haue byn at euyry porte of the[7] City there these Pryncis loggyn before, and haue callid aftur speche of hem; but we coude haue non ansuere: ffirste at the Duke of Clarence, the excellente prynce; and from thens to the Duke of Gloucestre, his worthi brothir; and ofte we clepid, and longe there stode; and so we come doune to the Duke of Exeture, and there we gate non ansuere.

The starving Rouenes can't get Lord Warwick or the Earl Marshal to listen to them.

"And at Warwike, that Erle so fre,
We callid ofte: it wold not be;
And at the Erle MarchaH we were.
ther was no wight that wold us ansuere.
And we haue clepid at aH these so moche,
But non ansuere we coude gete truliche;

[1] was þere A. [2] hem A. *om.* G. [3] *leaf* 140. [4] side þere A.
[5] the heigh A. [6] god almyghty A. [7] þis A.

therefore we pray these princis, for Mari sake,
And for that Lordis loue that did vs make,
As thei ben dukis of high dyngnyte,
And cheeftaynys of cheualrye,
Vnto the Kynge to prey for vs,
And we may fynde hym so gracious;
And we wolle gon with you also
Vnto the Kynge, and speke hym to,
And beseche hym, for loue of that Kynge
That made heuen, erthe, and alle thynge,
With his witte and his good auyse,—
Aboue alle pryncis he is pryse,—
And for his owne high pryncehode,
and also for his owne worthy manhode,
And as he is kynge moste excellent,
and to God, but to non othir, obedyent,
That regnythe here in erthe by ryght,[1]
But only to oure[2] Ihesu fulH of myght,
And with-ynne hym selff Emperoure,
and also[3] Almyghti kynge and conqueroure,
That he hym-self wold graunte vs space,
and sauf-condite, and alle his grace,
Nought-withstondynge oure offence,
That we myght come to his presence,
xij. men of vs by on assent,
That lordly Kynge to telle fully oure entent.
May we come hym onys to se,
With the myght of God so fre,
We shulH hym shewe, withoute distaunce,
that shalH hym turne to grete plesaunce."
Quod[4] Vmfray: "this y [as]sent;"
and[5] toke his leue, and forth he went,
And come to the Duke of Clarence there,
and told hym[6] this mater alH in ffeere.
he thankid God and his modir eke,
that oure enemyes were be-come so meke,
and[7] that he wold, with good wille,
Speke for hem oure Kynge vntille.

The Roueners want English nobles to beg Henry V to

be gracious to them.

for his manhood's sake.

and grant them safe-conduct for

12 of em to come to him.

Umfraville agrees, and asks the Duke of Clarence

to speak to Henry V.

[1] right A. nyght Kk. [2] oure lord A. [3] also a A.
[4] Ox A. [5] he A. [6] hym *om.* A. [7] & seide A.

lo, so sone this good lord hem vndirtoke,
and her mekenesse he nought forsoke.
he is a prynce forto[1] comende;
but aH to fewe of siche ben founde;
he is manfuH, whanne werre dothe laste,
and mercifuH whanne hit is paste;
Manhode, mekenesse, witte and grace,
Is conteynyd with hym in a lituH space;
he wantith nothynge a prynce shold haue;
Almyghti God mote hym saue!

Umfraville goes to the Duke of Exeter and to Gloster.

Thanne Vmfrey[2] toke his leue,
and his message he went to meue.
To Gloucestre thanne did he goo,
To Exetur the Duke also,
and told hem the tydyngis how it was.
thei thonkyd God of his high grace,
that her enemyes, ayens her wille,
ffor nede of socoure wold yold him tille;

who promise him help.

and seid thei wold, for Goddis sake,
helpe for hem a good ende to make.
loo these pryncis of high mekenesse,—
God kepe hem yn hele and from sikenesse!— [If. 140, bk.]
Though thei haue suffrid peynys smerte,
yet haue thei mercy and pite in herte.

Then he goes to other nobles.

Thanne Vmfreuyle, his leue he tace,
and passid forthe in his space
To erlis and to lordis be[3] name;
and thei hym seid aH the same.
Lo! these cheefenteynys of cheualrie,
how thei weren come in cherite!
therefore God, of his grete grace,
yef hem good spede in euyry place.

and then to Henry V.

thanne on[4] Newe Yeris Day in the morny[n]g,
Sir Gilbert Vmfreuyle come to the Kyng,
and aH this mater to hym he[5] seid:
And there of the cite mekely hym prayed.
oure Kynge seid thanne, be good auyse,
and also at his owne deuyse,

[1] to A. [2] vmfrevile A. [3] by A. [4] a A.
[5] he *om.* A.

to graunte that cite aH her wille :
" let xij of hem come me tille."
of aH his lordis euyry-chone.
ayens it was neuyr oone.
lo ! that high [1] prynce and kynge so felle,[2]
of aH erthely creaturis he is welle ;
lo ! how he hathe prouyd hym self manfuH,
and as [3] a prynce right mercifuH ;
thei that had hym so ofte [4] meuyd,
and also hym had gretely greuyd,
and also [5] put hym yn grete coste,
and of his pepuH fuH meny loste,
And [6] withstonde hym of his right,—
And now thei byn falle in his myght,
and at his wille hem to greue,
yf he wol put hem to myscheue ;
and thanne hym-self to light so lowe,
of her wille to wete and knowe,
and also to graunte hem to trete :
that was heigh mercy and cherite.
Sithe that thei had hym so [7] agilte,
and lithe in hym to don hem ben spilte ;
he grauntid hem [8] grace and *mer*ciful mekenes :
ffor-sothe, a child of God, y wot [9] he is ; [10]
of goodnesse and uertu he wantith no thyng ;
that his [11] preisynge for a kynge.
therefore Criste, for his passion,
kepe hym in [12] right compassion !
whanne the kynge had grauntid, as y haue told,
to Vmfreuyle, the knyght so bolde
The Kynge seid, " sir, whanne shalle this be ?
If thei wille to-morrowe, let see."
Thanne [13] Vmfreuyle of the Kynge leue hent.[14]
And to that [15] cite anon he went.
and whanne he kome at that [16] gate,

Henry V will see the 12 Roueners.

How manful and merciful he is.

when he has em in his power !

He is truly a Child of God.

Umfraville goes back to Rouen.

[1] he A. [2] principaH B. [3] is B. [4] so oft had B.
[5] also had B. [6] and had B. [7] so grevously B.
[8] hem of hys B. [9] wot wele B.
[10] is *þat* doth good ayenst mysse B. [11] is B.
[12] in hys B. [13] tho B. [14] toke leve B. [15] *þe* B.
[16] that *om.* B.

the statis of the cite he fonde the[r]ate.
Umfraville says Henry V will see the
he seid: "y haue be with oure Kynge,[1]
and he hathe grauntid youre askynge.
to-morowe, be-tymes loke ye be yare, 4
12 Roueners to-morrow.
ffor xij of yow shuH to hym fare:
and syn ye shuH gon hym to,
My counseiH y rede that ye do.
to-morow y wote that ye shulle se 8
The rialliste prynce of Cristiante;
To[2] syche a prynce neuer ye spake,
ne so loue a worde can take.
They must take care their tongues are not too long, but speak few words.
Theynke with hert byforn youre tonge, 12
leste youre tongis[3] byn to longe:
speke but fewe, and welle hem sette
To that prynce whanne ye byn mette;
ffor a word wronge oute of ward 16
Might make you to[4] fare fnH herd,
Therefore, of wordis loke ye ben wise,
and sei no thynge withoute good avise."
thanne thankked thei hym fuH curtesly, 20
and of his god lore seid, "gramercy;
that ye wold vs so moche good teche,
or that we come to that worthi princis speche."
he seid "adieu!" and went his wey, 24
the seturday aftur neweyeris day.
Next day at prime he meets the
and at[5] that houre of day be[6] pryme,
Sir Gilbert Vmfreyuyle come that[7] tyme;
of the Kyngis squyeris weren sent, 28
that tyme wyth[8] hym verayment,[9]
[10] and yomen of the crowne also,
with hym assyngny were to goo,[10]
thei went to Sein Hillariis Gate: 32
12 Roueners: 4 knights, 4 clerks, and 4 burgesses.
anon the xij men come oute there-ate:
iiij knyghtis and[11] iiij clerkes,
and[11] iiij burgeys, wise[12] of werkes:
alle[13] thei were clothid in[14] blacke, 36

[1] kynge *om.* B. [2] *with* B. [3] wordes B.
[4] to *om.* B. [5] and on B. [6] at B. [7] by B.
[8] with B. wyth be G. [9] hym assigned were to go B.
[10—10] and yomen . . . goo *om.* B. [11] and *om.* B.
[12] wise B. with wise G. [13] & B. [14] aH in B.

comly of chere, and feire thei spake.
whanne thei were come to the [1] hous of charite,
thenne oure Kynge, at messe was he ; Henry V is at Mass.
with-ynne the chirche thei did lend
the[r]tille that the messe was at the [2] end.
tho [3] come forthe the Kynge withoute let, He comes out.
there as he had knelid in his closet,
with chere so cheuetayneliche,
with [4] so lith light [5] a loke, and lordliche,[6]
and so right solent senblaunt, and said :
[7] to se that lord men mygh[t] be glad.[7]
as sone as the Frensshe-men hym did [8] see, The Roueners kneel to him,
To-forn hym thei fille on kne. [leaf 141]
he blenchid on hem with stately chere ;
he [9] ne wiste what thei were :
thei enclinyd hem with meke speche,
And a bille to hym thei did reche. hand him a Petition,
he taught a lord to take her bille,
and sumwhat he turnyd hem tille :
what it ment, y hard say ;
tretise thei wold, be eny way ;
Thei be-soght hym, for Goddis sake,— and pray him to hear them.
that heuen and erthe and alle did make,
Bothe este, weste, northe and southe,—
'that ye wolld here oure speche be [10] mouthe.'
the Kynge bad hem speke and sey her wille ;
and thei were fayn, and knelid stille.
Thé seid, "we you beseche [11] and prey, They beg him
ffor His loue that deid on good Friday,
And for his Modiris loue so fre,
considre now on [12] vs now, for charite ! to pity them.
the pore pepull that byn withoute, Their poor are starving.
In our dichis rounde aboute,
Thei lien there for faute of breed ;
and for defaute many byn dede. Many are dead.
haue ye pite hem vppon,

[1] to þe B. to G. [2] the *om.* B. [3] to B. [4] And with B.
[5] hygh B. [6] lordshyppe B. [7–7] to . . . glad *om.* B.
[8] did *om.* B. [9] As he B. [10] by B.
[11] byseche yow B. [12] consider & tender B.

and yeue hem leue[1] thens to gon."
Henry V tells the 12 Roueners
ffuH still the Kynge stode aH[2] that while,
and nouthir did[3] laugh nor smyle;
but with a countynaunce so clere,
and also with a cheuetaynly chere,
nothir[4] to myld nothir[5] to straunge,
But ay in oon withoute chaunge,
his countenaunce did not abate,
but alwey stode in oon astate.
And tho hym luste to yeue ansuere,
that he didn't put their poor folk in the city ditch.
he seide: "y put hem not there,
into the diche of that cite;
I put hem not there; and that wote ye.
Thei were not put there at myn ordynaunce,
ne non shuH passe at my suffraunce;
Thei abode there while thei mought;"—
and so he seide to hem fuH ryght;[6]—
"and as to you, ye knoue welle this:
They have offendid him, and kept his city from him.
ye haue offendid me with mys,
and from me kepte my cite,
the whiche that is[7] heritage fre,
and[8] shuld be my liege men."
They plead
They ansuerid and seid thanne:
"Off this cite that we here kepte,
we haue a charge, and that a depe.
hit vs bitak[9] oure souyrayn liege.[10]
For to deffend hit from saught or[11] sege;
that they are the lieges of their king,
and we ben his liege men born,
and also holesy to hym we ben sworn.
and also of the Duke of Burgoyne so fre,
A grete charge of hym had we;
but wold ye now, of youre highe grace,
and ask leave to warn him and the Duke of Burgundy of their state.
Graunte vs alle lif and space,
that summe of vs myght to hem goo,
and warne hem botho of oure woo,
and of oure ferthe vs to excuse;

[1] hem leve B. heue G. [2] stode all B. all G.
[3] noþer did B. nouthir G. [4] not B. [5] nor B.
[6] ryght B. sothe G. [7] is myn B. [8] and ye B.
[9] hit was bytake B. hit vs bite G. [10] liege B. kynge G.
[11] & A.

ffor many of vs woH hem refuse,
and to you yelden oure [1] cite,
and alle youre owne liege men be."
The Kynge seid, "y do you oute of doute,
My cite y wolle not gon withoute.
and as touchynge to [2] youre Frensshe liege,
ye [3] wote welle that y hold this sege;
and the Duke of Burgoyne also,
alle thei wete welle, bothe two;
ffor alle the [4] while that y here haue byn,
Messageris haue go betwene;
and yf thei like to neigh me nere,
thei weten welle to ffynde me here;
ffor y wolle not hens goo
withoute my right, for frynde nor ffoo,
sith thei so longe beforn it knewe.
and nowe to sende hem message newe,
it were to [5] hem no newelte,
and to us [6] but superfluite.
Siche message wol y non sende;
it is no nede, so God me amende!"
And whanne the Kynge had yeue that ansuere,
of the [7] mater spake thei no more;
þay [8] seiden, "feire it is to wynne
Rone, with the men that [9] ben ther-ynne."
The Kynge seid: "it is myn owne londe;
I woH it wynne, though ye it with-stonde,
and ye mowe there-ynne so deserue,
ye shuH be reward aftur [10] as ye serue!"
with that word thei weren aflayid.
thanne spake a clerke, and thus he seid:
"souyrayne lord, if [11] ye woH take hede
In stori that ye may rede,
how ij sheuetaynys a day had set,
and with ther [12] hostis thei weren met,
bothe arayid in a felde,

The Rouenes will yield Rouen to Henry V.

He says he will not go without his city.

Their French King and the Duke have known of the siege

It's no use to send em a message,

and by God he'll not send one.

He'll win Rouen; and if they oppose him, they'll suffer.

A clerk tells him a story:

2 hosts met to fight.

[1] youre A. [2] to *om.* A. [3] he A. [4] þay A.
[5] to A. to no G. [6] us now A. [7] þat A.
[8] þay A. then G. [9] that A. that that G.
[10] after *om.* A. [11] y A. [12] her A.

and weren redi batalle to yelde :
The weaker brought the stronger bread and wine, to make them merciful.
The weyker party of the men
thanne brought the biger parti brede and wyn,
In tokenyng that thei shold be
Grace, mercy, and eke pite : [leaf 141, back]
We Roueners bring you the same, and Rouen.
and nowe we brynge you bred and wyn,
and Rone that cite feire and fyne."
"Rone," he seid, "is my herytage,
I wille haue it withoute fage.
And fro this tyme y rede ye do,
that mercy and grace may come you to,
And at the reuerence of god aHmyght
and of Mary his modir, that maiden so[1] bright,
Of trety[2] y graunte you space ;
Henry grants them time.
And if ye wille ye may haue grace."
thanne seid thei, "sir, pur charite,
how wille ye to youre pore pepuH be,[3]
that in diches suffryn pyne,
and for defaute deie as suyne?"
and will consider how he'll treat the starving outsiders.
The Kynge ansuerid hem with wit fuH wise :
"Thereof woH y take myn a-vise,
as God put hert, mynde,[4] and wille,
So wiH y do that pepuH vntille :
as he me redithe, y wille hem rewe."
with that he went and seid "adieue!"
The[5] ffrensshe men, that same while,
The Roueners go homewards,
fforthe thei went with Vmfreuyle ;
And toward the cite as thei yode,
thei spoken of oure Kynge so goode :
and praise Henry V.
Thei seiden, "he is, to oure advise,
of alle erthely kyngis moste vise,
takynge reward to his chere
and to his contynaunce in fere,
To his person and propurte,
to his ffeturis and[6] beaute,
And to his depe discrecion
that is in his possession,
and to his passynge pryncehode,

[1] so *om.* A. [2] tretise A. [3] see A. [4] mynde herte A.
[5] These A. [6] & his A.

and to his discrete and worþy[1] manhode ; — The Rouen delegates praise Henry
ffor he is mercyfuH in sight,
and askithe nothynge but his right :
These vertuis byn a passynge thynge,
That byn with-ynne siche a kynge.
how shuld he do[2] but wynne honour ?
how shuld he be but a conquerour ?
welle he dothe[3] withoute dene ;
God hym loue, and that is sene."

Thus the Frensshe men, of the Kynge *talkithe*,
Toward the cite as thei walkithe.
her leue at Vmfreuyle[4] thei toke,
Into the Cite, and hym forsoke. — and enter Rouen.

On that othir day nexte, erliche,
the Kynge made two tentis to picche,— — Henry V has 2 tents pitcht for the English and French to treat in.
On for the[5] Englisshe, and on[6] for the[5] Frensshe ;
And bothe thei stode in Gloucestre[7] trenche,—
Though the stormys were neuyr so grete,
drie-hedid that thei myght trete.

whanne bothe pauylownys weren pight,
thei went to trete with aH her myght.
Warwike, that erle so wise,— — Our men are Lords Warwick,
ffor in our partye he bare the pryce ;—
Salusburi, that erle so treue, — Salisbury,
and also the Lord Fithe-hughe, — Fitzhugh, and
and the Kyngis steward, Hungurford, — Hungerford.
By name y can no moo record ;
and from that cite come hym to mete, — They meet 12 Rouenes.
xii. of the Frensshe that weren discrete.
hit was a sight of solempnite — It is a solemn sight.
ffor to behold bothe parte ;
To see the riche in her araye ;
and on the wallis the pepuH that laye ;
and on oure pepuH that weren withoute,
how thike that thei walkid aboute ;
and the herowdis, semely to sene,
how that thei went ay betwene ;

[1] & worþv A. and G. [2] be A. [3] with A.
[4] vmfreuyleuyle G. [5] the *om.* A. [6] & an oþer A.
[7] Gloucescestre G.

The Heralds

the Kyngis horoudis and pursiuauntis
In cotis of armys amyunauntis;
The Englisshe a beste, the Frensshe a floure,
of Portyngale bothe caste and toure,
and othir cotis of dyuersite,

were drest like lords, adornd with gold.

as lordis beren in her degre.
Good-liche with gold thei were be-gon,
Right as the sonne on hem shon.
this sight was to hem a sory chere;
of sorow and pyne thei weren full nere;

The poor French had hardly a clout.

of that pore pepuH that weren put oute;
thei had[den][1] vnnethe a cloute;
The clothis that weren on her backe,
kept hem there from reine and racke;
The wethur was to hem a peyne,
ffor alle that tyme it stode be[2] neyne.
There men myght se a[3] grete pite.

A child of 2 begd bread.

a child of two yere or thre
Goo aboute and begge his brede,

its parents lay dead.

ffor ffadir and modir bothe lay dede.
and vndir hem the watir stode;
and yet thei lay cryynge aftur foode.

Some had starvd to death.

Summe storuen to þe[4] dethe,
and summe stoppid bothe yen and brethe;
And summe crokid in the kneys,
and as lene as eny treis;

Mothers held dead children up.

and women holdynge in her arme
a dede child, and nothynge warme;
And childeren soukynge on the pappe
Withynne a dede womanys lappe; [leaf 142]
There men myght ffynde ffuH ryue,

10 or 12 dead to 1 living.

x. or xij. deie, ayens on alyue.
and thei knewe not of dethe,
So preuely thei yolden vpe the brethe,

They died noiselessly, as if they slept.

withoute noyse or eny cry;
as thei had slept, so did thei dey.
These were sightis of differaunce,
that on of ioye, that othir of penaunce,

[1] had hem A. [2] by A. [3] see a A. se G. [4] to þe A. to G.

as heuen and erthe had partid on twoo,
that on to wele, that othir to woo.
ther was neuyr[1] kynge so straunge,
To see that sight, but his hert wold chaunge,
and wold considre to that syght,
he shuld be pensiff, and moche light.
there men myght lerne in her lif,
what it is, ayens right to strif;
ffor while it lay in her lotte,
thei were ffull crueH (God it wotte),
and mercy they wold non haue
tille nede come that thei moste craue;
and yet, for alle her wikkid wille,
Mercy thei were take vntiH.
Now of that pepuH let we be,
and of oure tretis speke we.
we hem chalengithe and accusithe,
and thei ansuerithe and excusithe.
we askid mykiH, and thei proferid smaH,
that is yuyH to accord with aH;
tho thei tretid an xiiij nyght,
and yet accordid thei ne myght.
thanne the tretise thei broken in haste,
and bethe tentis adoun were caste.
thanne the Frensshe men hem be-thought,
her owne bale that thei had wrought.
whanne thei shuld her leue take,
thei preyed oure lordis, and this thei spake:
"For the loue of God Almyght,
contenew this tretise to mydnyght;
And yf we clepyn, that ye wille speke
with-ynn that tyme, we you be-seke.
that we mowe[2] haue eudyence
fforto here oure euydence."
Quod[3] the Englisshe lordis, "that, we assent."
thei toke her leue, and forthe thei[4] went.
tō the Kyng our lordis passid,
and tolde hym aH these materis faste,

The sad sight would change any king's heart.

Yet the Roueners had

no mercy on us till their need came.

We discuss with em

for a fortnight in vain,

and break off treating.

They pray for delay till midnight.

Our lords agree,

and report to Henry V.

[1] neuer þe A. [2] may A. [3] Ox A. [4] þay A. the G.

how thei lefte, and in what issewis,
and how[1] thei contynuyd the trewis.
Henry V approves his lords' action. yet the Kynge was mercyfuH in mode:
That thei had grauntid, he not withstode.
Thei passid forthe with simpuH chere,
Into that cite alle in fere.
In Rouen, Sone in the toun it was yspoke
that the trewis was tho broke.
the poor abuse the rich, the pore pepuH alle aboute,
on the riche thei made a showte,
call em 'murderers,' and seiden, "ye fals cherlis!
and also ye murtherreris and manquelleris!
will ye take no reward
to vs tha[t] suffren here so herd,
and deiden here euyry day?
welle we thanne telle may;
and also rennyth vpon oure coste,
and in youre defaute we ben loste.
and appeal to God against them. we pray to God that ye[2] mote ansuere,
be-fore that iuged that suffrid sore
on Caluery, vpon the rode,
and bought vs with His blessid blode,
that ye ben gilty in this case.
we you apele byfore His face!
wold[3] ye obeye you to youre liege,
thanne wold he come[4] lere his[5] sege;
but for youre goodis ye abide,
and for youre pompe and for youre pryde
If they won't yield to Henry V ye nyH enclyne to oure Kynge,
but rathur lese vs for hungerynge.
but ye accord with oure wille,
the poor 'll kill em. right here anon we shuH you kyH;
and he shaH come into his right.
and yf[6] ye it withstonde, we shaH fight,
leuyr thanne thus to lye here,
and be enfamenyd alle in ffere."
they seide they dede it for a skylle.
alle that we do ys for a wile,

[1] how þat A. [2] *þat* ye A. that G. [3] wlod G.
[4] sone A. [5] þis A. [6] yf *om.* A.

to excuse vs to that fode,
[1] that we pay hym but lituH goode.[2]
thei semblid thanne aH that cite;
and euyry man seid in his degre: 4 The Rouenes say they must either give up their city
"no nede is to counseiH goo;
ther is no moo but of two:
ffor to dellyuyre vp this clos,
or to be dede here: this is to [3] chos." 8 or die.
to the Porte of Seynt Hillary thei went,
and clepid oute by on assent.
tho ansuerid hem [4] a knyght anon,
that was clepid Robesard, Sir Iohn: 12 They ask Sir John Robsart
"sirrys," he seid, "what is youre wille?"
thei ansuerid and seid hym tille:
"we you be-seche, pur charite,
And for the honoure of cheualrye, [leaf 142, back] 16
that ye for vs woH speke youre speche
to the Duke of Gloucestre, and hym beseche to get the Duke of Gloster to tell Henry V
So for us to [5] the Kynge to prayne,
That we nought mowe [6] trete ayayne. 20
we wolle submitt [7] to his wille, that they'll submit to him.
and alle that longith hym vntille,
oure prosonys and oure possessionys,
alle to dispose at his discrescionys." 24
whanne that [8] Robesard the Duke had told, The Duke tells the King.
ffor hem to speke in haste he wold:
he meuyd hit vnto oure Kynge,
and he hym grauntid newe tretynge 28
Of Caunturbury the Erchebisshop fre: The Archbishop of Canterbury
at Seynt Katerynys thanne lay he.
whanne he was knowynge of that care,
at his herte he toke it sare; 32
to the kynge sone he wente,
and hym be-sought with good entente, has leave to speak to the
that he myght wende [9] to that cite,
and speke with her spryrytuate, 36 Religious of Rouen
and to be meue of that trete;

[1] & þat A. [2] litil goode A. lituH G. [3] þe A.
[4] hem answerid A. [5] to *om.* A. [6] now A.
[7] submytte vs A. submittis G. [8] þat A. the G.
[9] myght wende A. myght G.

and help a fynaH pees to be.
the Kynge hym grauntid anon right.
Tents are pitcht. two pauylonys anon were pight,[1]
with-ynne the trenche that thei had ben.
the erchebisshop pight his owne betwene;
So was that state of[2] spiritualte
there for to make an vnity.
Negotiations go on for 4 days. They tretid day, they tretid nyght,
with candiH and torchis bryght;
thei tretid iiij dayes in that place,
and then end. and tho made an ende, thorough Godis grace.
whanne they knewe a clousion,
The Roueners the Frensshe men made a peticion;
her worship for to saue,
ask for 8 days, But viij dayes forto haue,
to send to the French king at Burgundy. That thei myght send to tho[3] Frensshe Kynge
and to the Burgoynys, this tydynge,
In what degre they stode, and howe,
willynge hem to haue reskowe.
it was a poynte of cheualre;
Henry V grants them. The kynge hem grauntid with hert fre,
that thei myght bothe knowe and kenne
how that it shuld be, and whanne.
The Agreement is; that if no rescue comes in 8 days, Now to my tale wiH ye tende,
and y shaH you teH her poyntemente:
In viij dayes, as y you tolde,
yf no reskowis come to that hold,
Rouen is to be given up to Henry V. They shuld dellyuere that cite,
And alle the burgaysis, Englisshe to be,
and to oure Kynge, of money sounde,
with £50,000, to pay oure Kynge .l. M^{li}. li.;
and they are to build Henry a castle and more, they shuld vndirtake,
a casteH for oure Kynge to make,
withynne in half yeris, withoute let;
on the Seine. and vpon Sayne it shuld be set.
and thei to haue her ffraunchisis fre,
as it was wonte in olde tyme to be.
And no man withynne her cite selle,

[1] prght G. [2] state of A. state G. [3] þe A.

But citezenys that ther-ynne duelle,
And he that was a Normaunt borne,
And an Englisshe man sworne;
prysoner and[1] othir, as hit was skille,
oure Kynge to raunsom at his wille;
and alle the sowdyouris that there were,
her goodis to lese,[2] and goo bare
In her dowbelettis oute of the toune;
and yet oure Kynge yaf euyry man a goune.
This was the compasicion,
and made be[3] good discrecion.
thanne Graunde Iakis anon present,
aftur reskewe he was sent;
and of that message he was fuH fayne.
to Rone he come nought ageyne;
but a messagere thedur he did sende,
and bad hym haue do, and make an ende,
and did hem to wete (y telle you trewe,)
Ther was no reskewe that he knewe.
the viij day (the trowthe to telle),
in the feste of Seint Wolston, that day befeH,
and this was vpon a Thorysday.
oure Kynge thanne, in good aray,
ffuH rialliche in his astate,
as a conquerowe, there he sate,
with-ynne a[4] hous of cherite,
to resseyue the keyis of that cite.
mow sir Guy the botelere,
and burgeisis of that cite in fere,
to the Kynge the keyis they brought,
and of legaunce hym besought.
to Exeter, oure Kynge souerayne,
comaund the keyis, and to be capteyne;
and the Duke tho charchid he
to resseyue that cite,
and entre in his name that nyght,
and assygnyd to hym many a knyght.
thanne the Duk of Exeter, withoute bode,

The French soldiers in Rouen are to go home bare.

Henry V gives each a gun.

The Rouen deputy to the French King

sends a message that they'll not be rescued.

So on the 8th day of the truce

Henry V

receives the keys of Rouen

and hands them to the Duke of Exeter,

and bids him enter the city that night.

[1] or A. [2] goodis to lese A. goodis G.
[3] by A. [4] an A.

The Duke of Exeter rides into Rouen

toke his hors and forthe he rode
to Benysyn that porte so stronge,
That he had lay before so longe. [leaf 143]
To that yate sone he cam,

with a brilliant suite.

and with hym many a worthi man;
There was neyinge of many a stede,
And shynynge of many a gay wede;
There was many a geton gay,
with mychiH and grete aray.
and whanne the yate was opynnyd there,
thei[1] weren redy, in to fare:

He is welcomd by music,

Trompis blewe her bemys of bras,
pipis and clarionys, for-sothe ther was;
and as thei entrid, thei yaf a showte
with her voyce: thei were[2] fuH stowte.

and shouts

"Seint Gregori! Seint Gregori!" thei cride on hight,
and seide "welcome oure kyngis right!"
the Frensshe pepuH of that cite

from thousands of the French.

were gederid be[3] thousandis hem to se:
thei criden alle "welcome" in fere;
"in siche tyme mote ye entre here,
plesynge to God that it may be,
and to vs, pees and vnyte."
and of that pepuH, to teH the trewthe,

But it is sad to see the

yt was a sight of ffuH grete rewthe:

skin-and-bone folk,

mykiH of that folke ther-ynne,
thei weren but very bonys and skyn,
with ey-on holow, and nose sharpe,
vnnethe thei myght brethe or carpe;

pale as lead,

ffor her colour was wan as lede,

some dying,

not like to lyf, but sone byn dede;
disfigurid patrouys and quantite,
and as a dede Kynge thei weren paynte.
there men myght se an exampleyre
how foode makithe the pepuH feyre:
In euyry strete, summe lay dede,

and hundreds crying for bread.

and hundris cryinge aftur brede;
and aftur longe, meny a day,

[1] & þay A. [2] þat was A. [3] by A.

thei died as faste as thei myght be laid away.
In-to that wey, God hem wisse,
that thei may come to his blisse! Amen!
Now wille y more telle[1] spelle,
and of the Duke of Excestre to telle.
to that casteH firste he rode,
and sithen the cite alle abrode,
lengthe and brede he it mette,
and riche baneris he upsette,
vppon the Porte Seint Hillary,
a banere of the Trynyte;
and at the Porte Baux[2] he set euyn
a banere of the Quene of Heuen;
and at Porte Martuyle he vp pight
Of Seint George a baner bright.
he set vpon the casteH to stonde,
The armys of Fraunce and of Engelonde.
And on the Fryday, in the mornynge,
Into that cite come oure Kynge,
And alle the bisshopis in her[3] aray,
and vij abbotis with crucchis gay:
xlij crossis there were of religion,
and seculer; and alle thei went in[4] prosession
ayens that Prynce withe-oute the toune;
and euyry cros, as thei stode,
he blessid hem with mylde mode;
and holy watir, with her honde,
They yaf the Prynce of oure lande.
and at the Porte Cauke[5] so wide,
he passid yn[6] withoute pryde;
withoute pype or bomys blaste;
oure Kynge, worthili he[7] paste,
and as a conqueoure yn[8] his right,
thankynge euyr God Almyght.
and alle the pepuH in that cite,
"welcome oure lord!" thei seid so fre,
"welcome into thyn owne right,

The Duke o Exeter rides thru Rouen,

and sets English banners on its gates,

on its castle the arms of France and England.

Next day, Henry V comes,

and is met by bishops, abbots, etc.,

and sprinkled with holy water.

He rides in quietly.

like a Conqueror,

and all the folk cry 'Welcome!'

[1] telle *om.* A. [2] kanyer A. [3] her A. he G.
[4] a A. [5] kaux A. tauke G. [6] in passid A.
[7] he in A. [8] in A. lyn G.

as it is the wille of God Almyght!"
The Rouen folk cheer Hen. V on his brown steed. with that, thei cryed alle 'nowelle'
as high as thei myght yelle.
he rode vpon a browne stede;
of blake damaske was his wede;
a peitreH of[1] gold fuH bright
aboute his necke hynge doun right.
and a pendaunt be-hynde hym did honge
vnto the erthe, it was so longe.
He alights at the Minster, and thei that neuyr byforn hym[2] did se,
thei knewe by chere whiche was he.
To the mynstur did he fare,
and of his hors he light thare.
his chapeH mette hym at the dore there,
and went before hym alle in fere,
and songe a responde fuH glorious,
'Quis est magnus dominus.'
hears Mass, Messe he hard, and offryd þoo,[3]
and goes to the Castle, and thanne to the casteH did he goo,
that is a place of rialte,
and a paleis of grete beaute.
and lodges in the city, there he hym loggid in the toune
with riaH and grete renoune.
and the cite faste did[4] encrese,
which is soon plentifully fed. of bredde and wyn, fisshe and flesshe;
and thus oure gracious liege
So the siege is ended. Made an ende of his sege.
and alle that haue herd this redynge, [leaf 143, back]
To his blisse, Criste you brynge,
That for vs deied vpon a tree!
Amen! sey we alle pur charite.

And in this yere was quene Iohna, that was Kynge Henryis wiff[5] the iiij[e], arestid be[6] John, Duke of Bedfford, thanne Lewtenaunt of Engelond, and sent to the casteH of Ledis in kent, to abide the wille and grace of the Kynge.

¶ And in the same tyme maystur Randolf, the gray ffrere, was taken in the yle of Gernesey, and was brought to the casteH of

[1] gf G. [2] hym A. hym hym G. [3] offryd þoo A. offryd G.
[4] dide faste A. [5] henreis wiff A. Henryis G. [6] by A.

Chirbourne in Normandye, for treson that she[1] wrought ayens the Kynge.

¶ And at Wittesontyde the Kynge lay at Maunt with alle his lordis; and there he hild his rialte and feste at that tyme amonge alle his pepuH. and tho was maystir Randulf the Grey ffrere, and his beaupere, brought fro the casteH of Cherborugh to Maunte there the kynge lay; and from thens the[2] ffrere Randulf was brought to London, and put in-to the Toure in prison, by comaundement of the Kynge. And so by processe longe aftur the persone of the Toure and this ffrere Randulf fillen in debate and stryffe with-ynne the Toure ward; and there this persone smote this ffrere Randulf, and sloue hym; and thus he made his ende of the world.

¶ And at this same feste of Wittesontide, the Kynge made two newe lordis[3] in Normandye: that on was the Capdowe of Burdeux, and he was made Erle of Langle;[4] and Sir John Grey, Erle of Tankyruyle.

¶ And in the same tyme come the Embassitorys of Fraunce into Maunte, there the Kynge of Engelond lay, to haue a day of treto to the whiche trete the Kynge of Fraunce shuld come hym self and hys Quene, and Dame Katerene his doughtir, and the Duke of Burgoyne, with the othir counseile of Fraunce. And there the day and place was assignyd and take for bothe pertyes besyde this toune of Melange. And there was the feld rially apparaylid of tentis and pauylownys on bothe sidis, bothe for Engelisshe and Frensshe; and this fild was listid and palid alle rounde aboute in bothe sidis. ¶ And in the Frensshe side stode a pale dichid, for mistruste that they had of the Engelisshe pepuH,[5] and on bothe sidis serteyne men of armys weren assyngnyd for to kepe the fild, and in the myddis of this felde stode a pauylowne rialle, with a large EguH gilte, for Kynge Henry of Engelond. ¶ And a tente stode aforn ayens it, for the Frensshe kynge. And in this pauylown and tente, by ordynaunce made, shuld no pepuH come but tho that werne sworen on bothe sidis to the Counseille, vp peyne of dethe.

¶ And on the Engelisshe partye was ffirste, Henry the King of Engelond, and Thomas his brothir, the Duke of Clarence, and Sir Vmfray, his othir brothir, Duke of Gloucestre, and Sir Thomas Beauford, Duke of Exetir, and the nobuH Erle of the Marche, and

[1] he A. [2] þis A. [3] Erlis A. [4] langvile A.
[5] And þe Englissh side was not but barrid A.

the Bisshop of Wynchestir, Sir Henry Beauford, the Kynges vncle, and othir Bisshoppis, and erlis, barony and lordis, and othir clergye,[1] knyghtis and squyeris, that weren assyngnyd to the nombre of this trete.

¶ And on the Frensshe partye ther shuld be the Frensshe Kynge; but he come not, for his infirmyte was come on hym, that he myght not come there at that tyme. ¶ But the Quene come, and Dame Kateryne hir doughtir, and the Duke of Burgoyne, and xxvj ladyes in good aray, with othir lordis of the counseiH of Fraunce. And vij dayes they tretid and they myght not accorde; and tho weren the[2] pauylonys and the tentis taken vp and born awey, and the ffeld broken vp, and euyry man went his wey.

¶ And tho the Kynge of Engelond, with alle[3] his lordis and all his pepuH, turnyd ayen and come to Maunte. ¶ And thanne this Erle of Gascoigne toke his retenewe with othir Engelisshe men, and come be[4] nyght, and stale the toune of Pounteyse of the Frensshe men, and drof hem oute; and so thei fled; and so the toune was wonne; and there-ynne was myche rychesse. ¶ And whanne the Kynge[5] herd this, he sent his brothir Thomas, the Duke of Clarence, with his pepuH thidur to Pountese, and made hym captayne there-of. And thanne he toke his pepuH and issewid oute, and come to-fore the Cite of paris with x. M^{ti}. men of armis;[6] and there they lay two dayes and two nyghtis, and no pepuH proferid oute to hem; and tho they turnyd and went ayen to Pounteyse.

¶ And thanne[7] the Duke of Burgoyne, seynge[8] that they myght not accorde with the Engelisshe party; tho the duke of Burgoyne and his counseile come to the Dolfyn, there he lay, to trete with hym, to se and knowe how they myght beste voyde[9] the Kynge of Engelond with alle his pepuH oute of the Rewme of Fraunce by theyre good counceiH. ¶ And thanne the Dolfyn and his counseiH tho answerid and seide, "like as he had brought,[10] he shuld brynge hem oute:" and so they fille in altercacion and strif with-ynne hem self; and there they sloue the Duke of Burgoyne and othir lordis that come with hym, in her counseiH chambre.

¶ And whanne tydynges come to the Frensshe kynge and to his counseiH, and to alle the Burgeysis of Paris, that the Duke of

[1] clergie & A. [2] the A. the the G. [3] alle *om.* A. [4] by A.
[5] *leaf* 144. [6] of armis *om.* A. [7] þo A. [8] seyng þis A.
[9] beste voyde A. beste G. [10] brought hem in A.

Burgoyne was thus slayne and dede, and his othir ffelawship, thanne were they sory and yveH payde, and weren tho redles, and wiste not what to don. ¶ And thanne the Frensshe kyngis counseiH, and the grete and worthiest Burgeysis of Parys token her counseiH with aH the countre aboute Parys, and come and tretid with the Kynge of Englonde and his lordis and grauntid hem her askynge, that Henry the Kynge of Engelond shuld haue dame Kateryne the Frensshe Kynges doughtir to wif, with aH his othir askyngis, and the Kynge of Engelond toke his lordis and othir of his men, and made grete puruyaunce and ordynaunce that he wold haue for his maryage.

¶ And so the Kynge wente into[1] Troys in[2] Champeyne there they shold byn weddid; and thedur was Dame Kateryne brought with grete rialte; and there they were worthiliche welcomed and resseyued of aH the pepuH there. ¶ And there the Erchebisshop of Caunturburi, Sir Henry Chichele, and othir Engelisshe Bisshoppis and Frensshe Bisshoppis diden this solempne seruyce there, and weddid hem togederis there by ordynaunce of God and holy chirche, with honoure and grete ioye. And there he made a rialle and a passynge worthi solempne feste to alle the pepuH that come, the Monday nexte aftur the Trynyte day in the yere of his regne the vij°.

¶ And aftur this rialle and solempne weddynge, the Kynge and the Quene, with her pepuH, come doune to Rone, and there they dullid a longe tyme, and in the contre aboute Roone, tiH he sawe his tyme to come in-to Engelond with Dame Kateryne the Quene, his wif; and ordeynyd, or he come oute of Normandye, Thomas his brother, the Duke of Clarence, to be his leef-tenaunte of Normandye, and of alle othir londis that he had in that contre of Fraunce, and lefte hym pepuH and stuffe ynow to maynteyne and kepe his right that he had goten, vnto his ayencomynge, and byraught hym to God.

¶ And tho aftur the Kynge and the Quene come to Caleys, and so ouyr the see into Engelond, and Dame Katerine his Quene with hym. And they landid at Douyre in Kente; and there come a grete multitude of men of the contre aboute, and in goode aray on horsbacke, and welcomyd hem with alle honoure and reuerence that thei myght, and so brought hem to the cite of Caunturbury; and there were thei[3] worthily welcomyd of alle the pepuH of alle the contre of Kent, and yoven vnto hir grete yeftis, and so come

[1] to A. [2] in A. and G. [3] þay weren A.

ridynge with hem thorough Kente, and brought the Kynge and the Quene to his maner of Eltham, and there restid hem awhile tylle they wold come to London.

¶ And the meyre and aldremen, with alle the commnalte of the Cite of London, lete ordeyne and make many[1] diuerse shewyngis and sightis thorugh the high stretis in the Cite, with many othir presentis and yeftis, bothe[2] to Kynge and Quene at the comynge into the Cite. ¶ And that day that the Kynge and the Quene remeuyd from the maner of Eltham, the Meyre and aldremen, and the communis of London, in good araye of white garmentis and rede hodis or rede kappis,—and euyry crafte, a dyuersite on her garnement to knowe euyry crafte be[3] hym-self,—and aH on hors backe, with clarionys and aH maner of[4] lowde mynstrelsie, in honoure and comforte of the Kynge and of the Quene, and to the glorious and riaH sight of straungeris that come with hem ouyr from the see, and for the grete worship of the worthi Cite of London, the Meyre and his aldremen, with the worthi pepuH of the cite, the nombre of xxx M^li. men and moo, abyden and houyd on her hors on the Blake-Hethe in Kente, abydynge the Kynge and the Quenys comynge. ¶ And tho, whanne they were come, they weren reseyuyd reuerently and worthyli, with alle humylite and obeysaunce of alle pepuH and men,[5] with[6] alle the melodye that they had, and so brought hem into the cite, and so to the Toure of London; and there the Kynge and the Quene restid hem.

And on the morow, aftur Quene Kateryne come fro the Toure to her coronacion to Westminster, and tho the Meyre and the[7] aldremen and alle the Commnes of the cite,[8] that is for to seye, euyry crafte in her beste clothynge, with alle her melodye and mynstralsie, went alle on ffote tho, and brought the Quene thorugh the Cite. And there was don and shewid to hir alle the rialte of sightis that myght be don to her comforte and plesaunce, and euyry strete hongid rychely[9] with riche clothis of gold and silke, and of velewettis and clothis of araas, the beste that myght be gotyn; and so the pepuH brought hir thorugh the cite to Westminster, to the Kyngis paleys.

¶ And thanne the nexte day sewynge the Sonday aftur the feeste of Seynt Mathy apostiH in lente, Dame Kateryne the Quene

[1] many riall A. [2] *leaf* 144, *back*. [3] by A.
[4] of o*ther* A. [5] and men *om.* A. [6] & A. [7] and the *om.* A.
[8] of the cite *om.* A. [9] richely hongid A.

was crounyd in the Abbey of Westem*inster*, with alle the grete and worthi Bisshoppis of this londe, with alle the solempnite and rialte that myght be don and ordeynyd; and the ffeste holden in the paleis opyn to alle pepuH, straungeris and othir that wold come, of alle maner rialteis of metis and drynkys.

¶ And on the efter-euyne nexte sewynge, Thomas, the Duke of Clarence, tho issewid oute from the place there he lay, with a lytuH meyne, to knowe and se the place and grounde where the Dolfynnys pepuH, Armynackis and Scottis, had ordeynyd to mete and to fight with the Engelisshe men, and to yeue bataiH. ¶ And as the Duke of Clarence come with his folke by the watir of Leyre vpon this eftur euyn aforn seide, the Erle of Armynacke with the dolfynys meyne and his and a grete nombre of[1] Scottis mette with the Duke of Clarence and his meyne by this watir of Leyre; and there they foughten to-gederis; and at the laste there was the Duke of Clarence slayne, and othir moo with hym; and there was take prisoner the Erle of Huntyngdon and the Erle of Somersette and his brothir, and the Fytz-Watir, and othir moo. ¶ And aftur, the Bastard of Clarence come and gate his ffaderis body, and did so brynge it into Engelond, and so to the abbey of Criste-chirche of Caunturbury, and was there enterid and buryed besides Kynge [Henry] the iiij^e^ his ffadir, on whos soule oure Lord God haue mercy! Amen!

¶ And also in the same yere, betwene Cristemesse and Candilmasse, the toune of Milon was yolden to the Kynge; and all the cheueteynys, with the soudiourys, were taken, and led to the Cite of Paris in the croke of the mone, they myght sey; for of hem ther scapid thens but a fewe on lyue. And sone aftur, Kynge Henry the vj. was born in the casteH of Wyndesore, the day of seynt Nicholas the Bisshop, the yere of oure Lord Ihesu Criste .M^ii^. cccc. xxj., whos godfaderis and godmodris at the fontstone weren these: sir Henry Beauford, Bisshop of Wynchestir, and Iohn, Duke of Bedford; and the Duchesse of Holond was his godmodir; and at[2] his confirmacion the Erchebisshop of Caunterbury was his god ffadir.//

How whanne Kynge Henry herd of his brotheris dethe, Thomas, the Duke [3]of Clarence, ordeynyd a newe retenewe, and wente ouyr the see in grete haste, & leid sege to Mewis in Bry, with his pepuH.//

[1] of meyne G. of A. [2] and G. and at A. [3] *leaf* 145.

And in the vj. yere of Kynge Henryes regne the v÷, come tydyngis in-to Engelond how that Thomas his brothir, the Duke of Clarence, was sleyne by the watir of Leyre, wherefore the Kynge was heuy and wrothe; and in aH the haste that he myght, he ordeynyd hym a newe retenewe of men of armys and archeris, with alle maner of othir stuffis that bylongid therto at aH maner nedis, and went ouyr the se with his pepuH, and come into Fraunce, and bysegid Mewis in Bry, a grete toune and a stronge, with a Castelle. And that Towne and the Castelle weren welle vitailid and eke mannyd; and grete strengthe they had with-ynne hem, and manly they deffendid hem, and kep[t]e Towne and CasteH longe tyme.[1]

¶ And in this tyme, while the Kynge hild his sege of Mewis yn Bry, ther come goode tydyngis oute of Engelond to the Kynge, how that Dame Kateryne his wif, the Quene, was dellyuyryd of a feyre sone, a lord and prynce, to[2] the Rewme ese, profite and worship, and gladnesse in hert, whiche with high[3] and grete worthynesse[4] was brought forthe, and cristenyd in his colage withynne his Castelle of Wyndesore. And of this worthi tydyngis the Kynge was glad, and thankyd God, and so diden alle his pepuH whanne they herd there-of: and that day of this worthi pryncis birthe was on Seynt Nycholas day in the yere of oure Lord God[5] .M^{li}. CCCC. xxj. and the Regne of the Kynge the ix^{e}. ¶ And aftur these good tydyngis, the Kynge, with alle his pepuH, busied sore to gete this towne and CasteH, bothe by watir and by londe and leid therto his grete Gounnys, Trepgettis and Engenys, and bete adowne the wallis in dyuers placis; and so at the laste they entrid yn with strengthe, and gate the Towne; and there was moche pepuH slayne and dede; and tho was the toune wonne and the casteH eke. ¶ And there the Kynge toke many riche men prysoneris, and sent hem afturward into Engelond.

¶ And thanne the Kynge sent aftur the Quene, and aftur Iohn his brothir, the Duke of Bedford, and that they shuld brynge with hem more stuffe of pepuH in all haste. And anon as these[6] tydyngis come to, the Quene Kateryne went to Hampton, and the Duke of Bedford also, with a feyre meyne, and wente to Shippe, and come ouyr the se, and landid at Hareflete in Normandye the vij. day of

[1] tyme for all her enemyes A.
[2] to all A.
[3] hert whiche and with high G. hert with high A.
[4] worthynesse & solempnyte A.
[5] God *om.* A.
[6] these *om.* A.

May in saufte, and alle her pepuH,—thankyd be God!—and in alle haste reden forthe vp in the londe tille thei come there as the Kynge was.// ¶ And sir Vmfrey, the Duke of Glouce*stre*, his othir brothir, was tho made the Kyngis Lefetenaunte of Engelond in his absence, to kepe and gouerne the Rewme in alle degreis, in saufynge of the pepuH and of the lond, that God maynten and kepe in good pees and reste, with good loue and charite to endure! Amen! //

¶ And in the lettur ende of the monythe of AprieH, in the .x. yere of Kynge Henry the V. is regne, was the toune and casteH of Mewis in Biri gotyn and wonne by[1] grete strengthe, by the Kynge and his pepuH, oute of the Frensshe mennys hondis. ¶ And in the firste day of IuyH the same yere, the Kynge sent ouyr the see his prisoneris that he had take at Mewis in Bry, the ffuH nombre of xxviij. personys; and they weren brought in-to Engelond, and londid at Hampton; and aH his prisoneris weren caryed in cartis to London, and so brought into the Toure of London, to kepe hem there-ynne saufly.//

¶ And tho anon the Kynge remouyd from Mewis in Bry, and come ayen to Parys. And with ynne awhile aftur, the Kynge beganne to waxe sore sike, and tho remouyd hym to[2] haue the betir Eyre and hele of body; and his sykenesse come to hym so sore þat[3] he myght not welle endure it. ¶ And so he sent aftur his lordis that weren there, and his counsaiH, and deuysid his wille, and made his testament fuH, and sette his executoris, and deuysid his tresoure and his Iewellis to ben solde, and to pay[4] his dettis, as weH to his sowdyouris as to othir dettouris.// [5]¶ And he ordeynyd Iohn, the Duke of Beedford, his brothir, to byn there Regent Gouernoure of Fraunce and of Normandie, vnto good gouernaunce and profite vnto Henry his[6] sone, and good kepynge in reste and pees of his pepuH there, vnto the tyme the good CounseiH of Engelond myght dresse it and amende it, to set it in pessabuH poynte and reste.// ¶ And he comyttid thanne[7] the kepynge of Henry, his yonge sone, to Syr Henry Beauford his vncle, the Bisshop of Wynchestire, and to Sir Thomas Beauford, his othir vncle, Duke of Exetre, and[8] charged hem bothe to his good gouernaunce and

[1] with A. [2] forto A. [3] hym sore G. him so sore þat A.
[4] to ben and to pay G. to ben solde to pais A. [5] *leaf* 145, *back*.
[6] his yong A. [7] And þane he comyttid A.
[8] & charged hem bothe to hie gouernaunce and kepyng A.

kepyng in his tendir age, for alle the louys that euyr were betwene hem, that no preiudise nor wronge were do to hym thorough noo fals couetous counseiH nor nede.// ¶ And tho the Kynge disposid hym to Godwardis, and toke aH his rightis of holy chirche, and toke his leue of aH his ffre[n]dis, and comendid his soule to God, and deid, the xxix[1] of Auguste in the x. yere of his regne: on whos soule God haue mercy! amen!// ¶ And thanne was his body enbawmyd and dight with riche Spicerie and oynementis, and closid in shire clothe, and closid faste in a cheste; and he was cariid doune to Rone, and there he had his dirige and his messes don for hym, with aH the moste solempnite that myght byn ordeynyd and doon in holy chirche; and from thens he was brought doune by londe to Caleis. And with the Erchebisshop of Caunturbury[2] come the Quene of Engelond his wif, Dame Kateryne, and many othir grete lordis, and knyghtis and Squyeris, and brought the body ouyr the see into Engelond, and come vp at Douir, and so to Caunturbury, and so thoroughe Kente to London.// ¶ And thanne[3] the Meyre and aldremen, with aH the Craftis of London, weren clothid in blacke, abydynge the body of the kynge on the Blacke-Hethe in Kente; and so come doun to seint Thomas Waterynge, withoute[4] Sougthwarke, and there met aH the religious pepuH with þe[5] body, prystis and othir, and brought the cors to London, and so thorough the Cite to Seint Poulis. And there was Dirige don ouyr euyn, and messe of Requyem on the morowe, and whanne the seruyce was doun at aftur mete, bothe the lordis and knyghtis and othir, with aH the Commnes of the Cite of London, brought hym from Seint Poulis to Westm*inster*, and there was his Dirige don ouyr euyn, and messe on the moroughe of Requyem,[6] with aH the Bisshoppis; and there was he burye[d] by Seint Edwardis Shryne, the .vij^e^ day of the monythe of Nouembre, in the yere of oure Lorde Ihesu criste, M^li^. CCCC. xxij.// ¶ And yn that same yere it byfeH so that thoroughoute aH Engelond was a grete yere of ffrute. And in that same yere deiden the moste partye of alle the lory treis thorugh aH Engelond.//

[1] xxix day A. [2] with his herce A. [3] thanne *om.* A.
[4] withoute *withoute* A. [5] the þe G.
[6] messe of Requiem on þe morowe A.

How aftur the dethe of Kynge Henry the v^e^, Regnyd his sone Kynge Henry the vj^e^, and was borne at the CasteH of Wyndesore.//

AND aftur the dethe of Kynge Henry the v÷, Regnyd Henry his sone, that was[1] borne in Wyndesore, that *men* callid Kynge Henry the vj^e^. And for his tendir and yonge age, Henry his ffadir comyttid hym to the kepynge of Sir Henry Beauford, Bisshop of Wynchestre, and to Sir Thomas Beauford, Duke of Exetre, bothe his bele vnclys; and the kepynge of Fraunce and Normandie to Iohn the Duke of Bedford, to ben regent and gouernoure of bothe there, tille that Henry, his yonge sone, by his good counseile wold set it in bettur gouernaunce.// ¶ And the kepinge of Engelond to sir Vmfray, the Duke of Gloucestre, to ben Proptectour and deffendour of the Rewme tille that Henry his yonge sone, by alle the good counseile of Engelond, wold set and put it[2] into bettur gouernaunce, and to moste profite of[3] the Kynge and of the Rewme.

¶ And in the seconde yere of Kynge Henry the vj ÷ Sir Iohn Mortymere, knyght, brake pryson oute of the Toure of London, and was take ayen vpon the Toure-wharf; and there he was foule woundid and bete, and brought on the morow to Westem*inster* byforn the Kyngis Iusticis; and there for his treson Iuggid[4] to byn brought ayen to the Toure of London, and there leide vpon an[5] hurduH, and so drawe thoroughe the Cite to Tibourne, and there [6]hongid, and his hed smeton of, and sette on London Brigge; and thus endid he his lif: on whos soule God haue merci! //

¶ And in the iij^e^ yere of Kynge Henryis Regne, Sir Edmonde Mortymere, Erle of the Marche, wente oute of Engelond into Wallis, and so ouyr into Irlond, to se his londis and lordshippis there, And anon withynne a lituH processe of tyme there, he deid in Irlond.

And also in the same yere Vmfrey, the Duke of Gloucestre, the Kyngis vncle, and the Duches of Holond, his wif, went ou*er* the see oute of Engelond into Henaud, for to take there possession of his wifis heritage of lordshippis and londis. ¶ Wherefore[7] thei were worshipfully welcomyd and resseyuyd for chief lorde

[1] that was *om.* A. [2] put G. put it A. [3] to G. of A.
[4] Iuggid to þe deth A. [5] and G. [6] *leaf* 146. [7] where A.

and lady of the lond. But not longe aftur, hit happid so that he was fayne to retourne ayen into Engelond, and lefte his lady byhynd hym, with aH the tresoure that he[1] brought oute of Engelond with hym, in a toune that me callid Mouns in Heuland, the whiche was sworen to hym to be goode and trewe, and to kepe this lady in sauf ward tille he come ayen to here. But at the laste thei weren fals, for thei delyuyryd the lady to the Duke of Burgoyne; and he sent hir[2] to the cite of Gaunte yn Flaunderis, to be kepte there. // ¶ But, as God wold, in a shorte tyme aftur she ascaped thens in mannys clothynge, and come to a toune of her owne in Selande, that is callid Seryse, and fro thens she went to a toune of her owne in Holand, that is callid Tragowe, where, with help of her ffryndis that there were, she withstode the Duke of Burgoyne and alle his malice. //

¶ And in the iiij^e^ yere of Kynge Henryis regne the vj^e^, there aros a grete debate[3] betwene Sir Vmfrey, the Duke of Gloucestre, and Sir Henry Beauford, Bisshop of Wynchestir; and this Henry[4] bare tho heuy herte ayens the pepuH of the Cite of [5]London; And þis debate bygan on þe day of þe Meyris tidynge of London,[5] whanne thei come to Westm*inster* paleis; and the Meyre of London that tyme me callid Iohn Couentre, mercer. And on the nexte morow folowynge, the Bisshop of Wynchestre hadde gaderyd a grete pepull in Soughthewerke, of men of armys and archeris; and they of the Cite kept tho strongly London Brygge-gate with men of armys [&] archeris, that no man myght[6] in, nothir oute, for to kepe the pees in bothe partyes. ¶ And anon, vpon viij. of the clokke in the mornynge, alle the Cite was vp with her wepyn, and shette in her howsis, and drewe hem downward to Temyse-side, and wold haue apassid ouyr the watir, forto haue taken the Bisshop. ¶ But the Erchebisshop of Caunturbury, Sir Henry Chichele, and the Bisshop of Bathe, Sir Iohn of Stafford, and the Prynce of Portyngale—that in the same tyme were in the Cite of London—went betwene hem and the Cite, that aH was cessid and set in reste by none;[7] blessid be[8] God! //

¶ And in the same yere, the .x. day next aftur that Iohn the Duke of Bedford, and his lady, his wiff, that was the Dukis

[1] he þo A. [2] hir þo A. [3] debate & dissencion A.
[4] this sir henry A.
[5—5] London And þis debate bygan on the day of þe Meyris tidynge of London A. *om.* G.
[6] myght nor A. [7] noone y A. [8] by G. be A.

sustur of Burgoyne, come out of Fraunce ouyr the see into Engelond, to here and to[1] se the welfare of oure Kynge, and to se also the gouernaunce of this Rewme. and whanne he come nygh London, the Meyre and Aldremen, and many crafty men of the Cite, riden ayens the Duke and the Duchesse, and welcomyd hem, and brought hem into the Cite. ¶ And at the Bisshoppis place of Dereham, there thei were herborowid; and with hem tho come the Bisshop of Wynchestre ridynge thorough London, to right grete greuance of the pepuH, saue for the displesaunce and presence of the Duke.

¶ And in the .v. yere of Kynge Henry the vj°., anon aftur the Feste of Seint Hillary, the Kynge held his parlement at the toune of Leycestre. And at that parlement Sir Vmfray, the Duke of Gloucestre, and Sir Henry Beauford, Bisshop of Wynchestire, weren[2] made at on, and accordid, by the Kynge and the Duke of Bedford, and othir lordis that weren there presente.// ¶ And in that same parlement the kynge made two Dukis: my Lord Sir Richardis[3] sone of Caumbrigge, Duke of Yorke, and Sir Iohn [4]of Mombray, Erle MarchaH, Duke of Northeffolke, and there the kynge made also many knyghtis of the Bathe.

¶ And in this same yere deid Sir Thomas Beauford, Duke of Exetur, the kyngis beH vncle, in a place there he lay in the toune of Grenewiche, iiij. myle oute of London; and thanne he was brought into London to Seint Poulis, and there he had Dirige and messe; and from thens thei caried hym to Seint Edmondisbury; and there he was worthili enterid and buryid in Cristemesse woke in the yere of oure Lord Ihesu criste, M^{H}. CCCC. xxvj: on whos soule God haue mercy! amen! //

¶ And in the same yere, aboute Shroftide, Iohn, the Duke of Bedford, and his lady the Duchesse, passid ouyr the [see] to Caleis. And a lituH byforne [they] passid ouyr the see to Caleis, Henry the Bisshop of Winchestre, and vpon oure lady day[5] the Anunciacion, the yere of Grace M^{H}. CCCC. xxvij, the Bisshop of Wynchestre was made CardynaH in Seint Marye Chirche in Caleis fuH solempnely; where weren the same tyme the Duke of Bedford, Regent of Fraunce, and his duchesse.// ¶ And byforne the messe was bygonne, whiche the Bisshop of Wynchestre shold do, tho the Popis cosyn brought the Cardynallis hatte, and with

[1] to *om.* A. [2] wer þen A. [3] Richard þe Erlis A.
[4] *leaf* 146, *back*. [5] lady G. lady day A.

grete reuerence he set it vpon the high auter, and there it stode aH the messe tyme.// ¶ And whanne the Bisshop had don his[1] messe and wa[s] onreuersid, thanne was don on the Bisshop an abbite in maner of a ffreris Cope of fyne Scarlet furrid with purid werke; and whanne he was thus arayid, he knelid there vpon his kneys beforn the high auter; and there the Popis bullis weren radde to hym.// ¶ And the firste buH was his charge of his dyngnyte of Cardynalship; and the seconde buH was that he shuld haue the reioysynge of alle the Benefisis SpirituaH and TemperaH that he hathe in Engelond. And whanne this was don, the Duke of Bedford, Regent of Fraunce, went vp to the high auter, and toke the high Cardinallis hatte, and set it vpon the Bisshoppis hed of Wynchestre; and he bowid and obeyid the Bisshop, and toke hym byfore hym.

¶ And in the vj. yere of Kynge Henryis Regne the vj.e, went the Erle of Salusbury, with a grete retenewe of men of armys and archeris, by comaundement of the Kynge and of alle the Counseile of Engelond, & made hym the Leftenaunt or alle the partyes of Fraunce and of Normandye, forto distroye the Kynges enemyes, and to chastice the rebbellis in the[2] pertyes by his strengthe, myght and power.// ¶ And so he depertid, and toke his leue oute of London, with aH his pepuH and ordynauncis, the morow aftur Mydsomyr Day, in the yere aboue seid, and come ouyr the see with alle his pepuH in saufte; thankid be God in aH his yeftis! and anon as he was come into Fraunce, he set sore on the Frensshe men that weren the kyngis Enemyes, and slowe and destroyid many of hem, and toke vilagis, Tounys and castelles, and made hem be suoren to the Kynge of Engelond. And afturward he leid sege to the toune of Orlyaunce; and that sege endurid longe tyme, for the toune of Orliaunce was so stronge, and well ymannyd and vitailid, that it myght not be goten for no crafte of werre that was don therto; where[of] he was wond[er] heuy and wroth, for he myght note spede of his purpos.// ¶ And tho at the[3] laste, as he was busi to sete and loke vpon his ordynauncis, forto gete it yf he myght, a fals thef, a traitour withynne the toune, shotte a Gonne, and the stone smot this good Erle of Salusbury, that he was dede thorough the stroke; wherefore was made grete doole[4] and sorow for his dethe longe tyme afturward, for the grete doughtynesse

[1] þe A. [2] þo A. [3] the *om.* A. [4] grete G. grete doole A.

and manhode that was founde in hym, and in his gouernaunce at aH tymes. And thanne was his body[1] brought ouyr the see into Engelond, and his body was caryid and leid amonge his aunseteris there as thei byn buryid of holde tyme: on whos soule oure God[2] haue mercy! Amen!

¶ And also in this same yere fro the begynnynge of the monythe of AppryeH into the feste of AH-Haloue, was so grete haboundance of Reyne, where-thorough not only heigh was distroyid, but also aH maner of cornys, for it reynyd almoste euyry othir day, mo[3]re or lesse, durynge the tyme aforeseid.

¶ And forthirmore, durynge the sege of Orliaunce, at the begynnynge of Lenton nexte ffolowynge, vij. M[li]. of Frensshe men and moo, with many othir Scottis, fiH vpon oure men as they went toward the Toune with vitaiH that is callid 'yamuyle,' where Sir John Steward of Scotlond and his brothir, with moo thanne vij. c. Scottis and they weren gouernouris they lighten on ffoote, and they weren, euyry modir sone, slayne by Sir John Folstalff and Sir Thomas Rampston, and othir Capitaynys of oure side, the whiche had not passynge .v. c. of ffightynge men with hem at aH, with Carteris and aH othir.// ¶ But Charlis of Burgoyne and the Bastard of Orliaunce, with aH the Frensshe men sittynge on hors backe and seynge this Gouernaunce, trussid hir packe and went her wey. Also a lituH beforne Witsontide nexte folowynge, was the foreseide sege of Orliaunce broken vp by the Duke of Launsom and his power; and alle othir lordis and Capitaynys of the same sege weren disparkelid, that is so seye, the Erle of Suffolke and his brothir, and the Lord Talbot and the Lord Skalis, with many moo of Engelisshe pepuH, the whiche sone afture weren tâken euyrychone, at grete myschief, prysoneres.

¶ And in the vij. yere of Kynge Henry the vj[e] the viij day of Nouembre, the Duke of Norfolke, with many gentiH men of knyghtis and Squyeris and yemen, token a barge at Seint Mari Ouereyis Brygge, bitwene iiij. and .v. of the clokke ayens nyght; and they purposid tho to passe thorough London Brigge, where the foreseide barge, thorough mysgouernaunce of sterage, fiH vpon the pilis thorough mysgouernaunce, and ouyrwelfid, the whiche was cause of distruccion of moche pepuH thereynne, that was the more rowthe.// ¶ But as God wold, the Duke hym-self, and .ij.

[1] body y A. [2] oure lord A. [3] *leaf* 147.

or .iij. othir gentiH men, tho seyynge that myschief, lept vpon the pilis, and so thei weren sauyd thorough help of hem that weren aboute the brygge, wyth castynge doune of ropis, blessid be God!

¶ And in this same yere, the firste day of the monith of Septembre, Sir Henry Beauford, Bisshop of Wynchestre and beH-vncle to the Kynge, come to London fro the Pope of Rome. CardynaHes, and alle the prestis and religious of[1] London, and ney3 London, went ayens hym yn prosession withoute the Cite, and there they met with hym, and did hym aH the[2] honour and reuerence as longith for[3] siche estate to ben don.// ¶ And the Meyre and Aldremen, with many worthi craftis of London, met with hym on the Blake-Hethe in Kent; and there thei welcomyd hym, and did hym reuerence and worship, and brought hym þorugh þe Cite,[4] and so to Charinge Crosse and there the Meyre and the men of London toke her leue of hym, and he rode forthe to the casteH of Wyndesore to the Kynge.

¶ And in the same yere, at the ffeste of Mydsomyr, Sir Henry Beauford, CardynaH, and Bisshop of Wynchestir, went[5] ouyr the see into Fraunce for the Kyngis nedis; and Sir John Radclif, knyght, went ouyr the se that same tyme, with a grete compeny of men of armis and archeris, to helpe and to strengthe John, the Duke of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce and of Normandie, and the Engelisshe pepuH that weren lefte there in the right of the Kynge of Engelond.

¶ And in the[6] same yere was Henry Barton, Meyre of London. And tho was, thoroughoute Engelond, grete scarste of corne and of othir vitaiH, for oxen and shipe, deiden stronglyche, and a bussheH whete was at xx d°. longe tyme: blessid be God in alle his yeftis of amendement!

¶ And in the viij yere of Kynge Henryis regne the vj°; was hold a grete parlement at Westem*inster*; and that beganne the morow aftur Michelmesse-Day, and it endurid tille Shroftid. And on Seint Lethenardis day byforn Cristemesse, and that was on the Sonday (and Sonday went by lettur A. that yere,) the Kynge was crownyd at Westem*inster*, with honoure, of Henry Chichele, Erchebisshop of Caunturbury, and with moo othir Bisshoppis, with alle the solempnite that myght be made and doon. ¶ And in[7] the

[1] in A. [2] the *om.* A. [3] to A.
[4] hym G. hym þorugh þe Cite A. [5] *om.* G. went A.
[6] þis A. [7] in *om.* A.

same day, come fro byyonde the see to his coronacion and feste, Sir Henry Beauford, CardynaH, and Bisshop of Winchestre, [1] and the Prynce of Portyngale with a feyre meyne of pepuH, in reuerence and worship of the Kynge; and byforne that weren come and abedyn at London a bisshop of Fraunce, and serteyn knyghtis and squyeris with her meyne, to se that rialte, and the Coronacions of the kynge. [2]And the even bifore þe coronacion, þe kyng[2] lete make xxxvj. Knyghtis of the Bathe, withynne the Toure of London. ¶ And in the same [time] in[3] Cristemesse wike, bi ordynaunce and comaundement of the Kynge and of his CounseH, the Bastard of Clarence and Sir Iohn Kyzelei, knyght, and moo oþer knyghtis and squyeris þat were made peti capteynes, with men of armes ande archeris, the nombre of a M^ti^ personys and moo, shippiden at dyuerse portes in Kente and in Southesex, and seilid ouyr into Normandie forto helpe and strengthe the Duke of Bedford, Regent of Fraunce and of Normandie, and in releuynge and comfortynge of aH the Kynges pepull that haue eny kepynge of Ceteis, townys, Castelles, or eny holdis tha[t] bilongen to the Kynge in the parties of Fraunce and of [4] Normandie: the whiche, Criste maynteyne and kepe, for his high mercy!

¶ And in this same yere was a [5] bataiH doon in Smythffeld, at London, the Tewisday the xxiiij. day of Januare, betwene two men of the toune of Feuyrisham in Kente: that on me callid maistir John Vpton, notarye, that was the appellaunte; and that othir, John of Downe, JentiHman, the deffandaunte. And thei two ffoughten togederis, armyd at aH poyntis, to the vtterist; but the Kynge, of his riaH power and grete grace, kryid 'pees,' and toke it vp in his hand, and yaf hem bothe fre grace: and this was the cause of her bataiH, for this Maistur John Vpton put-of[6] on John of[7] Downe, that he and othir moo of his compeny ymagenid and purposid the Kyngis dethe at the day and tyme of his coronacion: whom God kept and saue from aH mysauenturis. Amen!

¶ And in the same yere, the xxvij. day of Januare, Sir Henry Beauford, CardinaH, and Bisshop of Wynchestre, went ouyr the see to Caleis, and so to Bryggis in Flaundris, in embassitrie for Henry, Kynge of Engelond and of Fraunce, vnto the Duke of Burgoyne, and also to se the mariage betwene the Duke of

[1] *leaf* 147, *back*.
[2–2] And the even bifore þe coronacion þe kyng A. *om.* G. [3] in þe A.
[4] for G. of A. [5] a ki G. a A. [6] of *om.* A. [7] o A.

Burgoyne and the Kynge of Portyngalis doughtir, that is cosyn to the Kynge of Engelond.

¶ And in the same yere and day, Thomas of Borough, and Gray, two esquyeris, by ordynaunce and comaundement of the Kynge and of his CounseiH, had a grete retenewe of pepuH, of men of armys and archeris, that weren sent ouyr the see into Fraunce, to the Duke of Bedford, Regent and Gouernoure of the parties of Fraunce and Normundie, in releuynge and helpynge and strengthing of the Kyngis pepuH in oure liege lordis right, Kynge[1] of[2] Engelond and of Fraunce.

¶ How that Kynge Henry the vj^e^ went ouyr the see into Fraunce, the viij yere of his regne; and of the whiche [of] Fraunce that was callid the 'PusheH': how she was take prysonere.

And in the viij. yere of Kynge[3] [Henry the sixt] his Regne, on Seint Mathi day the ApostuH, and that was on the Fryday, the xxiiij. day of Feuyrere in the yere aboue seid, Kynge Henry the vj^e^, aftur his coronacion at Westem*inster*, and ende of his parlement holden the same tyme at Westem*inster*, that the Kynge, by counseiH and ordynaunce of aH the lordis and commu[n]es of Engelond, that the Kynge shuld wende ouyr the see into Fraunce, to resseyue[4] his heritage, and bere the Crowne as rightfuH lord and kynge of the londe.// ¶ And the Kynge, by his good and wise counseiH, ordeynyd and made his vncle Sir Vmfrey, the Duke of Gloucestre, Leftenaunte of Engelond aftur his passage ouyr the see, for to gouerne and kepe the londe ayen his enemyes of aH partyis, and to se that right and lawe be mayntenyd in alle degreis, in sauacion of his pepuH and good kepynge of his Rewme.

¶ And on Seint Mathi day the[5] AppostiH, as is aforne seide, the Kynge come fro Westem*inster* to London, with his lordis and his pepuH, and come to Seint Poulis, and there of[6]frid, and toke his hors, and rode thorugh the Cite, and toke his leue of aH the Commualte of London; and so he rode to his maner of Elthaṁ in Kente, and there he duellid alle the Lenton tiH it was ayens Palme Sonday, and thanne he rode to Caunturbury, and abode there tille estur was passid, tiH his retenewe was made and ordeynyd, that shuld gon and passe ouyr the see with hym into Fraunce.

[1] kynge *om.* A. [2] & A. [3] kynge *om.* A. [4] resseyue & A.
[5] the *om.* A. [6] *leaf* 148.

¶ And thann the Kynge come to Douyre, and on Seint Georges euyn, withynne nyght, the wethur and wynde was feyre and menabuH, and the Kynge waS brought to ship withoute Douyre in the roode.// ¶ And whanne tyde of passage come, thei toke the see, and passid ouyr, and come to Caleis, and landid there in the mornynge at vij. of the clocke in Seint Georgis Day; and that was on the Sonday; and the domynycaH lettur went[1] by. A.// ¶ And whanne he was landid, the Kynge went to the Castell of Caleis; and there he abode tille aH his retenewe and ordynaunce were come ouyr the see. And withynn iij. wikis aftur Estur aforne seid, aH his pepuH, with alle his[2] ordynauncis, weren come ouyr to the Kynge.// ¶ And the Kynge anon aftur, bi his CounseiH, sent dyuerse lordis,[3] knyghtis and capitainys, with her men of armys and archeris and ordynauneis, to dyuers tounnys, CasteHes and Garnysonys of his in Fraunce and in Normandie, for kepynge and strengthynge of his liege pepuH, and kepynge of his tituH and right.

¶ And in the same yere, the xv. day of May, ther was made a Journey in Fraunce bisidis the toune of Compyne; and at that Journey were slayn of the Frensshe men, Armynakkis and Scottis the nombre of .viij. c. of good mennys bodyes; and there were take also of the[4] Frensshe[5] and of her compeny, many Cote armuris. And at that same Journey was take the wicche of Fraunce that was callid th[e] 'PussheH'; and she was take alle armyd as a man of armys; and by her[6] crafte of sorserie alle the Frensshe men and her compeny trystid for to haue ouyrcome alle the Engelisshe pepuH. But God was lord and maistir of that victorie and scomfiture, and so she was take, and brought and kept in hold bi the Kynge and his counseiH aH tymes at his comaundement and wille.

¶ And at that Journey, of Englisshe men weren Capitaynys, Sir John Monuntegomere and Sir John Steward, knyghtis of the Kyngis houshold, with her retenewe. ¶ And there was Sir John Mountegomere smyte his arme vn two; and Sir John Steward was shotte unto the thye with a quareH, and yet God sent hem good hele and welfare, and Scomfiture of aH her enemyes: blessid be God!

[1] wente þat tyme A. [2] þe A. [3] dyuerse G. diuerse lordis A.
[4] þese A. [5] ffrensshe men A. [6] her & by hire A.

APPENDIX D.

ADDITIONAL MATTER FOR THE PERIOD 1420-28.

[*MS. Hh.* 6. 9, *University Library, Cambridge.*]

And þis was doon þe Monday next aftir the Trinity Sonday, In the yere of *grace* M^{l} IIII^{c} XX^{ti}. And anone aftir this mariage was done, the Kyng hym-self [Henry V], with his English lordes and Retenue, And þe Duke of Burgoigne with many grete lordes of Fraunce, with his strength and gou*er*nance of people, leyde sege to dyuers Citees townes & castelles which wer' holden of the Dolphynne, with strength of his meyney, And of the Armenakkis and Scottis. And the Kyng with his people gat theme, and had the victorie of his enemyes.

And in this same yere, And in þe yere of *grace* a M^{l} IIII^{c} XX^{ti}, by-twene Cristemesse and Candilmasse, the Towne of Milloyne was yolden vp to the Kynge; And all þe Chiftains, *with* þe Souldeours, were take and ledde to þe Cite of Parys, 'in þe Croke of þe mone' þei may say for theme; ffor þer escapede fro thens of þeme but a fewe on lyue, for þei of Paris did theme to dethe.'

Wille*l*m*us* Cambrigge, M[ayor] { Joha*nn*es Wellis, Joha*nn*es Botiller, draper } vic' VIII° [A.D. 1420–21].

And in þis same yere [1 Hen. VI] þe Wednysday, þe XXI day of Octobr*e*, in þe first yere of Kyng Henry þe VI, at þe houre betwene VI & VII in þe mornyng, died Charles, þe French Kynge, In his Inne of saint Paules *with*-Inne þe Cite of Paris, And is buried in þe chirche of Saint Denyse *with*oute þe cite of Paris: On whos soule, God haue m*er*cie! Amen!

And in þis same yere, in þe moneth of Februarie, James Stewarde, Kyng of Scott*es*, spousede Dame Joan, the Duchesse Doughter of Clarence, of hir first housbond, Erl of Som*er*sette, in þe churche of Saint Marie Overey in Suthwerk.

And in þis same yere, Maist*er* William Tailour, clerk of Oxenforde, was a-fore the clergie at Saint Paules in London, And þ*er*

he was convicte in heresie; and aftir, by Tempo*r*all lawe he was brought into Smythfelde, & there was he brent for his heresie.

And in þis same yere, þe XVII day of Auguste, was done the 4 bataill of Vernoun in Perche, betwene the Duk of Bedforde, þan Regent of Fraunce, & þe Armenakkis *with* Scottes; but, thanked be God! the victorie fell to þe Englishmen, for *þer* were slain of our adu*er*saries the Erle of Bougham, þe Erle Douglas, þe Erle of Morre, 8 þe Erle of Tonnare, þe Erle of Vendoun, the Vicounte of Narbone (*þat* traiterously slough the Duke of Burgoine knelyng be-fore the Dolphyn of Fraunce at þe towne of Monstrall,) & mony moo, þe nombre of X M[l] moo. But þe moste vengeance fell vpon þe 12 proude Scottes, for thei went to Dog-wash the same day, mo than XVII[c] of cote Armoures of these proude Scottes; So that they may say wele "In the croke of þe mone went thei thidre warde, And in the wilde wanyende come þei homewarde."

16 William Crownes, M[ayor] — Nicho*la*us James, Thomas Wandefford — A° II. [A.D. 1423–4.]

And in this same tyme the Kynge [Hen. VI], of two Erles made two Dukes: þe Erle of Cambrige he made the Duke of 20 Yorke, & þe Erle Marshall Henaud, þe Duke of Northefolke.

And in þis same yere was Shedeswik draw and hangede & quartered at Tiborne, & his hede smyten of & sett vpon London Brigge, & his quartires vnto dyuers yatis of London, for his treason.

24 And whilles þe Duke of Bedforde was here in Englande, þe Erle of Warrewik was made Lieutenant of Fraunce & Normandye, for to kepe & garde both in werre and peace vn-to þe comyng of þe Duke of Bedforde again oute of England in-to Fraunce.

28 Joh*ann*nes Reynowell, M[ayor] — Robert*us* Arnold, Joh*ann*nes Hyngham. — A° V^to^. [A.D. 1426–7.]

And þe Duke of Bedforde & þe Duchesse his wife went vp to Paris, And so to other dyuers partees of Fraunce *þer* as hym list 32 best to abide; And þan þe Erle of Warrewik come In-to Englande again.

Off the takyng off Will Wawe; And how he was done to dethe.

36 And in this same yere was Will Wawe take for an [a]raunt þeef, and was brought to London to þe Kynges Bench, & so brought to Westmynster a-fore þe kynges Justices, & *þer* Jugede to

þe dethe. And so he was brought again from Westmynster to Suthwerk, & þen he was put in a carte, stanndyng, & faste bounde; & so he was cariede thorugh þe Cite to Tiborne, that all men myght see hym & knowe hym, And so he was caried the thirde day of Juyll, And there hangede for his trespass.

Johannes Gedney M[ayor] Robertus Oteley vic' A° VI. Henricus Frowik [A.D. 1427–8.]

How that there ffill grete habundaunce off Rayn; And how dyuers sowdiourz went ouer the see.

And in this same yere, & in þe yere of grace M[l] IIII[c] XXVII, from þe begynnyng of þe moneth of Aprile vnto the feste of All Halowen, was so abundaunce of Rayn that, not only hay was distroied, but Also all maner of Cornes; for it Raynede all-moste euery day, more or lesse, duryng this terme a-for-said.

And anone aftir, as þe Erle of Warrewik, ser Thomas Beauchampe, was sennd oute of Fraunce from þe Duke of Bedforde by all the worthy & discrete counsaill of Englande, he was made maister & gouernoure vn-to the Kynge duryng his non-age, & hym to goueren, teche & norish, as oweth to be done to such a worthy prince, to his lernyng of all maner worthynesse to good gouernance, discretion and reason.

And in þis same yere, an old man, a girdeler of Norwiche, which counterfetede the Kynges grete seale, And esealled charters & protections with þat counterfeit seall, in disseit & preiudice of þe Kynge & of his liege peple, was iugede to þe deth, to be drawe thorugh the Citee of London vnto Tiborne, and þer hangede; & þus he died for his treason.

How that A Breton had mordrede a widdow without Algat. Ca II[c] LXII.

And in þe same yere, a fals Breton, betwen Ester and Witsontyde, mordrede a good wedowe in hir bedde, the which hadde found hym, for Almesse, without Algate, In the suburbes of London; & he bar a-way all that sche hadde, And after toke girth of holy churche at Saint Georges in Suthwerk; but at þe last he toke the Crosse, & for-suore þe Kyng land. And as he went his way, it

happid hym to come by the same place wher he did that cursede dede; And women of þe same parish come oute to hym with stones & *with* canell dong & *þere* made an ende of hym in þe high streit, so þat he went no ferþere, not-*with*-stondyng þe Constablis & o*þer* men also, which had hym in gou*er*naunce, to convey hym forth in his way; for *þere* was a grete compauye of them; & on hym thei had neither m*er*cie nor pite; & thus this fals thefe endede his life in þis worlde, for his falsnesse.

How that An Erityk was take And convicte; And how Kyng Henry ordeynyd to go in to Fraunce, to resceyue þe crown. Ca. II^c LXIII°.

And in þis same yer, & in þe yer of *grace* a-foresaid, Richerde Woll-pakker, of Marc Lane, *þat* was convicte a-for þe clergie, & dampned of heresie, was led to þe Tour-Hill of London; & ther he was brent for his fals & cursed opynions *þat* he helde & mayntened in presence of þe Duke of Gloucestre, & of þe Duke of Northfolk, & þe Erl of Warrewik, & þe Erle of Stafforde, & o*þer* lordes & Jentilles, & afore all þe comuners *þat* were there present of þe roialme a grete multitude.

And in this same yere, þe Satirday, þe XXI Day of Februarie, one Fenables, a Jentilman of Chestre, & Thomas Clement a Drap*er* of London was dampnede atte Westmynst*er* for treason & for þift *þat* thei had done to þe Kynge & to his liege peple, to be drawe fro þe Toure of London thorugh þe Citee to Tiborne, & *þere* hangede & quartrede, And there hedes sett vpon London Brugge.

And in þis same day & yere, Embassitoures of Spayne, *þat* is to say, a Bishoppe, with other grete & worthy clerkis, And an Erl w*ith* knyghtes & squyers,—& these people come to þe Kynge in to Westmynstre Hall the day aboue-saide.

And in þis same yere, on Saint Mathie day, Apostill, which was on a Friday, Kyng Henry the Sexte aft*er* his coronation & ende of his p*ar*lement holden at Westm*inster*, by the advise of all the lordes & comons of England, was ordeyned in þis p*ar*lement a-forsaid *þat* þe Kyng shulde wende ou*er* the see in to Fraunce for to resceyue the Crowne *þere*.

[E]

CONTINUATION OF THE BRUT FROM THE CAPTURE OF ROUEN (1419) TO 1430.

[*MS. Egerton* 650.]

[1]In þat same yere þe Kyng lay at þe sege of Roon; and þe xvij day of Ianuuere it was yoldyn to oure Kyng. on Chyldermesse Day come tythyng to London þat the vj day of Feuer*y*ere the Duke of Bedford, Leuetenau*n*t of Englond, and the Chauncelere, and many o*þe*r bysshoppis, and þe Maire and hys aldermen, *with* all þe Cetizins, made a gener*a*ll procession from Paules to Westmynstre, þonkyng God of the good and gracius spede þat hẽ had gyff to oure Kyng.

And in þat yere was Ludgate for-do, And all the pr*i*soners remeved from Newgate. And þer died lx and x *with*-in xv days. And þis was done for one Olyuer and iij false harlottes, And þer þai died.

And in þat same yere Quene Iahan was a-rested And broght to Retherhyde; And a gray frere was a-rested in Gernesie and lad to Chyrburgh, And sone aftre was broght before oure Kyng; and oure Kyng com*m*aundit hym to the Toure of London, And þer he was do in pr*i*sone.

Richard Whyttyngton Maior. { Wyll*ia*m Boteler; Robertus Whyttyng-ham } Anno Ottauo H. V^ti^. [A.D. 1419–20.]

In þat yere come þe Duke of Gloucestre in-to Englond, and forth so to London; And þer was rescayved and made Leuetenau*n*t of Englond.

And þe Duke of Bedforth, *with* a fayr meyne, went to Hampton, And þer he shyppit and sayled ou*e*r in-to Normandy.

And in þat yere our Kyng weddit Dame Kateryne, þe kynge*s* Doghter of Fraunce, vppon þe Monday next afore þe Trinite Sonday.

And in þat yere was Pount Melayne wone, and o*þe*r fortises many moo: þonked be God!

Will*ia*m*us* Cambryge Maior. Iohannes Welles Iohannes Boteller. } Anno nono H. quintus. [A.D. 1420–1.]

[1] *leaf* 111, *back.*

In þat yere was a wom*m*an brent at CotehyH for sleying of hyr husband.

And in þat yere oure Kyng and Dame Kateryne hys wyfe come from Parise in-to Englond, and so forth to London; And þ*er* were þai ressaued wurshypfully *with* þe Maire & þe Aldermen, and all þe Citezins of London.

And vppon þe xij day of Feu*er*yere, þat feH vppo*n* a Sonday in Lente, Dame Kateryne was crou*n*ned Quene at Westmynstre. And whene þe Solempnite was done in þe chyrche, sho was broght fuH solemply þrogh þe Paleis in-to the grete haH, wh*er*e þe fest was holdyn Off þe Coronac*i*on of Quene Katerine.

Off þe statis at þe **Coronac*i*on of Kateryne,** þe **Quene of Englond, And of** þe **seruyce** þat **was done in** þe **same fest.**

Fyrst, þe Quene Sate in hyr estate;

The Archbysshop of Cannctbury, The [1]Bysshop of Wynchestre, vppon þe ryght syde of the Quene; And þai were s*er*ued next þe Quene, couerd at eu*er*y course;

The Kyng of Scotland in hys estate, vppon the left syde of þe Quene, whech at eu*er*y course was s*er*ued next aftre þat þe Quene and the bysshoppes were s*er*ued.

The Duchesse of York, The Countesse of Hunttyngdon, The Duke of Gloucestre, vppon the same syde;

The Erle of Marche knelyng vppon þe desse on þe ryght syde þe Quene, And held up a septre of the Quenes;

The Erle of Stafford, knelyng vppon þe left syde of the Quene vppon þe desse, and held a-no*þ*e*r* Septre of the Quenes;

The Countesse of Kent was syttyng at the ryght fote vndur the table;

Syr Rit*chard* Nevyle, keru*er*e before þe Quene;

The Erles bro*þ*e*r* of SouthfoIk, Copp-berrer;

Syr Iohn Steward, sewer*er* to the Quene;

The lord Clyfford, Panter, in the stede of Werwyke;

The Lord WyllogHby botelere, in þe stede of þe Erle of ArundaH, The Lord Grey Ryffyn, Napperer;

The Lord Audeley, Aumerer, In the stede of þe Erle of Caumbryge;

The Erle of Warwyke, Steward of Englond, *in* þe stede of þe Duke of Clarence;

[1] *leaf* 112.

The Erle of Worcestr*e*, Marchaƚƚ of Englond, i*n* þ*e* stede of þ*e* Erle Marchaƚƚ.

The nounbr*e* and sittyng in þ*e* haƚƚ fyrst at þ*e* tables:

The Barons of the .v. Portes begone þe table in þ*e* haƚƚ on þe ryght hand Of the Quene; And be-neyth þai*m*, at þe same table, setten þ*e* Bonchers of þe Chauncery;

The Mair*e* of London And hys Aldermen begone þ*e* table in þ*e* haƚƚ on þ*e* left syde of þ*e* Quene, w*ith* oþ*er* co*m*myn*n*ers of the cete;

And beneth þai*m* at the same table, in þ*e* myddyst of the haƚƚ, next þe table of þe .v. portys, vppon the ryght hand of the Quene, The Bysshop of London satt w*ith*yn þ*e* table, The Bysshopp of Bath, The Bysshop of Excest*er* before hym, The Bysshop of Norwych, The Bysshopp of Salesbury, The Bysshopp of Saynt Dauid, The Bysshopp of Bangor*e* before hym.

The bysshop of Lyncoln*e*, The Abbot of Waltham, The bysshop of Carlyle before þai*m*.

And þen next þai*m*, at the same table syttyng, þe Iustices; And afftre þ*e* Iustices at þe same table Satt Wurshyppfuƚƚ knyght and Sqwyers;

And þe ladys beyone þe tables in þ*e* myddys of þe haƚƚ, ffor agayns þe Maire and þe Aldermen of Londone, The Countesse of Stafford*e*, Doghtt*er* of S*er*e Tho*m*a*s*, som tyme Duke of Gloucestre; The Countesse of Marche, hyre doghtt*er*; The Countesse of Aru*n*deƚƚ, [1]The Countesse of Westmerland, The Countesse of Northumb*er*land, hyr doghtt*er*; The Countesse of Oxenford; The lady Neveƚƚ, some tyme þe Lordys wyfe Neveƚƚ, doghtt*er* of the Erle of Somersette; Dame Margarete, þ*e* Duk*es* doght*er* of Northfolk; The Lady Clyfford, Sust*er* of the Erle of Northumb*er*lande; The lady Burgeyne; The lady Talbot; The lady Wylloghby; The lady Manley; The wyfe of Syr Richard Nevyle, doghtt*er* of the Erle of Salesbury, and no mo ladys of estate. And þat table was ocupied w*ith* ladis and damesels, and a quart*er* of the bysshoppis table also.

There lordys sewying were assigne to do þe ryaƚƚ s*er*uyce to the Quene:

The Erle of Northumb*er*land	The Erle of Westmerland.
The Lord Fehugh*e*.....	The Lord Furnevaƚƚ.

[1] *leaf* 112, *back*.

The Lord Feris of Groby ..... The Lord Gray of Wyltton.
The Lord Poynynges ..... The Lord Haryngton.
The Lord Darcy ..... The Lord Dacrys.
The Lord Delaware.

The seruyce of þe ffyrst course.

Brawne wyth mustard ..... Dedelys in Burueux.
ffirment with Baleyne ..... Pyke.
Lamprey Poudered..... Troute.
Codlyng ..... Plays.
Merlyng ffryed ..... Grete Crabys.
Leych lumbard ..... A bake mete in past.
Tartis A Sodelte.

The seruyce of the secund course.

Gele ..... Blaundesore.
Breme..... Cungre.
Soles ..... Millet.
Chevan ..... BarbeH.
Roche ..... ffreche Samon.
Halybut ..... Gurnard rosted.
Roget broyled..... Smelt ffryed.
Lopsters ..... Leyche Damask.
Laumpray in past ..... fflampaun ryaH.

A Sotelte.

[1]A Panter and a damesseH before The seruyce of þe þryde course.

Dates in Composte..... Grene motteley.
Carpe dere ..... Turbutt.
Tenche ..... Perche.
Gogenos [Gudgeons] ..... Sturgeon frech and powderd.
Welkys ..... Porpas rosted.
Munse fryde ..... Crevis douse.
Grete Scrymppys ..... Elys and lampryns rosted.
A leyche called 'whyte leyche' A bake mete in past, with iiij Angels.

A Sotelte : a tyger, and Saynt George ledyng it.

And in þe Ester weke foloyng, þe Duke of Clarence was slayne in Fraunce, fast by the water of Leyre, wyth Scottes, Frenche men, Armynakkys, be-cause he wold not be gouerned, and haue take hys

[1] *leaf* 113.

ost *with* hym. And *per* was take þe Erle of Hunttyngton, The Erle of Som*er*sette and hys bro*þer*. And *þer* was lost þat day in-to a $\overset{xx}{iij}$ good knyghttes: on whos soules God haue mercy! Am*en*!

And in þe same yere our Kyng, vppon the thred Day of Iune, Schyppit at Douere, And londit at Caleis, and rode forth in-to Fraunce.

And in þat yere was grete queraunce in London for vsures; And some of þai*m* left money, Iohn Sadeler, Wat*er* Chyrchey, and many o*þer*; And in þat tyme money was skarse.

Robert Chycheley, mãior. Wilelm*us* Weston. Anno decimo h. v^{ti} Ricardus Crosby. [A.D. 1421–2.]

In þat tyme, vppone saynt Nicholas evyn, come tythynge*s* from Wyndyssore to þe Maire, þat oure Quene, Dame Kateryne, had borne a p*r*ince, a fayre sone. And a-none aH þe belles in London were re[n]gon; 'Te Deum' was songone at Paules; And *þer* was the Chauncelere and many bysshoppys, And þe Maire and hys Aldermen, And aH þe craftes of the Cite.

And in þat tyme þe gold of þe realme went by weght; And eue*r*y man had a payr ballaunce And weghttes in hys sleve for þe gold.

And in þat yere Qwhenne Kateryne went to Hampton, And *þer* made hyr redy to go ou*er* the see vn-to þe Kyng. And *with* hyr went þe Duke of Bedforth*e* *with* a fayre meyne; And þe viij day of Maij sho landit at Hereflete, And so went forth vn-to oure Kyng.

And in þat same tyme Mewes Embry was getten in þe last ende of AprylH. And fyrst day of Iule oure kyng sent to the Toure of Londone xvij Cartes chargit *with* Frenche men þat were hys p*re*soners, þat he toke in Mewes [1]Embry: the nombre of þai*m* into $\overset{xx}{viij}$.

And in þat yere *þer* come a[2] wrytte from þe Kyng vn-to the Maire of London, for to a-rest certayne p*er*sones þe whech were fou*n*d defectyfe in certayne poynte*s* of Erysy and Lollardy, And þeis bene þaire names: Eston, Mercer, and o*þer* moo.

And þat yere died Kyng Henry the fyft in Fraunce, vppon þe evyn of þe decollac*i*on of Saynt Iohn Baptyst; And þen was hys sone Henri made Kyng.

[1] *leaf* 113, *back*. [2] MS. and a

And in þat yere þe Shryves of London went by barche to Westmynstre, And dyuerse craftes of London *with* þaim; And in þis maner þai come home agayne, all in blak. And þis was done be-
4 cause of our Kynges deth: on whos soule, God haue mercy! Amen!

And on þe Monday before Saynt Symond Day and Iude, The Bysshop of London, Mayster Iohn Kempt, was stalled at Paules.

Thes ben þe names of Maire and Shrevis of London in þe tyme
8 of Kyng Henri þe vj, in þe age of hym not xij monethys fulli:

Wylelmus Walderne, Iohannes TedershaH. } Anno primo Henrici
Maior. Thomas Estfelde. } vi^ti [A.D. 1422–3.]

In þat yere þe Maire and þe Aldermen and aH þe craftes went
12 to Westmynstre by barge, aH in blak, þe v. day of Nouember; And þer he toke hys oth in þe eschekere, as þe maner is. And whene he had done, he toke hys barge with aH þe craftis, And come home agayne.

16 Þe vj day of Nouember, The cors of Kyng Henri the .v. was broght to London; And a-none the Maire and þe Aldermen & aH þe Citezins resceyved hym, aH in blak, and broght hym to Paules; And þer he had hys dyryge and masses, and was entered, as it feH
20 for a kyng. And þis was done vppon þe Fryday. And aftre mete he was broght to Westminster; And vppon þe Setterday he was beryd before Saynt Edwardys shryne: on whose soule Almyghtti God haue mercy! Amen!

24 And in þat yere, come Frenche bysshoppys oute of Fraunce; And oþer Frenche lordys and worthy knyghttes of Fraunce come to þe Kyng to do homage to hym, as for heyre of Englond and Fraunce: And þis was aftre Crystynmasse foloyng.

28 And þat same yere, þe secund day of Marche, þer was brent in Northfolk a prest þat was dysgated of hys clergy for hys mys-byleue and hys herysy. And hys name was Master Wyllíam Tayloure.

Also Richard Whyttyngton, mercer, died þe xiiij day of Marche:
32 on whos saule Almyghtti God haue mercy! Amen!

Wylelmus Crowmere, Thomas Wandeford, } Anno ij^do H. sexti.
Maire. Nicholas Iames. } [A.D. 1423–4.]

[1]at xx li þe parysshesens shuld pay xl s; And yf it were of
36 more valewe, þen pay more.

And in þe same yere, on Saynt Gylis day, come þe CardinaH, þe Bysshop of Wynchestre, to London; And þe maire and þe

[1] *leaf* 114.

Shryves and þe Alderdirmen, *with* aH the craftes of the cite, ryddyn agaynst hym, and wurshypfully ressaued hym And Welecommed hym, and breght hym to Paules, And from Paules to Westmynstre; And *þer* he a-bode aH þat nyght. And on þe morow he toke hys hors and rode to Wyndysore vn-to our Kyng.

Henricus Barton maior. Iohannes Abbot. Anno vij^tio henrici vj^ti Thomas Duffons. [A.D. 1428–9.]

In þis yere was þe good Erle of Salesbury, Sere Thomas Mountague, slayn at the sege of Orlyaunce *with* a gonne, wheche was a noble lord and a worthy werreor emong aH Crystyn men: On whose saule, God, for hys pete, haue mercy! Amen! And he ys bered at Bryssham.

And in þis same yere, at Mydsomertyde, Henry Beauford, Cardinale, And also bysshop of Wynchestre, went ouer þe see in-to Fraunce *with* a fayre meyne of Archers and men of Armes; And þe Lord Wylloghby was made Capten of hys werris. The wheche Cardynale was ordined and purpast for to haue gone in-to Prage, to haue dystroyed and gyf batayle vn-to the fals herytykes and Lollordys. And whene he was rydy, tydynges come þat þe sege of Orlyaunce was brokyn, And þe Lord Talbot takyn, and oþer worthy lordys. And a-none, in aH þe hast, þe CardinaH *with* hys meyne, And Ser Iohn Ratclyff *with* hys meyne, þat was purposed for to haue gone in-to Gyene, went ouer in-to Fraunce to help and strenghe þe Regente, The Duke of Bedford, in þe Kynges rygt of Englond.

And in þe same yere fell sodanly a derth of whete, þat a BussheH of whete was at xx^d; And xxiiij Days, brede was ryght skantt in London, in-so-moch þat vnneth Any myght be gete; bot in short tyme,—þonked be Almyghtti God!—hit was a-mendit; And befe and motun, and Al maner of ffleshe, þat same tyme was ryght dere and scarse vn-to Lammasse; And þen sone aftre,—þonked be Ihesu, of hys ȝeftis![1]—it was a-mendid.

Wilelmus Estfeld, Maior. Wilelmus Rous, Radulphus Holand, schereffyes. Anno Octauo h. vj^ti. [A.D. 1429–30.]

[2]The fi[f] day of Nouember, þe Kyng, wyth hys lordys, ryally rode frome Kyngstone ouer London Bryge, And so forth Fenchyrche strete, evyn vn-to the Toure, to hys mete. And þe Maire and þe Aldermen, aH in Scarlete hodys, rode to mete the

[1] MS. þeftis. [2] *leaf* 114, *back*.

Kyng, And so rode forth *with* hym to þe Toure The Seter*day* next aftre; wher-of were þe Erle of Denshyre, þe Lord Spencer sone, the Erle of Warwyk, þe Lord Beamounde. And aftre none, þe Kyng, in a riaH araye, *with* aH hys lordys Ryally a-rayed in cloth of gold for þe most *part*, *with* the said xxiiij newe knyghtes aH in blew, the prestes rode a-fore þe Kyng ij and ij, from þe Toure to Westm*ynstre*. And þe Maire and þe Aldermen, aH in Scarlet, rode also, and broght þe Kyng to Westmynstre. And at London Bryge was made a toure fuH of Angels And þe grete Condyte and þe lytiH Condite in þe Chepe, rially arayed, rynnyng bothe rede wyne and whyte. And at the Crosse in þe Chepe was made a riaH casteH, And *per*in was grete Wurshyp shewed to þe Kyng.

On þe morne, þe Sonday, þe vj day of Nouember, þe Kyng was crowned at Westm*yn*stre fuH rially. And aH Bysshoppys and Abbotes Copitt and mytred ryally; And aH tempe*raH* lordys rode in þaire estate; And aH o*per* knyghtes (for most perty) aH in clothe of gold rially. And Henri of Wynchestre, Cardinale, as a CardenaH sate in a sete by þe ryght hand of the Kyng. And *per* was Quene Kateryne, moder of the Kyng, And a grete noumbre of ladis and gentiH-wem*m*en rially arayed. And also *per* come sodanly to þe coronac*i*on one of þe kinges sones of Porttyngale, And he was Wurshypfully resceyved. And þat day was a fare day and a clere, blessed be God!

Also þat yere þe *per*lement was eniourned tiH aftre Crystynmasse. Also þe Fryday, þe xx day of Ianuuere, Richard Hunden, wolpakker, was brent at þe Toure-hyH for hys Lollardy and herysye.

The Tuysday next aftre, Iohn Vpton, þe appellaunte, and Iohn Downe of Feueressh*am*, defendaunt, Armed, faght *with*-yn lystis in Smythfelde nyghe an oure. And þen þe Kyng toke it in-to hys awne hand; And þe Seter*day* aftre, at Kenyngton, þe Kyng made an[1] ende be-twene þai*m* bothe; And so þai rode at large.

The *per*lement began agayn þe Monday aftre, þe xij day. And in þe meyne tyme The CardinaH went ou*er* þe see on þe Kynges message.

And also þe same yere, in Estre Weke, þe Kyng went to Caleis, And so to Roon, *with* the substance of aH þe lordes and gentyls of Englond, And left *per* þe Duke of Glaucestre, Leuetenaunte.

Nicholas Watton maior.

(M. cccc. xxxi.)

[1] MS. and

APPENDIX E.

ANOTHER VERSION OF THE TIME FROM 1422-31.

[*MS. Rawlinson, B.* 173. *Bodleian Library.*]

[1]And in that yere [Nov. 1422] come Frenssh Bisshoppes oute of Fraunce, & þis was Cristmas folowyng.

¶ William Crowmere, Maire

¶ Thomas Sandeford[2] } ¶ Shreues, anno ij°.

¶ Nicholas Iames }

[1 *Sept.* 1423 *to* 31 *Aug.* 1424.]

¶ And in that yere the King was brought fro Windesore in a chare to London, and his modre the Quene sitting in the same chare, and he in her armes, and so he was brought to Westminster, and on the morue bigan the parliament. And in that same yere, on the Wednesday bifore Seint Mathewes day, Syr Iohn Mortymere, knight, brake prison, and went oute off the Toure of London; but sone he was take vpon þe Toure-wharfe, bitwene the Toure & the Temysse, & there he was euyll wounded. And forthwith-all he was brought forth bifore the Duke of Gloucestre; And vppon the Saturday he was brought to hys answere, and there he was dampned to be drawe & honged, And his hede smetyn of at Tyborne. And than his hede was take and sett vpon London Brygge, and his body was beried at Iones, bicause he [3]was a knight of the Sepulcre; And hys hede was take downe, & beried with the body: & þat licence gate freier Winchilsey.

¶ Iohn Michell, Maire.

¶ Iohn Bithewater } ¶ Shreues, anno iij°.

¶ Symkyn Seman }

[1 *Sept.* 1424 *to* 31 *Aug.* 1425.]

¶ And in that yere was a generall procession, And a pardoner Riding vpon an horse, and his face to the horse taile, and his billes hanging a-bought hys necke by-hynde and bifore. And whan he

[1] *leaf* 225. [2] *i.e.* Wandesford. [3] *leaf* 225, *back.*

come to þ^e^ Southñ dore of Poules, there was Made a grete fire, and aH his billes were brent.

¶ Iohn Couentre, Maire.

¶ Willi*a*m Mildrede ⎫ ¶ Shreues, Anno iiij^to^.

¶ Iohn Brockeley ⎭ [1 *Sept.* 1425 *to* 31 *Aug.* 1426.]

¶ And in that yere was a grete discencioñ bitwene the Duke of Gloucestre and the Bisshop of Wynchestre; And this was on the same day that þ^e^ Maire rode. And on the Tuesday was mekle of the bisshoppes retenewe gadered in Southwerke, *with* bowes and arowes and other herneys. And thañ the Brige gate was kept *with* strength of meñ of armes. And sone after, vppoñ viij of the clocke, aH the Cite was vp, and drewe hem to the wat*er*-side, and wolde haue passed ouyr Thamyse. But the P*r*ince of Portingale, the Bisshop of Caunt*er*bury, the Bisshop of Bath, entreted, þonked be God, aH was cesed, or none. And the x day of Ianyvere next, þ^e^ Duke [1]of Bedford and his wiffe the Duchesse come to Londoñ; and the Maire and aH the Aldermen, & the craft*es*, ridde a-yenst him, and welcomed him vnto the Cite, And the Bisshope of Winchestre come with him. And in this same yere was the p*ar*liament at Leicestre.

¶ Iohn Reynewe,[2] Maire.

¶ Robert Arnolde ⎫ ¶ Shreues, Anno quinto.

¶ Iohn Higham ⎭ [1 *Sept.* 1426 *to* 31 *Aug.* 1427.]

And in the same yere, in the lattere ende of December, died the goode Duke of Excestre. and in the same yere were founde many false vessels of Romeney, the whiche were made by gadered Galgenet, into the nombre of vj buttes, the which the hedes were smyt oute of in diu*er*se places of the Cite: the falsest gode that euyr any mañ see.

¶ Iohn ReyneweH,[3] Maire.

¶ Robert Otele ⎫ ¶ Shreues, anno vj^to^.

¶ Henry Frowyke ⎭ [1 *Sept.* 1427 *to* 31 *Aug.* 1428.]

¶ In his tyme there was a lone of iij þousand marke; And it was for the Erle of Salesbury for-to meyntene the Kinges werres in Fraunce; And therto payed diu*er*se peple, aswell þ^e^ mene as the riche; som more, som lasse; but the leste was x s. ¶ And after that, was gr*a*unted bi the p*ar*liament, þat aH the chirches of the ralme shulde be stent at a somme; and the Chirche were at xx li,

[1] *leaf* 226. [2] *i. e.* Raynwell. [3] *i. e.* John Gedney.

the paresshens shulde paye xl s.: and iff it were of more valewe, than[1] to paye more.

[2]¶ Henry Bartoñ, Maire.

¶ Iohn Abbot } ¶ Shreues, Anno vij°.

¶ Thomas Duffons } [1 *Sept.* 1428 *to* 31 *Aug.* 1429.]

¶ And in this yere was the gode Erle of Salesbury, *Sir* Thomas Mountague, slayne at the sege of Orliaunce *with* a Gonne; the whiche was a noble lorde, and a worthi werrioure amonge aH Cristeñ meñ: On whos soule God for his pite haue mercy! amen! And he was beried at Brisham. In this same yere, at Midsomertide, Henry Benford, CardinaH, and also Bisshop of Winchestre, went ouyr the see into Fraunce *with* a faire meyne of Archers and meñ of armes; ¶ And the Lorde Welouby was made Capteñ of his werres; the whiche CardinaH was purposed and ordeyned for-to haue go into Prage, to haue distroyed and yeue bataile vnto the false heretikes and lollars. And whañ he was redy, tidinges come that the sege of Orliaunce was brokeñ, and the Lorde Talbot take, and other worthi lordes. And anone in aH haste, the CardinaH *with* his meyne, and *Sir* Iohn Radclyff with his meyne, þat was *pur*posed to haue go into Gienne, went ouer into Fraunce to helpe and strength þ^e^ Regent, the Duke off Bedford, in the Kingis right of Englond.

¶ Wil*liam* Estfelde, Maire.

¶ Wil*liam* Rouse } ¶ Shreues, anno viij°.

¶ Richard Holand } [1 *Sept.* 1429 *to* 31 *Aug.* 1430.]

¶ The Friday, the iij^de^ day of Nouember, the King with [3]his lordes, Rialli rode fro Kingestoñ ouer Londoñ Brige, And so forth Fanchirch strete, eyeñ to the Toure, to his mete. And the Maire and the Aldermeñ, aH in scarlet hodes, Rode to mete the King, and rode forth with him to the Toure. the Saturday next after, the King made xxxiij knightes of the Bath, in the Toure of Londoñ; wherof were the Erle of Deuenyssh-shire, the Lorde Spencers sonne, the Erle of Warrewike, the Lorde Beaumond. and after none, the King, in riaH aray, with aH his lordes rialli arayed in clothes of golde for the moste *par*tie, with the saide xxxiij knight*es* aH in blewe like prestes, rode a-fore the King ij and ij fro the Toure to Westm*inster*. And the Maire & þ^e^ Aldermeñ aH in scarlet, rode also, and brought the King to Westm*inster*. And on the Morue, the Sonday, the vj

[1] *MS. has* þañ thañ *with the first* þañ *underlined for erasure.*
[2] *leaf* 226, *back.* [3] *leaf* 227.

day of Nouembre, the King was crowned at Westm*inster* rialli; and Henry of Winchestre, Cardinall, as a Cardinall sate in a sete by, oñ the right honde of the King. And there was Quene Kater*in*, moder of the King, And a grete nombre of ladies and gentilwemeñ rially arayed. And ther come sodenly at þ^e^ Coronacioñ, one of the King*es* sounes of Portingale; and he was worshipfully resceyued. And that daye was a fayre day, & a clere, blessid be God!

¶ Nicholas Wottoñ, Maire.

¶ Water Chirtesey } ¶ Shreues, anno ix^o^.
¶ Robert Large }

[1 *Sept.* 1430 *to* 31 *Aug.* 1431.]

[1]¶ In that yere come the Cardinall oute of Normandy from Roañ; And there was the King, and helde Cristmasse. ¶ and after Cristmas, after Seint Hillaries day, bigañ the *par*liament at Westmynstre. and in that yere come to Londoñ the Ambassiatours of Spayne, to trete of pees.

[1] *leaf* 227, *back*.

[F]

CONTINUATION OF THE BRUT FROM 1430-1446.

[*MS. O* 9. 1. *Trinity College, Cambridge.*]

[1] Nicho*la*us Wotton, Maior. Walterus Chertsey-
Robertus Large } *Vicecomites.* *anno* ix°. [A.D. 1430-1.]

And in this yere, and in the yere of *grace* M[l] cccc xxx[ti], John Ostillere, at the Crowne in Fanchirchestrete of[2] London, debadet *with* the ambassitours of Spayne, and rered blode of oon of theym[3] *þat* was a gentleman; wherfor the hosteler was arested and brought to the Countou*re*, and his wife bothe, for she beganne the debate; and then the Kyng and his consayle remeved hym from the Countou*re*,[4] and brought hym in[5] the Flete *prison*. And on the Monday next after, the Maire and bothe the Shirreffes of London, by the comaundment of the Kyng[6] and his consayle, brought hym fro the Flete, fetered, colered, and manacled *with* yron strongly, thurgh the Cite till[7] they come to Leden-hall, for he shuld haue goon to the Toure to[8] abyde his Iugement for the grete offence *þat* he had doon, brekyng of the Kynges sauf-condite, ayenst his peas and comaundment. And there these ambassiatou*rs* of Spayne mette *with* the Maire and his company in Greschirchstrete, as they were goyng toward[9] the Toure, and prayed the Maire of grace for the man; and so he was brought ageyne *þat* same nyght[10] to Flete prison.

And in this same yere, on Seint Gregoryes day, a preste of Essex was brought to London afore[11] the clergye at Seint Paules, and there he was conuicte in heresy and false Lollardy, *þat* he mayntened and helde ayenst holy chirche; and so he was brent in Smythfeld for his heresy.

And in this same yere, on the Tuesday next after Palme Sonday, all the prisone*rs* *þat* were in Ludgate were brought into Newgate prison by Walte*re* Chirtesey & Robe*rte* Large, shirreffes of

[1] *leaf* 207. [2] in U. [3] y° Embassitoures, gentilmen U.
[4] toure of London U. [5] in to U. [6] kynges counsaill U.
[7] to the come U. [8] for to haue abiden U. [9] to the Toure warde U.
[10] *leaf* 207, *back*. [11] to fore U.

London; and the Friday, the xiijth day of Aprell then[1] next folowing, the same shirreffes fette oute of Newgate, by the false suggestion and compleynt of oon[2] Iohn Kyngescote, Gaolere of Neugate, .xviij. presoners of fremen. And the[3] oon half of these xviij. presoners were ledde to the[4] oon Counter, and þat oþer half to[5] þat other Compter, by[6] malice and compleynt of þe seid Iohn Kyngescote. And these[7] were ledde to the Compters, braced as though[8] they had be[9] felons and theves, openly in euery mannys sight.

And in this same yere, vpon þe Whitsonday, a man of the towne of Abyngdon þat is in Oxenfordshire, þat called hym-self Iak Sharp, was take, with oþer mo of his company, for risers and distourbours of þe Kynges peple, and for his false ymaginacion and treson þat he[10] began to make and werk in that Cuntre aboute; and þerfore he was drawe, and hanged and quartered at Abyngdon, and his hede smyten of, and set vpon London Brigge, by the[11] comaundment of the Duke of Gloucestre, Lieutenaunt of England, an[d][12] by alle the good and worthy lordes of the Kinges Consayle beinge that[13] tyme in the Reame.

And in this same yere, the xvj. day[14] of Iune, the preson of Ludgate was made, and opened ageyn[15] for fremen þat be presoners for dette. And the[16] same day they entred in first[17] ageyn by ordynaunce and comaundment of the Maire, alder[18]men and comyners. And Herry Dene, Tayloure, was[19] made keper of Ludgate prison, by the Maire and all the communialte in the Guyldhall.

And in þis same yere, the .xiij. day of Iuyll, John Russell, wollepakkere, was dampned at Westmynstre, and brought to the Kynges Benche, and leyde on a[20] hirdell, and drawen thurgh the Cite to Tybourne, and quartered; and his quarters set vpon dyuers gates of London, and his hede[21] set vpon London Brigge.

John Welles, Maior. Stephanus Broun } *vicecomites anno* x°. [1 *Sept.*
John Athirley } 1431 *to* 31 *Aug.* 1432.]

And þen Kyng Henry was brought from Caleys, þurgh

[1] then *om.* U. [2] ye said U. [3] y^{t} one U. [4] y^{t} U.
[5] vnto U. [6] by ye malice U. [7] þese prisoners U.
[8] though *om.* U. [9] bene for felonie & thefte U. [10] he he U.
[11] the *om.* U. [12] and U. [13] beyng in the roialme at y^{t} tyme U.
[14] day *om.* U. [15] and ageyn Tr. and opened again U. [16] y^{t} U.
[17] first *om.* U. [18] *leaf* 208. [19] was *om.* U. [20] an U.
[21] hede smytt of and set U.

Normandy, to þe Cite of Roan, *with* strenght of his lordes, and *with* men of armes and archers; and there the kyng abode, and rested hym in the Castell and[1] the Cite of Roan, from Seint Iames tyde the Apostell,[2] vnto the secund day of Decembre.[2] And when he come first into Rone, he was receyued and welcomed for theire liege lord and Kyng, *with* all reuerence, solempnite, gladnesse and worship, þat myght be ordeyned and made; and also they presented hym with ryche and roiall giftes, and thanked God of his comyng. And in the tyme of his abidyng in þe Cite of Roan, there were many iournеyes done in dyuers partyes of Fraunce and Normandy, which be not titléd in this boke; for y haue not full conusuaunce of theym, how, ne in what place nor where they were doon.[3]

[4] Here is the begynnyng of Kyng Herries comyng the Sext, from Roan to Parys; and how worthely they of Parys receyued the Kyng in his first comyng thider.[4]

And when Kyng Henry the Sext was goon from the Cite of Roan toward þe Cite of Parys, and first to Seint Denys the .ij. day of Decembre; and þere he was worthely receyued as euer was any kyng to any Cite; and þe village cleped 'Chapell,' betwene Seint Denys and[5] Parys, there mette with the Kyng and his lordes, the Provost of Parys, *with* the Marchauntez, and iij. other estates *with* hem,[6] clothed in oon suite, in rede fyne saten crymsyn[7] furred *with* Martrons, and *with* blewe hodes, to a grete[8] notable nombre. And whan the Kyng was passed the village, þere mette *with* hym the Provost of Parys aforeseid,[9] in a blewe gowne of velwet, and[10] the .iij. Maisters of the chastlet *with* theym, alle clothed in blewe *with* blak hodes; and next after theym[11] come[12] the ix worthy Emperoures, *with* Kynges and Quenes, and iche of[13] them armed, sauf the Quenes, and theire horses[14] trapped *with* theire armes, [15]and the quenes hors trapped *with* theire armes;[15] and then come the Maister of the Chamber, *with* the acomptes all clothed in violet, ermyn,[16] scarlet hodes, a notable nomber; and after come the President, with alle the maysters of þe parlement, all clothed in

[1] and in ye U. [2–2] *om.* U.
[3] doon. And y^e^ for I leue theme vn writynne. U. [4–4] *om.* U.
[5] *leaf* 208, *back.* [6] hym all clothede U. [7] and crymsyn U.
[8] grete *om.* U. [9] aforeseid *om.* U. [10] and all the U.
[11] hym U. [12] come ridynge U. [13] of Tr. of theme U.
[14] horses U. [15–15] *om.* U. [16] violet Tr. with crymsyn. U.

scarlet, *with* furred hodes, and round standynge cappes of Trype; and these were the iiij estates *with* alle the ix worthies.

And at comyng to þe gate of Seint Denys of Parys, there was afore[1] the fronte of the gate þe armes of the towne in gowles, a chieff of asure, *with* the flourdelice of gold in asure; and also þer was a verrey shippe, *with* alle the appurtenaunces[2] þerto belongyng, couered with siluer foyle, and certeyne persones standing þerin. And at the Kynges comyng to the gate, they henge ouer the shippe borde iij. blody hertys like vnto mennys hertys, bot þey were gretter. And as the Kyng come to the gate, these thre hertes opened; and oute of hem[3] flewe white dovys and oþer briddes, and certeyn scriptures made, shewyng vnto the Kyng þat they[4] receyued hym *with* alle hertys, and for theire souereyn Lorde and Kyng. And at the comyng in of[5] the gate was ordeyned a clothe of gold, and vj men beryng it[6] vpon vj. spere-shaftes, and eche of the men bare heded; and on theire hodes,[7] garlaundes of gode[8] foyle, and they clothed in blewe. And in the[9] same strete was a condit, and iij. meremaydes swymmyng aboue on[10] the water;[11] and oute of the condite come rennyng[12] dyu[er]s wynes; oon ypocras; the second rede wyne, the thridde, with mylke.[12] And euery Englissh man þat wold drynk ypocras, had ynough; and alwey men redy to serue theym *with* cuppes and pecis. And iij wodewoses playing vpon the toppe[13] of þe condyte; and other wodewoses benethe,[14] playing to kepe this[15] condite.

And then in the same strete was made a scaffold; and þerupon men disgysed after the weddyng of oure Lady, and of the birthe of oure Lorde Ihesu Crist, fro the begynnyng to the ende. And þere was neyder man nor childe þat any wight myght perceyue, þat euer chaunged any chere or countenaunce alle the tyme duryng; bot held theire contenaunce, as they had been ymages peynted; so þat all peple þat sawe hem, seyd þat they sawe neuer in þeire lyves suche a-noder sight.

And after that, comyng in at[16] þe Inner gate of Seint Denys wh[e]re þat he was in Chatere, there was made the life of Seint Denys, and of many other dyuers persons in grete estate aboue hym,

[1] afore at U. [2] appurtenaunce U. [3] theme U. [4] the U.
[5] at U. [6] it vp vpon U. [7] hedes U. [8] golde U. [9] this U.
[10] vpon U. [11] *leaf* 209.
[12–15] iij stremes one of ypocraers an oþer *with* rede wyne and ye thrid *with* mylk.
[13] Cupp U. [14] playing bynethe U. [15] the U. [16] of U.

bothe spirituell and temporall, after[1] Cristen men and hethen, as they were in theyre tyme þat is passed. And so comyng to the founteyn of Seint Innocent3, there was made a hegge of grene holme-busshes; and þerout stert an hert, and houndes rennyng after hym, couered in þe armes of England and[2] Fraunce. And at þe Chastelet, þere was made a stately ordynaunce of scaffoldes, hanged with clothes of golde and with arras, with the Kinges armes of England and of Fraunce; and a man lykened to þe Kyng sittyng in a sete, kepyng a state in scarled[3] with a furred hode and with .ij. buylhons made with the armes of England and of Fraunce; and vpon the right hande, knelyng, my Lord of Bedford,[4] my[5] Lord of Gloucestre, my Lord Cardynall,[6] and many oþer lordes of England, iche man[7] after his degre, armed with his cote of armes vpon hym;[8] and then the Duke of Burgoyne, knelyng[9] on the lifte hande, offeryng vp the armes of Fraunce, and alle the other lordes of Fraunce in theire degre, knelyng, and offeryng[10] vp their armes; and dyuers scriptures made, þat all they requyre the Kyng of rightwisnesse. And after was presented to þe Kyng a wylde hert, trapped with the armes of the towne.

And so þe Kyng rode forth to oure Lady Chirche, and made his offryng. Alle[11] the stretes from Seint Denys Gate were hanged with clothes of arras and with clothes of tapissery werk; and for þe most party all the stretes were couered with lynnen clothes.

And so from thens the Kyng that same tyme[12] went to Tourney, and[13] because it was ill[14] ridyng, for the grete froste þat was that tyme in the towne, and the stretes were strawed thurghout for slidyng of theire horses vnto þey come to Tourney; and there the[15] Kyng souped with my Lorde of Bedford, and lay there all nyght, and dyned there on the morowe ere [he] passed any ferther.

And so vpon the morowe the Kyng went to[16] speke with his grandmoder, þe Quene of Fraunce. And there she made hym[17] chere, and welcomed hym with all the dalyaunce, countenaunce, and chere þat she coude or[18] myght; and seid þat 'she was neuer so gladde as she was then, sith she sawe þe Kynge of Fraunce in

[1] and aftir U. [2] and of U. [3] in a sete of Estate in Scarlet U.
[4] my Lord of Bedford knelyng U. [5] and my U. [6] the Cardinall U.
[7] *leaf* 209, *back*. [8] man *om*. U. [9] theme U. [10] sittyng U.
[11] Fraunce kneling in ther degre and offeryng U. [12] and all U.
[13] yt same tyme þe Kyng U. [14] and for U. [15] parillous U.
[16] there Tr. *þere* the U. [17] and spak. [18] hym grete U.
[19] and U.

good plyte.' And so from the Quene he rode streight to Boys in Vyncent; and there he rested hym[1] vnto þe tyme of hys Coronacion, þe which shuld be holden and [2] doon on þe Sonday, the .viijth day afore Cristmasse, by the grace of God.

And þen the Saterday, the xv. day of Decembre, the Kyng come on the after-none from Boys in Vyncent vnto þe palays of Parys; and he rested hym there all þat nyght. And þe next morowe, the Sonday, was he brought worthely from the palyce to the Chirche of oure Lady in Parys; and there he was crowned Kyng of Fraunce by the Cardynall, þe Bisshop [3] of Winchestre and oþer Englissh Bisshoppes, and by .vj. of þe worthiest Bisshoppes of Fraunce. And this coronacion was worthely doon, with all the solempnite þat myght be doon and ordeyned.

And when the Kyng was crowned, and the seruice doon, then the Kyng was brought ageyn to his palyse, and there set to mete with all delicacye of metes and drynkes þat myght be ordeyned, and open fest to all men þat wold com, bothe pore and riche. And after his coronacion at Parys, the Kyng come doun to þe Cite of Roan. And so, by candelmasse next, the Kyng came to Caleys. And the Marchauntes of the Staple, with the peple of the towne, welcomed hym with all reuerence and honoure, and presented hym with giftes.

And within .xiiij. dayes after, the Kyng come ouer the see into England, and landed at the towne of Dover in Kent; and there were redy the Burgeys of the .v. Portes, and bare the Kyng on lande. And then come moche peple of Kent and Sussex, of good gentelmen and yomen on horsbak and in good aray, and they welcomed the Kyng, and brought hym to Caunterbury; and þere þe Kyng rested hym a day. And then the peple of all the Cuntre aboute come on horsbak and good aray to þe Kyng, and welcomed the Kyng with all theire hertys, and brought the King fro[4] Caunterbury vnto his Maner of Eltham þat is .v. myle oute of London. And there the Kyng rested hym .v. or .vj. dayes, vnto his comyng to the Cite of London.

And in this same yere the xxjth day of Februare, Kyng Henry the .vj. come from his Maner of Eltham toward the Cite of London; and the Maire and aldermen, with the comynalte of

[1] hym all nyght U.
[2] There is a break in U here from *doon* on p. 461 to *folowyng* on p. 462, l. 8.
[3] *leaf* 210. [4] for Tr.

London, roode ayenst the Kyng on horsbak, in the best aray þat they myght, in the reuerence of the Kyng and in worship and gladnesse of the worthy name of the Cite of London, thurghout the world in worthynesse commended and praysed. For the Maire hym-self was clothed in rede Crymsyn velwett, and a grete velwet hatte furred royally, and a girdell of gold aboute his mydell, and a bawdrik of gold aboute his neck, trillyng doun behynde hym; and his .iij. hensmen on [1] .iij. grete Coursoures [2] foloyng hym, in oon sute of a good aray, in rede,[3] all spangled in siluer; and then all the Aldermen in gownes of scarlet,[4] with sangwyn cappes. And all the communialte of the Cite were [5] clothed in white; bot euery crafte with dyuers devices enbrowded [6] vpon the white gownes, þat euery craft myght be knowen, oon from a-nother, with scarlet hodes or cappes. And all they hoved still on horsbak on [7] the Blak-Heth in Kent, on both sides, as a strete, vnto the Kynges comyng.

And when they sawe the Kyng come, the Maire with the aldermen rode to the Kyng, and welcomed hym with all reuerence, honour and obeysaunce.[8] And the Kyng thanked hem, and [9] he come ridyng thurgh all the peple; and they obeyed, and seid, "Welcom oure liege [10] and Kyng! welcom! [11] and thanked be God in all his giftes, þat we se you in good quart!" and so the Kyng rode streight the high wey to London.

And when the Kyng had riden thurgh Suthwerk, and come to the stulpes without [12] London Brigge, *pere* stode a gyaunt in [13] a toure, with his swerd drawe in his hande, shewed with countenaunce, doth manace all foreyn enemys to the death without mercy, þat seith or doth [14] ayenst the [15] Kynges right. "And y, the Kynges Champyon, in full myght and power."

And then the Kyng come to London Brigge; and there was made a roiall hevenly toure; and therin was shewed .iij. ladyes as Emperice, worthely apparaylled in theire aray, which were called by name 'Nature, Grace, and Fortune.' And theire girdelles were blewe, shynyng like to sapheres, which shewed to the Kyng, in his comyng, all goodnesse and gladnesse in [16] vertuous lyvyng; and with oper .vj.[17] virgynes celestial, in tresses of gold, and with

[1] *leaf* 210, *back*. [2] U *begins again*. [3] in rede *om*. U.
[4] scarlet gownes U. [5] all U. [6] enbrandrede U. [7] vpon U.
[8] honour, reuerence and obeisaunce U. [9] and so U.
[10] liege lorde U. [11] welcom *om*. U. [12] þorugh U.
[13] with Inne U. [14] doth or saith U. [15] his U.
[16] and U. [17] vij. U.

coronalles on theire hedes, all clothed in white, as virgines, with sonnys[1] of golde on theire garmentes, shewyng as hevenly creatures, mekely salewyng the Kyng, and gaf hym .vij. giftes, þat were toknes of oure Lord God of heven, þat were[2] white dowves, betokenyng the giftes of the Holy Gost, a spirite of intelligence, a spirite of sapience, and a spirite of strenght and of connyng, and of consayle, pite, drede, and lowlynesse. And on the lifte side of these .iij. Emperesses, were .vij. oþer virgyns, clothed[3] all in white, with sterres of gold on[4] theire garmentes, with coronalles on theire hedes, which presented the Kyng with [5]royall giftes: first, they endewed the Kyng with the crowne of glorye, and with the septre of mekenesse[6] and of pite; a swerd of myght and victorie, a mantell of prudence, a shelde of feith, a helme of helth, a girdell of love and of parfite peas. And all these ladyes and virgines welcomed the Kyng with all honoure and reuerence.[7]

And then the Kyng procedyng forth to the Condyte in Cornhill; and þere was made in serkelwyse a Trone; and in the myddes sittyng, a yonge child arayed as a kyng, whom to gouerne were .iij. ladyes, Mercy, Trouthe and the Lady[8] Clennesse; and .ij. Inges of lawe, and .viij. sergeauntes, to shewe the kyngdom lawe and right. And then the Kyng rode forth, and entred into Chepe, and come to the grete Conduit, þat ranne plente of good wyne, bothe white and rede, to all peple þat wold drynk. And aboue, ouer the Condite, was a royall toure likned to Paradyse, with many dyuers trees[9] beryng euerychе dyuers frutes. And in this same gardeyn was dyuers welles of dyuers wynes, with bokettes; and .iij. glorious virgines wounde vp the wyne, preferyng the Kyng there full habundaunce, fulsomnesse, and high plente. And the names of these virgines been 'Mercy, Grace, and Pite.' And in the ende of this gardeyn þere appered to the Kyng .ij. olde men,—þat oon, Enok; and þat oþer, Ely,—þat shewed the Kyng chere and grete preysing[10] ministryng his gouernance.

And[11] the Kyng passed forth, and come to the Crosse in Chepe;

[1] soñs U. [2] were vij U. [3] all clothede U. [4] vpon U.
[5] *leaf* 211. [6] clennesse U.
[7] with alle melodie & roalte of songe. And than ye Kyng rode forth, comes to redenhall in Cornhill, & þer was made a roiall thyng like vnto a tabernakle & þere in satt þat lady dame sapience with the vij sciences euery in þere degre shewyng þere craftis werkis & konnynges & made grete Ioie melodie & songe vnto ye Kyng & welcomede hym with all honoure & reuerence U.
[8] lady of U. [9] dyuers thynges and trees U. [10] praisyng and U.
[11] and þan U.

and there was made a castell roiall: and on the Est syde stode .ij. grene treez, which bare the armes of England and of Fraunce, the libardes and the flouredelice, which been the Kinges right and trewe armes be lyne. And vpon this castell, toward Seint Paules, there was the tree of Iesse, *with* all the braunches, shewyng the kynrede of oure Lorde Ihesu[1] and of our Lady,[2] Seint Marye, to the comfort of the Kyng, and for the grete solempnite of þe worthy cite of London.

And then they[3] passed forth from þe[4] Castell and come toward Seint Paules at the Litell Conduit; and *þere* was made an heven indivisible of the Trinite; and a trone compassed his roiall See *with* a grete multitude of angellys hym aboute, *with* dyuers melodyes and songe, to hertly ioye and [5]comfortyng of the Kyng and all his peple. And whan he was come to Seint Paules, there[6] he alight doun of his hors; and *þere* come þe Archebisshop of Caunter*bury*, and the Archebisshop of York,[7] and þe Bisshop[8] of Lincoln, and the Bisshop[es] of Bathe, Salesbury, Norwich, Ely, and Rochestre, and the Dene of Paules *with* his couent, in *procession*, in theire best araye of holy Chirche, and met *with* hym, and did hym obser*u*aunce as bylongeth[9] to hym, and censed hym at his comyng in; and so brought the kyng to the high autez*e*, *with* roiall songe. And there the kyng offred; and then he come oute ageyn, and toke his hors, and come to Westm*inster*; and thider brought hym the Maire, Aldermen, and all the co*mmun*ialte of the Cite of London.

And when the kyng was come to Westm*inster* *with* all his peple, the Abbot and all the Couent come oute, coped roially, in *procession*, *with* high solempnite and gladnesse. And the Abbot brought to the Kyng, Seint Edward*es* septre; and so he come into the Abbay *with* all solempnite, ioye and songe, and offred to Seint Edward; and then come oute ageyne, and went to his palace. And then the Maire and Aldermen, *with* all the co*mmun*ialte of London, toke theire leve of the Kyng and of the lordes, and thanked God highly of his welfare and comyng.

And on the Seturday next suyng, the Maire and þe Aldermen come ageyn to Westm*inster* to the palays, *with* a riche hanaper of gold, and *p*resented it to the Kyng, and a M[l] .li. of gold therin, to

[1] Ihesu Criste U. [2] of his moder U. [3] the Kynge U. [4] that U.
[5] *leaf* 211, *back*. [6] there *om.* U. [7] yorke his chaunceler U.
[8] byshoppis of lyncolne Bathe U. [9] bylongede to theme U.

his bien venewe and welcom hoom; and prayed hym of his high myghty grace, lordship and love to his Chambre.

And þen anon after Ester next folowyng,[1] the Kyng held his parlement at Westminster; and it lasted till seint Jametyde þe Appostell. and at þe begynnyng of the parlement, the Cardynall, the Bisshop of Wynchestre, come ouer the see into England, and so to London to þe Kyng, to excuse hym of the offence3 and blames þat were put vpon hym for thinges[2] doon in Fraunce, by the compleynt of certeyn lordes; wherof he hath worthely excused hym to the Kyng and to his consayle; and so he was[3] fully excused, and the parties at oon.

And also to this parlement come Frenssh lordes, bothe spirituall and temporell and ambassatours of Spayne, and oþer diuers lordes of dyuers[4] [5]landes, to trete for peas and other certeyn maters. And the xxvj. day of Juyn come the Dukes son of Bretayn ouer the see into England, and so to London[6] to the Kyng; and with hym come a Bisshop of that lande, and certeyn knyghtes and Squyers and theire meny.

Johannes Parneys, Maior. Johannes Olney, Johannes Paddesley } vicecomites anno xj° [A.D. 1432–3.]

And this[7] same yere, the Lord Camoys,[8] Sir Waltere Hungerford son, went ouer the see into Normandy, with knyghtes, squyers, men of armes and archers, to the Nombre of xv^c. peple and mo, by ordynaunce of the Kyng and his Consayle of[9] the Reame, in strengthing and helpyng of the Duke of Bedford, Regent in tho parties, and of all the Kynges liege peple, and for keping of the Kynges title and right.

And in þis same yere the Kynges sonne of Naverne, with oþer dyuers peple with hym, come in ambassiatry to the Kyng and to[10] his Consayle.

And in þis same yere the Kyng let intere the Duchesse[11] of Bedford, which deyed in Fraunce, [12]at Seint Paules in London,[12] with moche royalte and solempnite as myght be doon in holy Chirche.

And in this same yere, anon after Cristmasse, þe Bisshop of Acres in the land of Navern, come to the Kyng in ambassiatry.

[1] next folowyng *om.* U. [2] thinges Tr. for thinges U. [3] is U.
[4] and of other dyuers U. [5] *leaf* 212.
[6] into *þis* lande over the see and so to london U. [7] in this U.
[8] Cannys and U. [9] and of U. [10] to *om.* U.
[11] entre at saint paules in londou the duchesse U. [12–12] *om.* U.

And in þis same yere on Seint Wolstans day, Sir Robert Fitz-hugh was stalled Bisshop of London in the see[1] of Seint Paules.

And in this same yere, anon after Cristmasse, the grete conuocacion and consayle of all the landes [2]in Cristendom, and also of all oþer seculer lordes, and Clerkes,—þat is to say, Bisshoppes and other[3] consayle began in the Cite of Basyle in Duchelande, for to make vnite and peas emong all Cristen peple, and for to destroye heretikes and erresye þat then reigned emong the peple.[2]

And in this same yere, anon after Ester,[4] þe Archebisshop of Caunterbury and oþer[5] Bisshoppes with othere clergy, and the Duke of Gloucestre with oþer lordes, knyghtes and squyers, went ouer the see to Caleys, for trety, and made þere a consayle [6]betwene[7] þe Frenssh and þe Englissh. And þider come out of Fraunce þe Duke of Bedford, Regent, with many other Frenssh[8] lordes, bothe spirituall and temporall; and also þider come þe Cardynall, þe Bisshop of Wynchestre.

And in this same yere, the xxijth day of Aprell, the Erle of Huntyngton, with other dyuers lordes, knyghtes and[9] squyers, with[10] men of armes and archers, shipped at Hampton, and went ouer the see into[11] Normandy and so[12] to Fraunce, for to mayntene, kepe and gouerne the right of oure Kyng and þe parties of Fraunce and Normandy.

And in this same yere, Herry Beauford, Cardynall, Bisshop of Wynchestre, come[13] ouer the see into England, and so to London, the xth day of Iuyn, to his Maner of Seint Mary Ouerey in Suthwerk.

And[14] in this same yere was the Clipse in þe after-None, þat Asshewell þe white frere, and oþer clerkes, spake of longe tyme before; which all peple dowted and were sore aferd of, thurgh the speche of þe seid frere.[15] And this clipse was the xvij.[16] day of Iuyn.

And in this same yere come Iohn, Duke of Bedford, with his

[1] chirch U.
[2–2] of Cristiance of all ye spiritualte & temporallte and of all secular lordes and clerkis þat is to say Bisshoppis & other was holden & begonne in ye Citie of basile in Ducheland for to make peace & vnite betwix all cristen peple & for to destroie heretikes & heresie þat now reigneth amonge the peple U.
[3] other which Tr. [4] Ester *om.* U. [5] oþer *om.* U. [6] *leaf* 212, *back.*
[7] to trete of peace and made a counsaill at Caleis betwene U.
[8] grete U. [9] and *om.* U. [10] with *om.* U.
[11] to Caleis and so into U. [12] so *om.* U. [13] come frome.
[14] In U the next few lines down to *xix of June* are transposed.
[15] þer of þorugh the freres speche. [16] xix U.

newe wedded wife, þe Erles doughter of Seintpoule; and they come from Fraunce ouer the see into England, and so come to London, the xxiijth day of Iuyn, þat was Mydsomer Even. And þe Mayre and aldermen, with many worthy comouns of London, brought theym from the Blak-Heth in Kent, and so to London into Fletestrete, vnto þe Bisshoppes Inne of Salesbury, with all honoure and reuerence.

John Brokley, Maior. — Thomas Charlton, John Lynge *vicecomites* Anno xij° [A.D. 1433–4.]

And in this same yere, and in the yere of grace M^{l} cccxxxiiij^{ty}, þe viij. day of Iuyn, Iohn, Duke of Bedford, and his lady þe Duchesse,[1] went ageyn[2] ouer þe see to Caleys, and so into Normandy and Fraunce, with a grete nombre of peple, in[3] strengthing and mayntenyng of oure[4] Kynges right in [5]Fraunce and Normandy.

And in þis same yere was[6] a grete pestilence in London, bothe of men, women and childern; and namely of worthy men, as aldermen and oþer worthi communiers; and also thurgh England þe peple deyed sore, bothe pore and riche,[7] which was grete hevynesse to all peple.[8]

Robertus Otley, Maior. — Thomas Bernewell, Symon Eyre *vicecomites anno* xiij° [A.D. 1434–5.]

And in this yere, and in þe yere of grace M^{l}. cccc. xxxv^{ty}, þe xxijth day Nouember, the grete and hard frost bygan; and it endured vnto the fest of Candelmasse next, which distroyed þe olde peple, bothe men and women, and also yong childern. And also in that same tyme deyed many bay trees, and rosemary, Sauge, tyme, and many oþer herbes.

And in this same yere, Sir Herrye Beauford, Cardynall, Bisshop of Wynchestre, and Maister Iohn Kemp, Archebisshop of York, and the Erle of Huntyngton, with oþer lordes, knyghtes, and Squyers, and Clergye, went ouer the see into Fraunce, to þe Cite of Reynes, to trete for a fynall peas betwene England and Fraunce. Bot it was sone disquat, for þe grete highnesse, pride, and couetyse of þe Frenssh party. For oure Englissh peple abode there from Midsomer till it was nygh Michelmasse. And so they departed from hem, and come ageyne into England in saufte, thanked be God!

[1] & the Duchesse his wife U. [2] ageyn *om.* U. [3] in the U. [4] the U. [5] *leaf* 213. [6] þer was U. [7] both men women & children U. [8] Here closes U [= MS. Uu. Libr. Camb. Hh. VI. 9].

And in this same yere, anon after these lordes comyng out of Fraunce from this trety of peas, Iohn, Duk of Bedford, was seke, and deyed in the Roan in Normandy; and there he is buryed: vpon whos soule, God haue mercy! amen!

Henricus Frowyk, Maior. Robertus Clopton } *vicecomites anno* Thomas Catworth } xiiij° [A.D. 1435-6.]

And in this same yere, and in the yere of *grace* M¹ cccxxxvj^ti, Kyng Henre þe vj^th held his *parlement* at Westmynster. And in þis *parlement* was *graunted* a [1]disme for holy chirche, and a xv^th thurghout the Reame, to mayntene þe Kynges werres and to deffende oure Enemyes. And also they *graunted* to þe Kyng in this *parlement*, of all peple, pore and riche, both of *spirituell* and *temporell*, to pay of theire landes and rentes, and of all freheld þat they haue *with*in this Reame of England, vj d. of þe pound; and þis treuly to fecche and geddre, to help in þe Kynges nedes as at this tyme.

And anon, in the begynnyng of Lent next folowyng, þe King, *with* his conseyle, borowed a *somme* of gold þurghout þe Reame, of temporall peple, þat amounted a c. M¹ marc of money, to sende his peple ouer the see; to kepe, mayntene, and gouerne his landes byyonde the See: of which *somme*, the peple of London lent x M¹ marc in olde and in newe, þat is to sey, .iiij. M¹ v^c marc of olde, and iiij M¹ v^c marc of newe prest. So these ij. *sommes* drawen x M¹ marc and more, ouer the good peple of þe Cite of London, þat is to sey, certeyn craftes found both men of armes and archers to Caleys, forto kepe the towne in saufgarde from oure enemys, þat is to say, the Duke of Burgoyne and his strenght. And also the Cite of London sent stuff to Caleys, as Gonnes, Gonnepouder, *with* other *commoditees* for the werre, to kepe þat place sauf, to þe worship of oure Kyng and of þe Reame, and to þe welfare and *profite* of all England.

And this same yere, deyed iiij bisshoppes in England, þat is to say, the Bisshop of Ely, the Bisshop of London, the Bisshop of Lincoln, and the Bisshop of Bangore, and oþer mo *prelats* of worthynesse and state, in dyuers partyes of the Reame of England.

And in this same yere, the Erle of Morteyner went ouer þe see to Caleys *with* a grete peple of men of armes and archers, in þe Passion Weke, in the defence of oure Kyng, and to destroye oure enemys.

[1] *leaf* 213, *back*.

And in this same yere, the iiijth day of Maye, the Erle of Salesbury, and his broder the Lord Faukonberge, went ouer the see into Normandy with a fayre company of knyghtes and squyers, with men of armes and archers, in defence of þe Kyng and of þe Reame of England, for to destroye oure enemys.

And in this same yere, in þe Moneth of Maye, the Duke of York and þerle of Suffolk, with oþer lordes, [1]knyghtes and squyers, men of armes and archers, and all oþer stuff and necessaryes þat perteyneth to werre, went ouer the see into Normandy and Fraunce, as lieftenaunt vnder the Kyng of England, forto gouerne and kepe þe landes of Fraunce and Normandy ageyns the Kynges enemys, and in saluacion of the Kynges peple.

And in this same yere aboute Midsomer, the Duke of Burgoyne, with all his pusance of peple, bothe of Fraunce and of Flaundres, and of oþer dyuers contreys, come and byseged þe towne of Caleys, and þe garrysons þat belongen þerto. And þere they destroyed both Mark and Oye, and of þe Kynges peple many oon. And þey come thider with so grete strenght and ordynaunce of werre, þat it was impossible any creatures to conquere theym, sauf þe grace of God oonly; wherfore þat the Kyng of England, with his consayle, let ordeyn and send ouer þe see to Caleys, for þe Rescues therof, and for his peple lying þere, and for his right, his vncle þe Duke of Gloucestre, the Duke of Norffolk, þe Erle of Warwyk, and þe Erle of Stafford, and þe Erle of Ewe, his broder, and þe Erle of Huntyngdon, and þe lord Fawnehope, Sir John Cornwayle knyght, and many oþer lordes, knyghtes and Squyers, and many oþer men of armes and archers, to þe nombre of Lx. M^{t} peple, with many dyuers wepenys þat belongeth to batayle. And then come the Navy of Spayne, with oþer dyuers shippes, which were grete vessels, and stronge and well-manned, and byseged þe towne of Caleys by water. Then come þe Erle of Devenshire with his Navye out of the west costes, and with oþer dyuers shippes of England well-manned; and they herd of his commyng, and they voided, and went theire wey thens, and wold no lenger abide. And then the Erle of Morteyner and þe Lorde Camoys, with a certeyn of theire peple, issued oute of Caleys, and brake the sege þat the Duke of Burgoyne had ordeyned ayenst the towne of Caleys, and come to þe Bastyle of strength, and slewe þe most party þat were þerin, and destroyed moche peple, and toke his ordynaunce, and

[1] *leaf* 214.

the remenaunt fledde away. And this was doon ere the Duke of Gloucestre come ouer þe see to Caleys [1]with his Navye and people.

And after this, aboute our Lady Day þe assumpcion, the Duke of Gloucestre, the Duke of Norffolk, with Erles and lordes, with all their oþer people and ordynaunces, come vnto Caleys forto rescue it, and forto destroye the sege; bot it was doon and ended ere they come, thanked be God of his grace! And þen þe Duke of Gloucestre, with all his peple, abode in Caleys till he had take his consayle what was best to doon. And þen he toke all his peple and went into Flaundres, and slowe and brent all þat they myht, and toke .ij. townes, Poperyng and Bell. And anon whan this was doon, he comaunded all his peple to turne ageyn to Caleys, vpon peyn of deth, in all haste. And so þey taryed not longe there, bot come ageyn in all hast into England.

And in þis same yere, whils all this doyng was at Caleys and in Flaundres, the Kyng of Scottes come with an huge powere of peple and ordynaunce, and biseged þe towne of Berwik, and after, the Castell of Rokesburgh, and did moche harme þere as he come. And þen come þe Erle of Northumberland and þe Erle of Westmerland, with lordes and peple of the Cuntrees, and distroyed and brake his seges; and he fledde with his peple, and turned ageyn into Scotland.

Johannes Mychell, Maior. Thomas Mustum / Willelmus Gregory { Vicecomites Anno xv° [A.D. 1436–7.]

And in this same yere, and the yere of grace M[l] CCCC. xxxv[ti] the grete, hard, bityng frost bygan the vij. day of Decembre, and endured vnto þe xxij. day of Feuerere next, which greved þe peple wonder sore; and moche pepel deyed in þat tyme, for colde and for skarcite of wode and cole. And tender herbes were slayne with þis frost, þat is to say, Rosemary, sauge, tyme, and many oþer herbes.

And in þis same yere deyed good Quene Kateryn, þat was moder to Kyng Henre the Sext, and wife to Kyng Henre the .v[th], the þursday þe .iij. day of [2]Ianuare, in þe Abbey of Bermondesey without Suthwerk, in þe counte of Surre. And the Friday, the viij. day of Feuerere next after, the body of the Quene was brought to Seint Kateryns beside the Toure, and so thurgh London to Seint Paules, with lordes and ladyes, and with the Maire and Aldermen,

[1] *leaf* 214, *back*. [2] *leaf* 215.

and the Craftes in London and *with* all the religious peple, as chanons, prestys and freres; and there was a solempne dirige and masse on the morowe. And from thens she was brought to West-
4 mynstre, and þere was hir terement holden and doon rially; and *þer*e buryed in the Chapell of oure Lady, on whos soule, God haue *mer*cy! Amen!

And in this same yere, duryng the hard frost, þe Monday the
8 xxiij. of Ianuar*e*, the gate of þe Cite at London Brigge ou*er*-threwe and fell doun into Tamys to þe hard ground, and drewe the houses after hym, bothe *with*in and *with*out, to grete harm to þe Cite and to þe brigge.

12 And in this same yere, the walles of chirches, howses, and of Selers, *þat* were made of chalke, broke in many places, and fell in smale pecys to the grounde as dust.

And in this yere þe Kyng held his *par*lement at Westmynstre;
16 and it byganne at þe Fest of Seint Hillary, and ended at Ester next folowyng. And in þe begynnyng of Lent, tydynge*s* come to þe Kyng and to the Reame, how *þat* þe Kyng of Scotte*s*, Sir Iames Steward, was slayn at Seint Johnes Towne *with* treson, by a Squyer
20 of Scotland. And to this *par*lement come many dyue*rs* straungers, som*me* of Aragon in Spayne, som*me* of Spruce, som*me* of Beam, and som*me* of Fr*au*nce and Normandy. And þe Bisshop of Tyrwyn, *with* dyue*rs* knyghte*s* and Squyers, come to this same
24 *par*lement.

And in this same yere, the ixth day of Iuyll, deyed Quene Iohan in the Maner of Haueryng-at-Bour in Essex, which was wife to Kyng Henry the iiijth; and from thens she was brought to
28 Cau*nter*bury, and there is she buryed: on whose soule, God haue mercy! Amen!

And in this yere, anon after Midsom*er*, the Lord Willoughby, and other lordes *with* hym, knyghte*s* and squyers, men of armes
32 and archers, were sent ouer the see into Fr*au*nce, forto strenght, mayntene, and kepe the Kynge*s* title and right *þat* he hadde in Fr*au*nce and Normandy.

And in this same yere, at þe Natiuite of oure Lady Seint Mary,
36 þe Erle of Warwik was ordeyned [1] and comaunded ou*er* the see into Fraunce and Norma[n]dy, forto be lieftena*unt* and gou*er*nour in the Kynges name, *with* strenght of all þe p*ar*tyes and landes *þat* the King hath byyonde the see, as in Fraunce, Normandy, and

[1] *leaf* 215, *back*.

Gascoyne. And then the Duke of York come hoom ageyn, þat longe tyme had been there; and so the same tyme he toke his iourney with lordes, knyghtes and squyers, men of armes and archers, a royall and a worthy company, and toke with hym þe lady his wife, and the yonge Lord Spencer, his sonne and his heire, and shipped in Goddes name, and toke the see. And when they were forth in the see, there arose grete tempestes, stormes and wyndes; and then they stode in perill of deth; and so, as God wold, he was dryven ageyn into England costes, and were saved; and so, at Allhalowentyde next, the good Erle of Warwyk toke his shippyng ageyn, and passed ouer the see, and come with his peple to Roan in saufte, thanked be God!

Willelmus Estfeld, Maior. Willelmus Hales, Willelmus Chapman } vicecomites anno xvj° [A.D. 1437–8.]

And in this same yere, and in the yere of grace M¹ CCCC xxxviij, a woman of Highgate, þat was a tayllours wife, lete sle hir husbond; and þerfore she was Iuged to be brent at the Toure hill, þe Monday þe xxvij^th day of Ianuare.

And in this same yere, on Esterday, a gardyner þat wonned at Seint Mary at Nax in London, receued þe glorious sacrament oure Lordes body, and toke it oute of his mouth, and hidde it in a clowte, and wold haue brent it. And the parson took the sacrament, and receyued it reuerently, and brought it to þe high auter ageyn, and sent þe gardyner to prison. And þe Bisshop of London and oþer Bisshoppes and clergye sate vpon hym, and Iuged hym, for lollardry and erresye, to be brent in Smythfeld.

And in this same yere, the xiij. day of Iuyn, .v. men of the Cuntre of Tynderden in Kent, were founden and taken for heresyes and destroyers of the Kinges peple; and so they were brought to [1] Maidston in Kent, and there Iuged to deth, to be drawe, hanged, quarterd, and theire hedes smyten of.

And in this same yere, the Erle of Morteyn went ouer the see into Fraunce by the Kynges comaundment and consayle, forto strenght and kepe in the Kinges name certeyn partyes in Fraunce and Normandy, with knyghtes, squyers, men of armes and archers.

And all this yere duryng, was grete scarcite of corn; for a busshell whete was at xx d. and ij s., and in the last ende of the yere at xxvj d. þe busshell; and a busshell of rye was at xvj d. and

[1] *leaf* 216.

xviij d., and barly at x d. and xij d.; and then was right feble brede made for þe comon peple; and a galon of rede wyne at x d., and all oþer swete wynes at xvj d., as Romney, Malvesyne, Clarry, Tyre; and flessh and fyssh was longe tyme at an high price, which was grete charge to all the comons þurghout þe Reame. And in all þe North Cuntre a busshel of whete was at xl d. the most part of þe yere. And moche worthy peple deyed in the yere of pestilence, and of oþer *commune* peple of men, women and childern, thurghout þe Ream, and principally at York and in the North Cuntre; on whos soules God haue mercy! amen!

And in that same yere, in the Moneth of Iuyll, were made .vij. Sergeauntez of Lawe; and they held theire *gener*all fest the day of the *Tran*slacion of Seint Thomas, in the Bisshoppes Inne of Ely in Holbourne.

Stephen Broun, Maior. Hugo Dyke, Nicholaus Yoo } *vicecomites anno* xvij° [A.D. 1438–9].

And in this same yere, and the yere of *grace* M¹ CCCC xxxix^ti, on Seint Clementes day, betwene .iij. and .iiij. after None, *per* fell such wedring of wynde and rayne, thondyr and lightnynges; and a grete smoke of the lightnynge, þat all peple were sore agast þerof, for þe hydous noyse þat was herd in the Reame. And þerwith an erthquake, þat shoke all the grounde.

And in this yere on Seint Georges Even, [1]the holy Martir, from .ij. after mydnyght vnto .v. of the clok in þe mornyng, *per* was so huge and so grevous wedryng of thundir and lightnyng, hale, wynde and Rayne, þat the peple were hugely agast and dred of it; bot oure Lord God and his blessed Moder, oure Lady Seint Marye, saved and kept all his hande-werk at all tymes,—blessed myght He and she be! amen!

And in this same yere, on the Monday next after Trinite Sonday, the Erle of Huntingdon, *with* oþer lordes, knyghtes and Squyers, men of armes and archers, went out of London toward the see for to gouerne and kepe the Cite of Burdeux, and also the Cuntreyes of Gascoyne and Guyan, to the profite of oure liege Lorde the Kyng, and to the welfare of the Reame of England.

And in this same yere deyed Sir Richard Beauchamp, Erle of Warwyk, in Normandy; and his bonys were brought into England,

[1] *leaf* 216, *back*.

and buryed at the towne of Warwik: on whos soule, God haue mercy! amen!

And in this same yere, the .v. day of Iuyn, the Erle of Stafford, *with* lordes, knyghtes, squyers, men of armes and archers, in good aray, went ouer the see to Caleys, for tretice betwene England and Fraunce. And *with*in .ij. dayes after, went ouer the see to Caleys, the Archebisshop of York, þe Bisshop of Norwiche, and the Bisshop of Seint Dauy, *with* a grete meyne of clerkes, and moche oþer peple *with* theym, in good arraye, to Caleis, to this same tretice. And the Friday next after that, went the Cardinall, the Bisshop of Wynchestre, *with* a grete multitude of peple, ouer the see to Caleys, to the same tretice. And the Seturday next, went out of the Cite of London toward Caleis, to that same tretice, the Duke of Norffolk, *with* oþer grete lordes, knyghtes and squyers, and moche oþer peple *with* hym, in good araye; And Sir Richard Wodevyle, knyght, and Sir Roger Chamberlayn, knyght; and many oþer worthy states of knyghtes and Squyers, *with* men of armes and archers, went ouer the see into Normandy, to kepe the Kynges title and right. And þere þe Cardynall and these Bisshoppes, and the Duke of Norffolk, abode þere, and treted *with* the Frenssh party vnto þe terme of Michelmasse [1] next folowyng.

And in all this yere, all greynes of corne were at an high price; for whete was at xxxij d., barly at xvj d., and rye at ij s., vnto the terme of Michelmasse next; and then was whete at xviij d., barly at x d., and Rye at xiiij d.

Robertus Large, Maior. Robertus Marchall } vicecomites
Philippus Malpas } anno xviij° [A.D. 1439–40].

And in this same yere, and in the yere of grace Mt CCCC xl., a seruaunt þat was with a man of Hakney, .ij. myle from London, come *with* his mayster to London, and bought vitayle and must for deynte, forto sende hoom to his wife, for she was grete *with* childe. And the fals creature, when he come hoom, slewe þe wife and the child *with*in her, and an oþer damysell and a noþer yong felawe þat was *with*in his hous, and robbed theym of all theire Iewels and tresoure þat they hadde within theym. And so he fledde, and wold haue goon his weye; but God wold not so; for murdour woll com oute; and so he was take and brought to London, and so to Westminster; and þere he had his dome, to be brought to þe Toure of

[1] *leaf* 217.

London, and þere leide on a hirdell, and drawen thurgh the Cite to Tyburn, and þere hanged for his falshede.

And anon after in this same yere, þe Cardynall and oþer Bisshoppes, and the Duke of Norffolk, with all oþer lordes, bothe spirituall and temporall, had ended theire trete, and made a trewes betwene England and Fraunce and Flaundres for iij. yere; and thus was this matere ended.

And in this same yere, Pope Eugeny, of the high grace and gifte of God, and of his grete avise and gouernance, conuerted and brought all the land of Grece, and oþer provynces and kyngdoms, into Cristen lawe and feith, and to hold the lawe and feith of Rome and of the Pope, as we doon at all tymes.

And in this same yere, on the morne after Seint Martyns Day, Kyng Henry the Sext held his parlement at Westminster, [1] and it endured there vnto Cristmasse next, and myght not acorde. And the morowe after xij. day, the Kyng and his lordes removed it to þe towne of Redyng; and þere the parlement was holden and ended, to the welfare of the King and of the Reame, as we trust and hope in oure Lord God, in tyme comyng.

And in this same yere, aboute Cristmasse, went the Erle of Somersett ouer the see into Fraunce and Normandy, with a roiall peple of lordes, knyghtes, Squyers, men of armes and archers, forto gouerne there þe Kynges peple and landes, and to strenght the lordes and theire peple þat hadde been þere long tyme, savyng and mayntenyng the Kynges right and title.

And in þis same yere, the Duchesse of Clarence deyed in the Abbey of Bermondesey without Suthwerk in Surre. And sho was caried to Caunterbury, and buried beside the Lord Thomas hir husbond, which was Duke of Clarence, on whos soule, God haue mercy! amen!

And in this same yer deyed the Countesse of Warwik, and is buried beside hir lord, Sir Richard Beauchamp, Erle of Warwik: on whos soules, God haue mercy! amen!

And this same yere, in the tyme of Lent, come .vj. persones with theire shippes from byyonde the see, with dyuers fyssh forto vitayle the Cite of London. And when they were delyuerd, and goyng homward, þer come a company of fals men, and pursued theym in a barge, and come vpon theym in the nyght, as þey were aslepe in theire vesseles and rode by anker in Tamys, and slewe all

[1] *leaf* 217, *back*.

þat were there in the shippes, and cutte þeir throtes and cast theym in the water, and after drowned theire shippes,—and the shippes sank in the water,—for no man shuld espye theire falsnesse. And so, *with*in a while after, two of these theves were take and dampned, for theire trespasse, þat they brake the Kynges trewes and peas, to be ledde to Seint Katerins byyonde the Toure of London, and *þere* a payre of Galowes to be sett vp, and hanged *with* cheynes and colers of Iron, till they be wasted and spent. And this was doon on a Friday, in the mornyng, þe xixth day of Aprell.

And in þis same yere, [1]a fuller of Shordiche apeched of treson many worthy men of Kent, bothe Squiers, and o*þer* worthy men of gentelmen; wherof he was atteint, and proved fals of his fals apechement; And so he was brought afore the lawe, and dampned to be drawe and hanged, and his hede smyten of, and sett on London Brigge, and his quarters set on .iiij. gates of London: and this was doon the iiijth day of Maye.

And in this same yere, Sir Richard Wyche, vicar of Hermondesworth in Midd*lesex*, þat somtyme was vicar of Depford in Kent; and oon Roger Norman, of Normandy born, was take and brought before the Bisshop of London, and tofore the clergie, in the Chapitre hous of Seint Paules; and there they bothe were conuicte in heresye. And then there come a writte from the Chaunceller to the Maire and Shirrefs of London, to do execucion on theym; and so they were brought to the Towre Hill on Seint Botulphes Day, and *þere* brent, bothe in oon tonne; and thus they ended theire lives in this world. And þe peple þat sawe theym dye, had grete compassion on theym, for the confession and ende þat they made in theire good byleve, and thanked God of his sonde.

And in this same yere, the xij. day of August, *þer* fell such wederyng of rayn, thunder and lightnyng in þe after None, þat it was hydous, and wonder to se; wherof the peple were sore agast; for the lightnyng fell in Bredstrete, on þe Inne þat is called the Sterre; and there it did moche harme, for it fell in a hey hous where *þer* was .L. cartfull of heye, and more; and it was all lost and distroyed, and was caried into Chepe; and had not been the high mercy and grace of God, and the grete Rayn, the peple dred it shuld haue brent moche of the Cite and destroyed moche good in that partye.

[1] *leaf* 218.

Johannes Paddesle, Maior. Willelmus Whetenhale, Johannes Sutton } vicecomites anno xix^o [A.D. 1440–1.]

And in this yere, and the yere of grace M^l CCCC xlj, the iiij^th day of Nouembre, the Duke of Orliaunce went out of the Reame of England to Caleys, and so forth into Fraunce, and was receyued at Seint Omers of þe Duke [1] of Burgoyne and of the Duchesse his wife, and of many oþer lordes, knyghtes and squyers, and of oþer comons of Fraunce; and so he come into his owne lordship.

And in this yere, the xxvj. day of Nouembre, a knyght of Spayne chalenged Sir Richard Wodvyle, knyght, in certeyn poyntes and courses of werre, on foote, within listes, with polaxe, swerd and dagger. And thys feet was doon in Smythfeld betwene these two knyghtes well and worthely, and bothe good men and worthy in their dedys of armes. And so the Kyng, of his roiall mageste, cryed 'hoo,' and toke their quarell into his gracious handes.

And in this same yere, the xvj^th day of Maye, the Duke of York, the Erle of Oxenford, the Erle of Ewe, Sir Richard Wodvyle, knyght, with oþer Barons, lordes, knyghtes and squyers, men of armes and archers, went ouer the See with all good aray, as armoure and all oþer stuff þat belongeth to werre, to gouerne and kepe the Kynges right in Fraunce and Normandy, and in all Cuntrees in those partyes, to the worship and profite of the Kyng and of the Reame of England. And with theym went ouer the see the Duchesse of York, the Duchesse of Bedford, the Countesse of Oxenford, the Countesse of Ewe, and many oþer mo ladyes with theire lordes, and other gentelwomen and damysels þat bilonged to theym: Almyghty God gouerne theym all, and kepe in his saufgard! Amen!

And in this same yere, the xv^th day of Iuyll, Kyng Henry the vj^th come oute of Essexe to London, in at the port called Algate, and went ouer London Brigge, and so thurgh Suthwerk to his Maner of Kenyngton. And at his comyng in at Algate, the Maire, Aldermen and Comons, in theire best aray, welcomed the Kyng into the Cite; and made grete Ioye of his comyng. And godely the Kyng thanked the Maire and his brethern and all the Comons. And the Kyng was not so sone passed the Cite, bot þat it hayled, rayned and eke lightned, þat well was hym þat was within house; and so ayenst even it fared in the same Maner, wherof the peple

[1] *leaf* 218, *back*.

were sore agast, and aferd of the grete tempest. And so it was spoken emonges the peple, þat þer were som wikked fendes and spirites arered out of helle by coniuracion, forto noy þe peple in the Reame, and to put theym to trouble, discencion [1] and vnrest. An þen was it knowen þat certeyn clerkes, and women þat ar called 'wicches,' had made theire operacion and theire craft to destroy men and women, or whom they list, vnto deth by theire fals craft and worching. Wherof Dame Alianore Cobham, which was þe Duchesse of Gloucestre, was named principally of these actes and fals dedes forto destroy the Kyng, whom God saue and kepe! Bot as God wold saue his hande-werk and seruaunt, made it be knowen openly, all theire fals werkys and tresom þat they ymagyned and wroght, which was openly shewed afore all peple þat wold com to Seint Paules Crosse on the Sonday, the xxiij. day of Iuyll, by Roger þat was hir Clerk, a Nigromancier, by the deuels crafte and ymaginacion in his worching, which was shewed openly in þe sermon-tyme, the day abouesseyd, to all peple þat wold come to se it, of here scriptures, ymages of siluer, of wexe, and of oþer metalles, and swerdys, with many oþer dyuers instrumentes of this fals craft of Nigromancy and the devels powere. And þere Roger, this Clerk, stode vpon an high stage, with all his Instrumentes about hym, spoyling of his garment; and did vpon hym a surplyce, with a crowne of papir vpon his hede, forto forsake all his fals craft of the devell, and for to relapse all þat he had doon and wrought by the devyll and his powere, in presence of the Archebisshop of Canterbury, the Cardynall, þe Bisshop of Wynchestre, þe Bisshop of London, the Bisshop of Salesbury, and many oþer grete clerkys beyng there present; and of oþer lordes temporalles, therle of Huntingdon, therle of Northhumberland, and therle of Stafford, and moo oþer lordes of the Kynges Consayl, and the Maire and Aldermen, with þe Comons of the Cite of London, and many moo people of dyuers partyes, and straungers of the Reame, and aliens of oþer straunge landes beyond the see, beyng in þe [2] Cite of London þat tyme.

And on þe Tewesday, which was Seint James Day þe Apostell, Dame Alianore Cobham come out of the seintwary at Westminster into the Kinges Chapell which is within the Kinges paleys, to the high autere of the same Chapell, which is of Seint Stephen, before the principall clergye of the Reame which were þere present, þat is

[1] *leaf* 219. [1] *leaf* 219, *back*.

to sey, the Archebisshop of Caunterbury, primate of all England, the Cardynal of Wynchestre, the Cardynal of York, the Bisshops of London, Bathe, and Salesbury, and of other many principall Clerkes of the Reame which were there present, and examyned Dame Alianore Cobham of xxviij. dyuers poyntes, bothe of felony and of treson, which þey opened and shewed there to hir. And she ansuered to the Clergye, and sayde 'not gilty'; and so they let hir go sauf ageyn to the Seintwary vnto the morowe, þat was Seint Anne day. And thider she come ageyn as she was charged of the Bisshops; and there was Roger hir Clerk, present, and vouched all these poyntes vpon hir þat were shewed the day aboueseyd to hir, wherof she knowleched somme poyntes at that tyme, the nombre of .v.,—and so she went ageyn into Westmynstre for a certeyn tyme tyll þat the Kyng, with his Consayll, wold do correccion and remedy of all this fals actys and dedys, thus ymagyned and doon to his persone, and his lordes and lieges.

And on þe same day the Kyng sent to London to the Maire and Aldermen and Comons of the Cite, and also to therle of Huntingdon, þe Erle of Stafford, therle of Northumberland, the Tresorer of England, Sir Rauf Cromwell, the Lord Fawnehop, Sir Iohn Cornwayle, Sir Walter Hungerford, and oþer knyghtes and Squyers, to fele and see what was to be doon to amende and destroy this fals dede and cursed ymagynacion to the Kyng and to þe Reame. And they, of theire good discrecion and wysedom, as trewe liege peple ordeyned .iiij. enquestes within the Cite, of substantiall peple; to brynge and shewe trewe inquisicion of all crymes and trespasses þat she was accused of. And they found hir gilty bothe [1]of treson and of felony; and so, thurghout Middelsex, the questes were charged at Westminster of knyghtes and Squyers, to brynge in their verdite; and they indited her in the same poyntes, bothe of felony and of treson. And so, the .xj. day of August, Dame Alianore was take into the handes and ward of Sir Iohn Steward and Sir William Wolff, knyghtes, and to oþer persones as the Kyng and his consayle ordeyned and devised to her, and to oþer of hir consayle and affinite, as they haue deserued, after his tyme and leyser; and she to be kept in holde strongly in the Castell of Ledes in Kent, vnto þe wille of the Kyng and of his Consayle, and all þe oþer persones, bothe men, women wicches, and oþer, to be kept in the Toure of London to his likyng, leyser, and

[1] *leaf* 220.

tym to do to theym as they haue deserued. And so, the .xix. day of Octobre next, by the Kynges comaundment, and his Consayl. Sir Iohn Steward, knyght, with strenght of peple, brought Dame Alianore Cobham from the Castell of Ledes to Westminster, into the Kynges paleys; and there she was put and kept in warde of þe Constable vnto hir answere and examynacion. And the Friday next she was brought into Seint Stephens Chapell, called 'the Kynges chapell,' and 'the Kynges college,' afore the Clergye; and þere was examyned of hir sorcery, and wicchecraft and treson. And so all the poyntes were opened and shewed there to hir by certeyn Bisshops and clerkys, þat is to sey: the Bisshop of London, þe Bisshop of Lincoln, the Bisshop of Salesbury, and the Bisshop of Norwiche, with moo oþer doctours and maysters of diuinite, beyng þere present. And then she withneyed and withseyd all the poyntes þat were put and shewed to hir þat tyme. And than she had respite and day of ansuere till the Monday next. And þere she come ageyn to the same chapell, tofore all the Clergye and Bisshops and doctours, and maystres of diuinite. And then come Roger, hir Clerk, with all his Instrumentes þat were shewed at Seint Paules Crosse aforetyme, and they were shewed to Dame Alianore Cobham; and she withneyed, and seyd 'it was not so; bot þat she did it forto haue borne a child[1] by hir lord, the Duke of Gloucestre,' and þere was Maister Thomas Suthwell, parson of Seint Stephens in Walbroke, and Chanon of þe Kynges Chapell, þat was of hir craft and consayle ayenst hir; and the wicche of Eye, beside Westminster, ayenst Dame Alianore Cobham; and seid þat she was causer and doer of all this werk and dede; And so they were all put vp ageyn as for that tyme. And the xxvjth day of Octobre next suyng, deyed the seid Mayster Thomas Suthwell, in the Toure of London. And the Friday next, the wicche of Eye was brought from the Towre of London into Smythfeld, and there brent for hir fals beleve and wicchecraft þat she had vsed of longe tyme.

Robertus Clopton, Maior. Willelmus Combes, Ricardus Riche } vicecomites anno xx° [A.D. 1441–42.]

And in this same yere, and the yere of grace M^{l}CCCC xlij., the vj. day of Novembre, the Archbisshop of Canterbury and the .ij. Cardynalles of Wynchestre and of York, and þe Bisshops of

[1] *leaf* 220, *back*.

London, Lincoln, Salesbury and Norwiche, *with* dyuers doctors and maistres of diuinite, deuorsed and departed the Duke of Gloucestre and Dame Alianore Cobham, as for matrymony made before betwene theym two. And so Dam Alianore Cobham, by ordyn*aunce* and charge of the Archebisshop of Cant*er*bury and his brethern, was Joyned to hir pen*aunce* for þe grete offence and trespasse þat she had doon ayenst God and holy Chirche, and for the fals sorcery and wicchecraft þat she vsed and longe tyme had wrought, þat she shuld go from Westm*inster* to London .iij. market dayes in the weke, Monday, Wednesday, and Friday, *with* a taper brennyng in her hande: oon to Seint Paules, an other to Cristchirch, and þe thridde to Seint Michell*es* in Cornhill. And the Monday, the xiijth day of Nouembr*e*, Dame Alianore Cobham come by water from Westm*inster* to the Temple brigge, forto do hir charge of penance, on fote thurgh Fletestrete [1] to Seint Paules; and þ*er*e she offred hir first taper. And the Wednesday next she come from Westm*inster* by Water to the Swanne in Tamystrete, and come on fote *with* a taper in hir hande, and come vp Tamystrete to Seint Magnus corn*er*, and vp Briggestrete, and Eschepe and Graschirch, and so to the Corn*er* of Leden-Hall, and so to Cristchirch; and there offred the secund taper. And the Friday next, she come from Westm*inster* by water to the Quene-Hithe, and so vp þurgh Bredstrete into Chepe; and thurgh Chepe into Cornhill, to Seint Michell*es* chirch, and þ*er*e offred a tap*er* of a pound wex*e*; And then was she brought ageyn to Westm*inster*, into the Constable ward.

And the Seturday next, þe xvij. day of Nouembr*e*, Roger Bultyngbrok, Dame Alianore Cobhams Clerk of Nigromancy and sorcery, was brought to the Guyldhall of London, and þ*er*e dampned for his fals treson, and for his fals tresoun, and sorcery and Nigromancy ayenst all holy Chirch; wherthurgh he was dampned to deth by landes lawe. And he was ledde to the Toure of London, and leyd vpon a hirdell, and drawen thurgh the Cite to Tybourne galowes, and þ*er*e hanged, and let downe ageyne all quyk, and his bowell*es* cutte out of his body, and brent afore hym. And then was his hede smyten of, and his body *quartered*; and oon sent to Oxenford, the secund sent to Cambrigge, the thridde to Bristowe, and the fourth to [ ][2]; and his hede was set vpon London Brigge: and þus he ended his life in þis world.

[1] *leaf* 221. [2] Blank space left in MS.

And Dame Alianore Cobham yet kept in warde in þe Constablery of Westm*inster*, vnto the Wednesday, the xxiiij. day of Ianuare; and then she was brought thens to þe Maner of Neyte, which is the Abbotes of Westm*inster*; and þere she was kept Wednesday, Thursday, and Friday till noon. And when she was brought first out of Westm*inster*, þere was such wedryng of thonder, lightnyng, hayll and rayne, þat the peple were sore adredde and agast of the grete noyse and hydous of þe weder, [1] þat sodenly was doon and shewed þere at theire passage at þat tyme. And on the Friday at after-None, she was had at the Kynges comaundment and wille, forth to the Cite of Chestre, in an hors-bere, with strenght of peple; and fro Chestre into þe Ile of Man, to be kept þere in sauf gard, etc.

And in this same yere was a batell doon, the xxx^th^ of Ianuare, in Smythfeld, betwene .ij. worthy men, and bold in armes and fight: þat oon men called Sir Philipe Beef, a knyght of Cateloyne; and on þat oþer party, a Squyere of þe Kynges of England, þat men called Iohn Astley. And at þe comyng to þe feld, eyþer of theym toke theire tent; and then was þe knyghtes son of Cateloyne brought to the Kyng, and the Kyng made hym knyght; and then he was brought ageyn to his faders tent. And then, within a while after, the heraudes of armes called theym bothe oute, to do their fight; and so þey come in bothe armed with all theire wepen about theym; bot the knyght come with his swerd drawe, and the Squyere with his spere. And the Squyer cast his spere to þe knyght; and the knyght avoyded it with the swerd, and cast it to the ground; and the Squyer hent his axe, and went to the knyght at onys, and smote many strokes hard and sore vpon his Basenet and on his hande, and made hym lese his axe. And it fell from hym to þe grounde, and brast vp his vmbrere .iij. tymes, and kaught his daggere, and wold haue smyten hym in the face forto haue slayne hym in the feld. And then the Kyng cryed 'hoo!' and so they were departed; and eyþer of theym went hoom ageyn to his tent. And then the Kyng sent for his squyere Iohn Astley, and made hym to be dubbed knyght, for his worthy and good Iourney þat he did and wrought at þat tyme on his enemy in his noble presence, etc.

And in this same yere, the xviij^th^ day of Maye, began a huge storme of sodeyn wederyng, anon after .iij. of þe clok at after-None,

[1] *leaf* 221, *back*.

vnto .vj. of the clok, of hayle, rayne, thundre and lightnyng, þat the peple wondred þervpon. And þe hayle bete doun all the blossomes of trees, þat the frute was all goon for this yere, at London and aboute London, for þe multitude of watere [1] þat come of þe hayle and rayne.

And in this yere, the xxv day of Maye, the Lord Talbot toke his iourney fro London toward Normandy and Fraunce, for to help to gouerne and kepe vnder the Duke of York, the partyes byyond the see, with knyghtes, Squyers, men of armes and archers, and all maner stuff þat longed to werre: which, Almyghty God gouerne, save, and kepe, and all þe Kynges trewe peple, bothe in that party and in oures! And er he toke his iourney out of this lande, þe Kyng made the Lord Talbot, Erle of Shrovesbury, and his son and heire Lord Talbot.

Johannes Atherley, Maior. Thomas Beaumond, Ricardus Nordon { vicecomites anno xxj° [A.D. 1442–43.]

And in this same yere, and the yere of grace M[l] CCCC xliij., þe Tewesday the xiiij. day of Maye, oon Botiler Steynour, and a Baker, and two oþer men and a preest, which were strong, errant theves, robbyng and quellyng the Kynges peple, were dampned at Westminster to be ledde in a Cart standyng vpright from the Kynges Benche in Suthwerk, and so thurgh the Cite of London, tyll they come to Tyburn, and there to be hanged. And so they deyed, all .v. persones; and at the comyng of þem into the Cart, þere fell suche wedryng from the skye, þat folke were sore adredde and agast, it was so horrible and grete, what of rayne, thondere and lightnyng and hayll, in theire passage to þe deth. And on the Tewesday next suyng, two strong theves, and a woman thefe, were hanged at Tyborn for theire fals offences and trespasses, and murdryng of the Kynges peple.

And in this same yere, þe Monday next folowyng, the woman of Kent þat met with the Kyng at þe Blak-Heth in Kent, and spake to hym boldly, and reviled hym vngoodly and vnwisely for Dame Alianore Cobham, þat he shuld haue hir hoom ageyn to hir husbond, the Duke of Gloucestre. And with these wordes the Kyng wexe wroth, and toke it to hert; and [2] she was arested and brought into prison by the lawe, and so broght to Westminster afore the Iustices of the Kynges Benche. And þere she was repreved

[1] *leaf* 222. [2] *leaf* 222, *back*.

for hir vngoodly langage, and fole-hardynesse to speke so to hir liege lorde, the Kyng. And she ansuered not, bot asked the Kynges grace. And fro þat day she was put vp ageyn in the Kynges Benche till Wednesday next, and then was brought ageyn to Westminster afore the Iustices. And when she was examyned, she wold not speke ne ansuere; and perfore þe Iustices gafe hir dome, þat she shuld stand in a cart vpright, from the Kynges Benche, and so thurgh London, þat all peple myght se hir, with a paupire about hir hede, of hir proude and lewed langage þat she had spoke and shewed to þe Kyng. And so she was caryed ageyn þurgh London and Suthwerk, in þe same Cart, tyll she come to þe Blak-Heth þere as she seide these wordes vnto þe King; and then was caryed ageyn to Suthwerk, and delyuerd ageyn to þe kepers of þe Kynges Benche, for to haue hir Iugement as þe Iuge had ordeyned it for her offence, forto lay as moche yron vpon hir body till she be deed: and thus she ended in this world, for hir proude langage to hir Kyng and souerayn lord.

And in this yere the Kyng made the Erle of Somerset, Markes Dorsett, and ordeyned hym with a grete Navy of peple, of lordes, knyghtes, Squyers, men of armes and archers; with all maner stuff of werre, forto gouerne, kepe and mayntene his landes in Fraunce, Normandy, and Guyan. And he abode longe tyme after in England, vpon the coostes, to abide for shipping and peple þat were not come to hym. And so, the xxj. day of Iuyll, he toke his shipping ouer the see into Fraunce and Normandy, with his Retenew in good aray and in good spede, þurgh the grace of God and his Moder, oure Lady Seint Mary, and by the comfort of Seint George. And in this yere, the vj. day of August, Gyles, the Dukes broder of Bretayn, come to London, and so to þe Kyng, as for his souerayn lord and best beloued frende, forto play and sporte hym here in this lande, for a tyme, [1] and bysought þe Kyng of his grace and good lordship at all tymes. And so he and his were loeged at the Crowne in Fanchirch Strete, for the tyme of his abidyng here, and of the Kynges grace and gode wille.

Thomas Catworth, Maior. — Nicholaus Wyfold / Johannes Norman { vicecomites anno xxij^do [A.D. 1443–44.]

And in this same yere, and the yere of grace M^l CCCC xliiij^ti, anon after Ester, the Duke of Somerset come out of Fraunce and

[1] *leaf* 223.

Normandy into England, and deyed at a Maner of his owne in the west cuntre: vpon whos soule, God haue mercy! amen!

And in þis same yere, on the Wednesday in the Whitson weke, þe Kyng made the Erle of Huntyngdon, Duke of Excestre, in the Castell of Wyndesore; and in the fest of the Exaltacion of the Holy Crosse next folowyng, the Kyng made the Erle of Stafford, Duke of Bokyngham, and the Erle of Suffolk, Markeys of Suffolk and of Norffolk.

And in this same yere, the ambassiatours come out of Fraunce, and oþer partyes byyonde the see, vnto the Kyng, for a mariage for hym, which was a worthy Kynges doughter, þat is called Kyng of Cisile and of Ierusalem. And then the Kyng sent his ambassiatours ouer the see, which was þe Markes of Suffolk, with oþer lordes, Clerkys, knyghtes and Squiers, out of England, to knowe of this worthy mariage, and forto make a finall peas betwene the Reames of England and Fraunce.

And in this yere, the xxijth day of August, Iohn Kerver of Redyng, gentleman, vntruely and vngoodly, and ayenst feith and lawe, depraued the Kyng; wherfore he was take and brought before þe Kynges Consayle, and þere examyned of his vngodely speche and wordes. And he ansuered, and knowleched hym gilty; wherfore the Kynges Consayle Juged hym to deth as a traytour. And this was his full dome: þat he shuld be ledde ageyn to the towne of Redyng, and drawen and hanged, and let downe ageyn all quyk, and then brought ageyn to þe Cite of London, to þe Toure, and from [1] thens drawen to Tyborn galowes, and hanged, and let down ayen all quyk, and then bowayled and quartered, and his bowayls brent, and þen his hede smyt of, and set on London Brigge; and oon quartere to be set vp at Redyng, and the oþer in dyuers townes in þe Reame. And then the Kyng, of his grete grace and mercy, sent in all haste his Charter of pardon of his offence and trespasse þat he had doon ayenst his persone, and so delyuerd hym quyte, and sent hym to Redyng in sauf garde.

And then the xxv. day of Maye next suyng, þe Kyng of Cisyll and of Ierusalem, with the Quene his wife, brought with theym Dame Margaret theire doughter, to þe Cite of Toures in Turyn, in Fraunce, and þere met the Kyng of Fraunce and the Quene his wife. And the Kyng of Fraunce toke the Kyng of Cisill and of Ierusalem by the hande; and so they yede forth togeder; and the

[1] *leaf* 223, *back*.

Quene of Fraunce toke the Quene of Cisill and of Ierusalem by the hande, and so they yede forth togeder thurgh the Cite till they come to the chief Chirch of þe Cite of Tours in Tureyn. And then come this Dame Margarete as for Quene of England, and ledde betwene the Dolphyn of Fraunce and an-oþer grete Prince of Fraunce; and they ledde Dame Margaret to þe chief Chirche, which is of Seynt Martyn, with .vij. dukes and .xiiij. Erles, with oþer grete lordes and ladyes folowing theym, into the same Chirche. And þen come þe Markeys of Suffolk, and all þe oþer ambassatours of England. And þere Dame Margaret made suraunce to þe Markeis of Suffolk, and principally to the Kyng of England, and to all these ambassatours; and she was made þere Quene of England. And þe Markeis of Suffolk and þe oþer ambassiatours made surance to Dame Margaret, in presence of þe kynges and quenes, dukes, Erles, lordes and ladyes, and also in presence of a legate of Rome there beyng at þat tyme. And then the Dolphyn and the oþer prince[s] ledde Dame Margerete, as Quene of England, to þe place þat was ordeyned for hyr worship at that tyme, and these kynges, and þese .ij. quenes folowyng theym, with all the dukes, Erles, lordes and ladyes, with þe ambassiatours of England. And þere Quene Margarete was set in þe [1] myddes of the halle, as principall of this fest, and ryally by hir oone, as Quene of England. And those .ij. oþer quenes were at a table togedir vpon the right side of Quene Margarete. And lordes and ladyes were worthely served thurgh all the Court; and all þe peple of comons þat folowed theym had grete chere of mete and drynke; and they made ioye and myrth, and song (all with high voyce) Nowell! Nowell! Nowell! and peas, peas, peas be to vs! Amen!

Henricus Frowyk, Maior. Stephanus Forster, Hugo Wyche. vicecomites anno xxiij^cio [A.D. 1444–45.]

And in this same yere, and the yere of grace M^l.CCCC. xlv., þe vj^th day of Nouembre, whan all maner stuff of ordynaunce was made and doon for the Quenes comyng into England, þat is to sey, mete, hors, harnesse, chares, with all stuff þat belonged to theym,—and þen þe Markeis of Suffolk and þe lady his wife, with oþer ladyes and gentelwomen, lordes, knyghtes and squyers, and all oþer seruitours þat bylonged to theym, and to þe ordynaunce, for oure Kynges honure and worship went out of London to þe see-costes,

[1] *leaf* 224.

forto shippe theym and all theire ordyn*aunces*, forto mete *with* Quene Margaret and *with* hir company, beyng in Fraunce, and condite hir into England in sauf gard to hir lord, Kyng Henry of England and Fraunce, by the gift and *grace* of oure Lord Ihesu Crist. Amen!

And in this yere, the first day of Februar*e*, was grete wedryng of wynde, hayle, snowe, rayne, thunder and lightnyng, at the after-None; and it endured .iiij. oures; and it did grete harme to þe Cite of London, for it brent Seint Paules grete steple, bothe on þe west syde and on þe south syde. And þe peple espied þe fyre, and come to Seint Paules forto quenche the fyr*e* in þe steple. And goodly they laboured, and quenched þe fyre as ferre as they kouth serche and fynde. And it was quenched *with* vyneger. And so the Maire herd of this grete hurte, and come *with* grete peple to Seint Paules, to here and se how it stode there, and to help þem, if nede had been. And þen þe peple *with*drowe theym, and went hoom ageyn, and trusted to God it had been in rest and peas.

And then anon after, betwene viij. and ix. of þe clok, þe fyre brast [1] oute ageyn of the steple, more feruent þen it did before, and did moche harme to the lede and tymber of the steple. And anon come þe Mayre and moche peple, and *with* vynyger, and staunched þe fyre þat was right fervent,—blessed be God of all his giftes! Amen! And þen after, at the Ledenhall in Cornhill of London, a standard of tre was set in myddys of the pavement fast in the grounde, nayled *with* holme and Ive, for disport of Cristmasse to þe peple of the Cite. And it was þat tyme torne vp and cast downe *with* þe malign spirite, and the stones of the pavement all about cast in þe strete to dyu*ers* houses, so þat the peple were sore agast of the grete fervent tempest*es* þat shewed that tyme.

And in this yere, the xviijth day of Feuerere, þ*er*e was a bataylle ordeyned in Smythfeld, and set to fight *with*in lystes for life and deth, betwene Thomas Fitz-Thomas, Pryoure of Kylmayn in Ireland, which appeled Sir Iames Botiller*e*, Erle of Ormond, of treson þat he did in þe Cuntre of Ireland ayenst hym. And this Prioure withdrowe hym, and come not to batayle, where thurgh, as leude, he was convict. And the Erle of Ormond was redy in his tent to ansuere hym; bot the Prioure come not.

And in this yere, the .xxiij. day of Feuerere, the Kyng held his p*ar*lement at Westm*inster*, to Archbisshops, bisshops, abbotes

and Priours, and to dukes, Erles, lordes and Barons, knyghtes, squyers, and to Citezens, Burgeises, and comons. And this parlement endured vnto Palme-Sonday; and then it was adiourned by þe King, and his Consayle of his lordes of the parlement, vnto the fest of Seint George was passed. And then, the .xxixth day of Aprell, þe parlement bygan ageyn at Westminster with archbisshops and oþer lordes, as is beforeseid.

And in this same yere, about Midlent, they brought Quene Margaret out of high, douce Fraunce, into the partyes of Normandy by hir frendes; and the Frenssh partye was there as well as þe Englissh lordes, and abode hir with theire peple, with all worship and reuerence þat myght be doon in worship and reuerence of oure Kyng. And so þey brought hir into the Cite of Roan in sauf garde; and þere she abode vnto þe fest of Estere and lenger, by .xiiij. dayes, with these lordes and ladys of England, þat is to say, the Duke of York, the Duchesse his wife, þe Markes of Suffolk, the lady his wife, the Erle of Shrovesbury, þe Countesse his wife, with oþer lordes and ladyes þat abode in Fraunce and Normandy, with knyghtes, squyers, men of armes and archers, þat abode þere to kepe [1] the Kynges right in all landes of the partyes in Fraunce and Normandy.

And then, after hir restyng þere in þe Cite, she was conueyed to þe towne of Houndflete by lande, þere to haue shipping to com into England to hir lord þe Kyng, hir husband; and with hir come the Markeys of Suffolk, with lordes and ladys, knyghtes, squyers, and gentelwomen, men of armes and archers, and oþer peple, and brought Margarete sauf into the Reame of England. And she landed at þe towne of Hampton; and þere she was worthely receyued of þe peple of Hampton and of þe peple of the Cuntre aboute, with all reuerence and worship þat they couthe do. And after, oure Kyng come, and met with Dame Margarete, the Quene, and brought hir to an abbey in þe newe Forest, þat men calle þe abbey of [ ][2]; and there þe Kyng was wedded to Dame Margarete the Quene, with the Bisshop of Salesbury þat men called Maister William Ascu. And then the Kyng and his lordes departed from hir, and then met þe Cardinall of Wynchestre with the Quene, and conueyed hir with all reuerence and honoure þat he kouth do, to a Maner of his; and there she abode all nyght with all hir peple. And there was doon grete chere, with chargeable

[1] *leaf* 225. [2] Blank space left in MS.

costes, to hir and to all the peple þat come with hir þat tyme, in reuerence and worship of þe Kyng. And so Quene Margaret was conveyed in the Cuntreyes of Sussexe and Surre till she come to þe Archbisshop of Canterburyes Maner in Croydon, in Surre; and there she rested hir all nyght with grete worship and reuerence, and with all the chere þat myght be doon to hir persone as for þat tyme. And on þe morowe after, she went to þe Maner of Eltham; and þere she restid her after hir grete iournay and travayle .viij. dayes, till she wold com to se the Cite of London.

And þe Friday, þe xxvjth day of Maye, the Mayre of London, with the aldermen and Shirrefs and comons of the Cite rode to þe Blake-Heth in Kent; and þere they abode and hoved on horsbak vnto the Quenes comyng. And so they come with hir to London; and she was brought to þe Toure of London; and þere she rested hir all nyght. And þere the Kyng, at the reuerence of þe Quene, and the first comyng, made .xlvj. Knyghtes of the Bath. And þen on þe morowen at after None, the Quene come from the Toure in a hors-bere, with .ij. stedes trapped all in white damask poudred with gold; and so was the vesture þat she had on; and þe pylowes and all þe bere in oon sute; and hir here combed downe about hir shulders, with a coronall of gold, riche perles and precious stones, with all lordes on horsbak, and ladyes in chares, þat is to sey, xix. chares of ladyes and theire [1] gentelwomen, and all the craftes of the Cite of London goynge on fote in theire best aray vnto Seint Paules. And by þe wey, as she come þurgh þe Cite, there were shewed and made many devises and storyes, with angeles and oþer hevenly thinges, with songe and melody in dyuers places; and þe condites ran wyne, bothe white and rede, for all peple þat wold drynk. And then she was had oute of þe bere, and went on fote vp to þe high auter of Seint Paules; and þere she offred, and come oute ageyn to the bere at the west dore of Seint Paules; and so she passed forth till she come to Westminster, with lordes and ladys, and with the Maire and Aldermen and Comons of þe Cite of London. And there they toke theire leve, and went hoom ageyn.

And on þe morowe, þat was Sonday, þe .xxx. day of Maye, was þe Coronacion and fest rially and worthely holden at Westminster in þe Kynges palays; and iij. dayes after, hold open Iustes and revell within þe seintwary, of lordes, knyghtes, and oþer þat wold com at þe reuerence of this fest royal.

[1] *leaf* 225, *back*.

And in this yere, þe .xvij. day of Iuyll, come þe ambassatours of Fraunce to London, forto trete for peas betwene England and Fraunce, þat is to say, the Archbisshop of Reynes, þe Erle of Gudoam,[1] with oþer lordes, knyghtes, squyers and clerkes of Fraunce, by the grace of God for a fynal peas.

Simon Eyre, Maior. Johannes Derby } *vicecomites*
Galfrid Feldyng } anno xxiiij^to^
[A.D. 1445–46.]

[1] ? MS. Gudoam, Endoam, Endoam.

[G]

FROM THE CAPTURE OF ROUEN (1419) TO THE ACCESSION OF EDWARD IV (1461).

[*Addit. MS., Brit. Mus.* 10,099, *leaf* 181.]

How þe king of Englond, Henry þe v^te,[1] was made heritier & Regent of Fraunce, & how he weddid Quene Katerine. ca. ccxlv.[2]

Anone[3] after þat Rone was goten, Depe, & many other townes in baas Normandie yafe þeme ouer with-out stroke or siege, when þei vnderstode þat þe Kyng had goten Rone. Also þis same yere had bene A pees made & sworen bitwen þe Duke of Burgoyne & þe Dolphyn, which wer sworne vpon[4] our Lordes body þat þei[5] shold love & Assist eche other ayenst þer enmyse. [6]And after þis, contrary to þis othe, þe Duke Iohn of Burgoyn was slayn & pitousely murthred in[7] presence of þe Dolphyn; wherfor þe Frensh men wer gretly devided, & of veray necessite labored to haue A traitie with þe King of Englond, ffor þe King of Englond wan dayly of þame, townes, casteles & fortresses. Also þis same yere was Quene Iane Arested & brought to þe Castel of Ledys in Kent, and one, frere Randolf, A doctour of Divinitie, hir confessor, which afterward was slayn by þe person of þe Tour falling at wardes & debate. And after Quene Iane was delyuered, In[8] þe vij^te yeer, bothe þe[9] kinges of Englond & of Fraunce[10] wer Accorded; & Kynge Henry was made Heir & Regent of France, & wedded dame Kateryn, þe Kyng of Fraunce Doughter,[11] at Troyes in Champayn, on Trinite Sonday. And þis was made bi þe meanꝫ of Philipp, newly made Duke of Burgoyn, which was sworn to King Henry for tavenge his fadre deth, & was become Englissh. And þan þe King, with his new wife, went to Paris, wher he was rially receyved. And fro thens he, with his lordes & þe Duke of Burgoyn, & many other lordes of Fraunce, laid seige to diuerse

[1] henry þe v^te *om.* HC. [2] ca. ccxlv. *om.* H.
[3] And A non H. and anone C. [4] of H. [5] þe H.
[6] *leaf* 181, *back.* [7] in þe H. in the C. [8] Also H. [9] þe *om.* C.
[10] kynges of fraunce & of Englond C.
[11] þe kinges Doughter of fraunce H. the kynges doughter of fraunce C.

townes & Castels þat held of þe Dolphyns part, & wan þam; bot þe town[1] of Melun held long, for *per*-in was gode defenders.

In þe viij yere of his regn,[2] þe King & Quene came ou*er* þe[3] see, & landed on Candelmasse day in þe morow, at Dov*er*; and [the] 4
xiiij[4] day of Feu*er*yere, þe King com to London; & þe xxi day of þe same moneth þe Quene come thid*er*[5]; And þe[6] xxiiij day of the same,[7] she was crowned at Westmyns*ter*. Also þe same yeer, Anon after Ester, þe King held a *par*lement at Westm*ynster*, 8
at which[8] it was ordeyned þat þe gold in Englissh coygne shuld be weyed, & none receyved but by weght. And Anone after Wittsontyde, þe King sayled to[9] Caleys, & so forth passed[10] in-to Fraunce. And in Marche, þe xxij day, before þe King come ou*er*, 12
þe Duke of Clarence was slayn in Fraun*ce*, diu*er*se[11] other lord*es* take pr*is*oners, as þerl of Hun*t*yngdon, þerle of Som*er*sett, w*ith* diu*er*se other: & al was because þei wold not take Archers w*ith* þam,[12] bot thought to haue do[13] w*ith* þe Frenshmen þer[14] self, 16
w*ith*out[15] thame. And[16] yett, when he was slayn, þe Archiers come & rescued þe body of þe Duke, which þei wold have caried w*ith* þame: God haue m*er*cy of[17] his soul; for[18] he was A valiant man! And[19] þe same yeer, bitwene Cr*is*te'mas & Candelmas, 20
þe town of Melun was yholden to þe Kynge.

In[20] þe ix yere of his regn,[21] vpon[22] saynt Nicholas Day in Dec*em*ber, was borne Henry, þe Kynges first begoten son[23] at Windesore, whose god-fadres at fou*n*t-stone was Henry, Bisshop 24
of Wynchestre, & Iohn, Duke of Bedford; & þe Duches of Holande was[24] god-moder; And Henry Chicheley,[25] Erchebisshop of Cant*er*bury, was[26] god-fad*er* at co*n*firmyng. And in þe x yere of his regn,[21] þe Cite of Mewes, in Brie,[27] was goten, which hadd 28
bene longe besegied. And þis same yeer þe Queen shipped at Hampton, and sayled ou*er* to þe King in Fraun*ce*, wher she was worsshypfully receyved of þe King, & also of þe Kynge of Fraunce, hir fadir, & of hir modir. And thus Kinge Henry wan 32

[1] tour H. [2] of his regn *om.* HC. [3] þe *om.* HC.
[4] xiiij Ad. the xiij C. [5] thider *om.* HC. [6] þe *om.* H.
[7] same moneth H. [8] which *par*lement H. which *per*lement C.
[9] sayld in to H. [10] & passed so forth HC.
[11] & many H. and diuerse C.
[12] take w*ith* þame Archers H. take with hem Archers C. [13] do *om.* H.
[14] them HC. [15] *leaf* 182. [16] Bot H. [17] on C. [18] for *om.* HC.
[19] in An And H. [20] And in H. [21] of his regn *om.* HC.
[22] on HC. [23] henry the kinges fyrst begoten son was born H.
[24] hys H. [25] Chicheley the H. [26] was hys H.
[27] in Brie *om.* H.

fast in Fraunce, & held gret Astate, & satte at Dyner at A gret feste in Parys, crowned, & þe Queen also, which had nat ben seen to[1]-fore; And al[2] peple resorted vnto his court. But as for[3] þe Kyng of Fraunce, he held none Astate ne reule, but was left almoste Allone.

Also þis yeer þe weder-cokk was sett vpon Poules staple at London).[4] And þis yeer, in[5] þe moneth of Auguste, þe Kyng wex sike at Boys de Vincent. And when he saw he shold dye, he made his testament, and ordeyned many thinges nobley for his soul, And Devoutly receyved al þe rightes of holy churche, in so fer-forth, þat[6] whan he[7] was enoynted, he said þe seruice with þe preste; And at þe verse of þe psalme 'Miserere mei deus' þat was "Benigne fac dunc in bona voluntate tua, Syon, ut edificentur muri Ierusalem)," he bad tarie þer, and said þus: "O good Lorde, þou knowest þat[8] myne entent hath bene, & yet is,[9] if I might lyve, to reedify þe walles of Ierusalem." & þen þe preest proceded forth, & made An end; & Anone aftre, þis moste noble prince & victoriouse kynge, flour in his tym) of Cristen chiualrie, whom) al þe[10] world dovpted, gaf his soul in-to þe handes of God, & died, & made An end of his naturel lif, at þe said Bois de Vincent beside [11]Parys, þe xxxvj yere of his Age: on whose soul, God haue mercy![12] Þan was þe body enbawmed & cered, & laid in A rial chare, & an ymage like unto him was leyd vpon þe corps, open, with diuerse baners & horse couered rychely with[13] Armes[14] of Englond & Fraunce,[15] and also[16] tholde Armes of seynt Edwardes, seynt Edmond, & oþer, And with gret multitude of torches; with whome went þe Kyng[17] of Scotland, & many oþer lordes,[18] which accompayned þe body til it come to[19] Westmynster, bi London, in Englond. And in euery town) by þe way he had solempny his Dirige on þe evyn), & masse on þe morne[20]; & moche Almesse was giffen) to[21] þe[22] pore peple bi þe-way. And þe vij[te] day of Nouembre after, þe corps was brought to[23] London with[24] gret reuerence & solempnice,[25] & had[26] to Westmynster, wher he[27] now lieth: it was

[1] A H. [2] all the H. [3] to C.
[4] was sett up a poulys steple at london the wethercok H.
[5] in *om.* H. [6] þai Ad. that C. [7] þat whan he *om.* H. [8] wel H.
[9] is yett H. [10] this H. [11] *leaf* 182, *back.*
[12] mercy Amen HC. [13] *with* the H. [14] tharmes C.
[15] & Fraunce *om.* H. [16] also *om.* H.
[17] kyng HC. ũyng Ad. (scribe's blunder). [18] lordes the H.
[19] vn to C. [20] morow H. [21] vnto H. [22] þe *om.* C.
[23] thurgh H. through C. [24] was H. [25] *for* solempnite?
[26] & had *om.* HC. [27] he *om.* H.

worshipfully[1] buried; & after, was[2] leyd on his tumbe A rial ymage like to him-self, of siluer & gylt, which was made at þe[3] cost of Quene Katerine. And thus ended, & was[4] enteired & buried, þe noble King Henry þe Fyft: on whose soul,[5] God have mercy![6]

Of þe lawds of King Henry þe Fyft, & what he ordeyned for Kyng Richard & for him self after his deth. Capitulum CC xlvj.[7]

HEre is to be noted *þat* þis King Henry þe Fyft, was A noble prince after he was King & crowned. how-be-it, tofore[8] in his youth he had bene wilde &[9] recheles, & spared nothing of his lustes &[10] desires, but Accomplisshed þanne after his lykyngs; but as sone as he was crowned, enoynted & sacred,[11] Anone sodenly he was chaunged into A new man, & sett al his entent to lyve vertuously, in mayntenyng of holy church, destroyng of heretikes, keping Iustice, & defending of his Reame and[12] subgectes. And for-as-myche as his fader had deposed by his labour[13] þe[14] gode King Richard, & pitousely made him to dye, & for þe offense done to hym Ayens his legeance, he had sent to Rome to be Assoiled þer-of, for which offense, our holy fader [the] Pope[15] enioned hym to make him be prayed-for perpetuelly, &, like as he gert[16] be taken from him his[17] naturel lyfe, þerfor he shold do fynd iiij tapers to brenne perpetuelly Aboute his body, þat, for þe extinccion of his bodely life, his soul may[18] be remembred and lyve in heven in spirituel lufe; & also þat he[19] sholde, euery weke, on þe day as it cometh About of his deth, have A solempne masse of Requiem on þe Eveyn, to-fore A dirige with ix lessons, and A dole to poure peple[20] al-wey on þat day, of[21] xj^{s} viij^{d}, to be delyd penny mele. At[22] ones in þe yere, at his Anniuersarie, his entierment to be holden in þe moste honest wise; & to be delyd þat day[23] xx^{ti}[24] in pens to poure peple; And to[25] euery monk to haue xx s.: which al this thinges performed[26] þis noble Kynge, for his

[1] Rially H. [2] ward H. [3] þe *om.* C. [4] & was *om.* H.
[5] soule And all cristen soules HC. [6] mercy Amen HC.
[7] CC xlvj *om.* H. [8] Afore H. [9] & *om.* HC. [10] ne HC.
[11] sacred and anoynted H. [12] A H.
[13] by hys labour has deposyd H. [14] þe *om.* H.
[15] the pope our holy fadyr H. the pope our holy fadre C.
[16] had don to H. had done to C. [17] his his Ad. [18] may euer HC.
[19] *leaf* 183. [20] poure Ad. pore peple H. poure peple C.
[21] of *om.* H. [22] And HC. [23] þat day *om.* H. [24] xx pounde C.
[25] toke Ad. to HC. [26] with all performyd thes thinges H.

fader[1] King Henry þe Fowrt, seth he[2] performed it[3] nat during his life, whom, as it is seyd, God towched, & was A lepre er he died.

Also þen þis noble prince lete do caH al þabbottes & poures of Seynt Benett ordre in Englond, & had þame in þe chapiter house of[4] Westmynster, for þe reformacion of þe ordre, wherin he had communicacion; And also with bisshoppes & men of þe spiritueltie, in so fer forth þat þei doubted sore þat[5] he wold haue had þe Temperalties out of þer handes; wherfor, by þauis, labour, & procuring of þe spiritualtie, [þei] Encoragied þe King to chalenge Normandy & his right in Fraunce, to þend to sett hym A werk þer, þat he shold nat seke occasion to entre in-to[6] such matere; And perfor[7] al his life[8] after, he labored in þe Werres,[9] in conquering gret part of þe Reame of Fraunce, þat bi þe[10] Agrement of þe[10] King Charles had all[11] þe gouernaunce of þe Reame of Fraunce, And was proclamed Regent & heir of Fraunce. And so, nat-with-stonding al þis gret Werre þat he had, yett he remembred his soul, & also þat he was mortal, & must dye; for[12] which he ordeyned by his life, þe place of his sepulture, wher he is now buried; & euery day iij masses perpetuelly to be songen in A fair chapel ouer his sepulture, of[13] which þe middel masse,[14] þe fyrst & þe last,[15] shall be as is Assigned by him. As it Appereth by þise verse[16] folowyng:—

Henrei misse quinti sunt hic tabulate,
Que successiue sunt per monachos celebrate.
Die dominica.[17] Prima sit[18] Assumpte de festo Virginis alme;
Poscit *Christus* postremam[19] de morte resurgens.
Feria ij[a].[20] Prima salutate in[21] festo Virginis extat;
Nunciat Angelicis laudem postrema choris,
[22] Feria iij[a].[23] Esse Deum natum de Virgine, prima facetur,
Commemorat natam, sic vltima missa Mariam.
Feria iiij[a].[24] Prima celebretur ad honorem neupmatis Almi;
Vltima conceptam denunciat esse Mariam;
Feria v[ta].[25] Semper prima coli debet de corpore *Christi*.
Vltima sit facta de Virgine purificata;

[1] fader for H. fadre for C. [2] hys fader H. his fadre C.
[3] it *om.* H. [4] at H. [5] lest H. þat *om.* C. [6] to *om.* H.
[7] perfor *om.* HC. [8] life *om.* H. [9] in þe Warres *om.* H.
[10] þe *om.* H. [11] at Ad. aH HC. [12] for the H. [13] of the H.
[14] masse & HC. [15] last messe HC. [16] these verses H.
[17] Die dominica *om.* H. [18] sit affinite H. [19] xpc' postremã Ad.
[20] fferia ij[a] *om.* H. [21] in *om.* C. [22] *leaf* 183, *back*.
[23] fferia iij[a] *om.* H. [24] fferia iiij[a] *om.* H. [25] fferia v[ta] *om.* H.

Feria vj^ta.[1] Condecet ut *pri*ma celebretur de cruce sancta,
Atque salutate fiet postrema Marie.
Omnes alii *sanc*tos est *pri*ma colenda super nos:
Sabbato[2] Vltima de Requie *pro* defunctis petit esse;
Semper erit media de *propri*etate diei.

And yet þe Noble King Henry þe Fyft founded ij houses of Religion: one called Syon, beside Braynford[3] of þe ordre of Seynt Brigitt, both of men &[4] women; And on þat[5] oþer side of þe ryver of Tamyse, an house of monkes of[6] Chartrehouse: In which ij places he is continuelly prayed for, night & day; for euer, when they of Syon rest,[7] þei of þe Chartrehouse done þe[8] seruice; And in[9] like wise, whan þei of þe Chartrehouse rest, þe oþer gon to. And bi þe ryngyng of þe[10] belles of eyther place,[11] ayther[12] knoweth when þai[13] haue ended þer seruice, which be nobly endowed, & done dayly þer great Almesse dedes; As in þe Charetrehouse certeyn childre be found to[14] scole; & at Sion, certeyn Almesse gyven dayly.

And yet beside al this, he had founded A recluse, which shal be alway A preste, to pray for him, by þe said[15] Chartrehouse, which[16] preste is wel & sufficiently endowed for him & A seruaunt. Loo! here may al princes take ensample bi þis noble prince þat regned so lytel tyme, nat fully x yere, þat[17] did so many noble Actes, as wel for his soul to be perpetuelly remembred & prayd fore, as in hys worldly conquestes. And he, beyng in his moste lusty Age, despised & eschewed synne, & was vertuouse, & A gret Iustyser, in so mych þat al þe princes of Cristendome, & also of hethenes, dradd him,[18] & had[19] determyned in per[20] self—if God wold haue spared him—þat he wold haue werred Ayenst þe Sarazenes. And for to know þe Ayed of other princes, & al þe passage in þat Iorney, he sent a knight[21] of Henaude, named Ser Hugh Delanoy, vnto Ierusalem; but er he returned, he died at Boys du Vincent, in þe xxxvj^te yere of his Age, vn[22] whose soul, God haue mercy! Amen![23]

[1] fferia vj^ta *om.* H. [2] Sabbato *om.* H. [3] Brayford Ad. Braynford C.
[4] & of H. [5] the H. [6] of the H. [7] rest then H.
[8] their C. [9] in *om.* H. [10] there H. [11] of eyther place *om.* H.
[12] ech H. eche C. [13] oþer H. [14] to the H.
[15] syde the H. [16] the which H. [17] þat *om.* HC.
[18] Cristendome drad hym An also of heythenes H. Cristendome dradde him & also of hethenes C.
[19] had *om.* H. [20] hym HC. [21] knyght H. [22] of H. on C.
[23] Amen *om.* HC.

[1] [2]**How King Henry þe Sixt regned, beyng A childe, nat one yere of age; And of þe batail of Vernoyl in Perche. Ca*pitulum* CC xlvij.**[3]

After King Henry þe Fyft, regned Henry þe Sixt[4] his son),[5] A childe, & nat fully A yere olde; whose regn) began) þe first day of Septembre, the yeer[6] of our Lord God[7] M[l] iiij[c] xxij.[8] This King, beyng in his[9] Cradel, was moche doubted & dradd, bicause of þe gret conquest of his fadre, & also of[10] þe wisdom) & guyding of his vncles, þe Duke of Bedford & þe Duke of Gloucestre. This yeer, þe xxj day of Octobre, died Charles,[11] King of Fraunce, and was[12] buried at seynt Dionise[13]; And þan was þe Duke of Bedford made Regent of Fraunce, & þe Duke of Gloucestre was made *protectour* & defendour of Engl*ond*. And the first day of Marche after,[14] was Ser William Taillour, *preste*, degraded of his *prestede*; and on þe morne after he was brent in Smythfeld for heresie. Þis yere Sir James Styward, King of Scott*es*, maried Dame Iane þe Duches, Doughter of Clarence, of hir first housbond, þerle of Som*er*sett, at seynt Mary Ouerays. Also þis yere, þe xvij day of August, was þe batail of VernaiH in Perche, bitwene þe Duke of Bedford, Regent of Fraunce & the Duke of Alanson); which was A gret bataiH. Þe Duke of Bedford had on his side w*ith* him þerle of Salesbury, Montagu, & þe Lorde Talbot, & al þe power þat þei couthe make in Normandie—þe garnisons kept,—And also many Capitaynes, w*ith* moche peple of þe Duke of Burgoyns. And on þat other side was þe Duke of Alaunson, þe Duke of Touron, þat was þerle Douglas, þerle of Boughan, w*ith* many lord*es* of Fraunce, & gret company of Scottes & Arminakes. And þan þerle Douglas[15] called þe Duke of Bedford "Iohn w*ith* þe[16] leden sword." And he sent hym worde Ageyn) þat he shuld fynd þat day þat hys sword shold be[17] off steel; And so þe batail Ioyned on both sides, & þei[18] fought long, so[19] þat þer wist no man who shold haue þe better A gret while; but at þe last, as God wold, þe victorie fil vnto þenglish p*ar*tie, for þer was slayn) þerle Douglas, which A litel before[20] was made[21]

[1] *leaf* 184. [2] Cap. iiij. H. [3] Ca. ccxlvij *om.* H.
[4] þe sixt *om.* HC. [5] son) but H. sone but C.
[6] yere Ad. the yere H. the yere C. [7] A H. God *om.* C.
[8] Ml cccc And xxij H. [9] in to Ad. in his HC. [10] of *om.* C.
[11] Charles the H. [12] lyeth H. lieth C.
[13] Denys in fraunce H. denys C. [14] after *om.* H.
[15] Douglas *om.* H. [16] þe *om.* H. [17] sword was H. [18] þei *om.* HC.
[19] so *om.* HC. [20] *leaf* 184, *back*. [21] made the H.

Duke of Tounar, þerle of Bewghare, þerle of Almarre, þerle of Tounar, þerle of Vaundore, & þe Vycount of Nerbornne,—which was one of þame þat slew Duke Iohn of Burgoyn, knelyng tofore[1] þe Dolphyn,—& many moo,[2] to[3] þe nombre of xM[t] & mo. And þer was taken prisoner þe Duke of Alaunson, & many oþer lordes & gentiles of Fraunce; but Scottes þat day wer slayn down right the[4] s[u]bstaunce of þame all.

In þe iij yere of King Henry þe vj[te], þe Duke of Gloucestre maried þe Duches of Holand, & went ouer þe[5] See with hir to[6] Henaude, for to take possession of his wife enherytaunce; wher he was honorably taken & receyved[7] for[8] lorde of þat[9] land. But sone after, he was fayn to returne home Ageyn, & left his wife, & his tresour þat he brought, with[10]-in a town þat[11] is called Mounse in Henaude, which promised for[12] to be[13] trew to him; nat-with-stonding, þei deliuered þe lady to þe Duke of Burgoyn, which sent hir to Gaunt; And fro þens she Ascaped in A mannes Aray, & come in to Zeland, to A town of his[14] Awun called Zierixee. And fro þens she went to A town in Holand called þe Ghowde, & þer she was strong enough, & withstode þe said Duke of Burgoyn. And sone after, þe Duke of Gloucestre sent ouer vnto[15] Zeland þe lorde Fitz-Water, with certeyn men of Werre & Archiers, for to help & socour þe fore-said Duchesse of Holand, which londed at a place in Seland called[16] Brewers-haven, wher þe[17] lordes of þe contre come down & fought with him; & in conclusion, he was fayn to withdraw him & his meyney to þe see Ageyn. But yett he slew and hurt diuerse lordes & moche peple of þat same contre, And so returned home Ageyn with his meyne, & prevaled nothing.

Also þis same yere þerl of Salisbury, þerle of Suthfolk, the Lorde[18] Willeby & Lorde[19] Scalys, with þer retenu, leid seige to þe Cite of Mauns, which[20] Cite was yholden to þem in short tym, with many oþer strong townes & castels, to þe nombre of xxxvj. Thys tyme al Normandy & A gret part of Fraunce vnto Orliaunce, was vnder thobeiansce of the King[21] of Englond; And al þe remanent of Fraunce was in gret[22] tribulacion & mischief.

[1] A fore H. [2] & many moo *om.* H. [3] vnto C.
[4] right Ad. . rygt the H. right the C. [5] þe *om.* C. [6] in to C.
[7] receyned and takyn H. honourably receyued and taken C. [8] of for H.
[9] the HC. [10] *with* hym H. with hym C. [11] þat *om.* CH. [12] for *om.* H.
[13] to haue ben H. [14] hir C. [15] into C. [16] called the H.
[17] fore H. [18] Lorde Ad. the lorde H. the lord C. [19] the lord HC.
[20] the which HC. [21] king Ad. the kyng C. [22] gret *om.* H.

[1]How þer was A gret Affray like to haue bene[2] bituene the Cardinal & þe Duke of Gloucestre; And of þe Coronacion of King Henry þe vi^te, both in England & in Fraunce. Ca*pitulum* CCxlviij.[3]

IN þe iiij^te yere, þe same night þat þe Mair of London,[4] Iohñ Coventre, had taken his charge, was A gret watche in London for Affray þat was[5] bitwene þe Bisshop of Wynchestre & þe Duke of Gloucestre, *Protectour* &c'. ffor þe Mair, *with* þe peple of þe Cite, wold Abide by þe Duke of Gloucestre as *Protector* of þe Reame, but bi[6] labour of lordes *þat* went bitwen, & in especial bi þe labo*ur* of þe *Prince* of Portyngale, *þer* was Apoyntm*ent* taken so *þat* þer[7] was no harme done. And aft*er* þe batail of Verneil in Perche, þe Duke of Bedford come ou*er* into Engl*ond*; & on Witsonday þe[8] same yere, at Leycestre, he dubbed King Henry knight; And forth*with* þe said King Henry dubbed al thise[9] knightes whose names folowes, *þat* is to say[10]: Richard, Duke of York, Also þe sone & heir of þe Duke of Northfolk, þerle of Oxenforth, þerle of West*mer*land, þe sone and heir of þerle of North*um*breland, þe sone & heir of þerle Wormond,[11] þe lorde Rose, *Sir* Iames Botler, þe Lord Natrauas,[12] *Sir* Henry Gray of Tankeruille, *Sir* Will*iam* Nevile, Lorde Fawconbrigge, *Sir* George Nevyl, Lorde Latimer, Lord[13] Welles, Lord[13] Berkley, þe sone & heir of Lord[13] Talbot, *Sir* Rauf Grey of Werk, *Sir* Rob*ert* Ver, *Sir* Rich*ard* Gray, *Sir* Edmond Hungerforde, *Sir* Robert Wynkford, *Sir* Iohñ Botler, *Sir* Reynold Cobham, *Sir* Iohñ Passheley, *Sir* Thom*as* Tunstal, *Sir* Iohñ Chydiok, *Sir* Rauf Langeford, Sir Will*iam* Drury, *Sir* Will*iam* Ap-Thomas, *Sir* Richard Carbonel, *Sir* Rich*ard* Wydeuiñ, *Sir* Iohñ Shirdelowe, *Sir* Nichol Blonket, *Sir* Rauf Ratclyff, *Sir* Edmond Trafford, *Sir* Will*iam* Cheyne, *Sir* Will*iam* Babyngton, *Sir* Iohñ Iune, &[14] *Sir* Gillebert Beauchampe. þan in þe v^te[15] yere þe Duke of Bedford, *with* þe Duchesse his wife, went ou*er* þe[16] see to Caleys, & A litel tofore went[17] ou*er* Henry,[18] Bisshop of Wynchestre. & on our Lady day Annu*n*ciacion, in our Lady churche at Caleys, þe Bisshop of Winchestre, when[19] he had songen masse, [20]was made

[1] *leaf* 182. [2] bene A grete Affraye H. [3] Cap. iiij. H.
[4] þe mair of London *om.* H. [5] þat was *om.* H. [6] bi the H.
[7] þat Ad. þat *þer* H. that ther C. [8] this C. [9] *þes* H.
[10] *þat* is to say *om.* H. Wite C. [11] Ormond C.
[12] matrauas C. [13] the lord HC. [14] & *om.* HC.
[15] Item my v^th H. [16] þe *om.* C. [17] where H. [18] henry the H.
[19] quen H. [20] *leaf* 185, *back.*

Cardinal; &, he knelyng tofore[1] þe high Altere, þe Duke
Bedford sett þe hatt on his hede; & þer wer his bulles red, as w
of his charge As þe reioysing of his benefices spiritueH & temper

And þis same yere was gret habondance of Rayn, þat þe
stance of hey & of[2] corne was destroyed, for it rayned alw
euery other day. Þis same yere þe gode Erle of Salesbu
Thomas Mountagu, leyd Seiege vnto[3] Orlyaunce; at whic
he was slayn with A gyn þat[4] come out [of] þe town.[5] And
forth þat[7] he was slayn, English men neuer gat ne preuail
Fraunce, bot euer after[8] began to lefe, bi[9] litel and lytel, til al
lost. [10]Also þis same yere A Breton murthered A gode wedow[11] wit
out Al-gate, which wedow fond him for almesse; & he bare awa
al þat she had; And after þis he toke grith of holy church at Seyn
Georges in Suthwerk, & þer toke þe crosse, & forswore þis land
And as he went, it happend þat he came bi þe place where he did
þis cursed dede in þe subbarbis of London; & þe women of þe same
parissh come out with stones and[12] CaneH dunge, & slew & mad
an ende of him, nat-withstonding þe constable & many other me
beyng present to kepe him; for þer wer many women, & had n
pite.[10] Also [t]his same yere þe Duke of Northfolk, with man
gentil men & yomen, toke his barge, þe viij day of Nouembre,
Seynt Mary Oueryes, for to haue go thrugh London Brigg; & thrug
misguydynge of þe barge, it ouer-threw on þe Pyles, & many me
drowned; but þe Duke him-self, with ij or iij, lepe vpon the piles,
and so wer saued with[13] help of men þat wer Aboue þe brigge,
which cast down Roopes, by[14] which þei saved þam-self.

This same yere, on Seynt Leonarde day, King Henre, beyng
vij yere old[15] of Age, was crowned at Westmynster: at whose cora- 28
nacion wer made xxxvj knightes. Þis yere, on Seynt George day,
he passed ouer þe see to[16] Caleys, toward Fraunce. Aboute þis
tyme & Afore, þe Reame beyng in gret [17]misery & tribulacion, þe
Dolphin, with his partie, began to make Werr, & gett certeyn 32

[1] Afore H. [2] of *om.* H. [3] to H. [4] which HC.
[5] town on whos saule god haue mercy H. oute of the toune, on whos soule god haue mercy C.
[6] ffor H. [7] þat *om.* H. sith that C.
[8] after *om.* H. [9] bi *om.* HC.
[10–10] Also þis same yere breton murthered . . . many women & had no pite *om.* H.
[11] Wedowe in her bedde C. [12] stones Ad. stones and C.
[13] through H. [14] by the H. [15] old *om.* HC. [16] in to H.
[17] *leaf* 186.

places, & make destres vpon Englissh men by þe meanꝺ of his Capytayns, *þat* is to wete, La Heer and Potonde, Sayntralles, and especial A maid, which[1] they named "la Puceꝺe[2] de Dieu." This maid rode like A man, & was A valyant Capitaynꝺ Among þame, & take vpon hir many gret[3] enterpryses, in so myche *þat* þei had A[4] byleve to haue recouered al *þer* losses by hir; nat-*with*-stonding, at þe last, after many gret feates, by þe help & prowesse of *Sir* Iohn Luxemburgh, which was A noble capitaynꝺ of þe Dukes of Burgoynꝺ, & many Englisſh men, Pykerdes and Burgones, which wer of our *par*tie, before þe townꝺ of Compyne, þe xxiij day of May, þe forsaid PuceH was taken in þe felde, Armed like A man, & many oþer Capitaynes *with* hir, & wer al brought to Roanꝺ; & *þer* she was put in prisonꝺ, & *þer* she was Iuged by þe law to be brent. And þen she said *þat* she was *with* childe, wherby she was respited A while; but in conclusion it was founꝺ *þat* she was not *with* child, & þen she was brent in Roane, &, þe other Capitaynes wer put to raunson, & entreted as men of werre bene Acustomed &c'.

This same yere, About Candelmesse,[5] Richard Hunder, A wollepacker,[6] was dampneꝺ for an heritike, & brent at Tour-HiH. And About midlente, *Sir* Thomas Baggely, preest, & vicar of Mauen in Est-sexe, beside Walden, was disgraded & dampneꝺ for an herytike, & brent in Smythfeld. Also[7] þis[8] same yere, whiles þe King was in Fraunce, *þer* wer many heretikes & lollardes, *þat* had purposed to haue made A rysing; & þei[9] casten billes in many places; but,—blessed be God almighty!—*þer* Capitaynꝺ[10] was takynꝺ, which was called[11] William Maundeuil, A wever of Abyndonꝺ, & also[12] bayly of þe same townꝺ, which named him-self 'Iack Sharp of Wigmoresland in Walis'; & after-wardꝺ[13] he was beheded at Abendonꝺ in þe Wittsone weke, on þe Twesday.

This same yere, þe vj^te^ day of Decembre,[14] Kyng Henry þe Sext was crowned King of Fraunce at Paris, in þe chirch of our Lady, *with* gret solempnite, *þer* beyng present þe Cardinal of Englonꝺ, þe Duke of Bedford & many oþer lordes of Englonꝺ & of Fraunce.[15] And after þis coronacionꝺ, a[16] gret fest holden at Paris,

[1] the which H. [2] Puce Ad. pucelle H. pucelle C.
[3] gret *om.* H. [4] had a *om.* H. [5] About Candelmess *om.* H.
[6] packer about candelmasse H. [7] And also HC. [8] in this C.
[9] þei *om.* HC. [10] þe Capteyn of theme H. the Capitayn of hem C.
[11] whos name was H. whos name was C. [12] also *om.* HC.
[13] ward *om.* H. [14] *leaf* 186, *back.*
[15] of fraunce and of England H. of fraunce & of englonꝺ C.
[16] & C.

the King returned from thens to Roan, & so toward Caleys. And[1] þe ix day of Feuer*yer*, he[2] landed at Dover, whom al þe comones of Kent met at Beramdon, bitwen Cante*r*bury & Dover, al in rede hoodes; & so come forth til he come to þe Blak-Hethe, wher he was mett *with* þe Mayre of London,[3] Iohn Wellis, *with* al þe craftes of London clad al in white; & so þei brought him to London þe xxj day of þe same moneth. This same yere[4] was A restreynt of þe wolles of Caleys made by þe soudiours, by cause þei were nat payed of *per* waagies; wherfor þe Duke of Bedforth, Regent of Fraunce, beyng þan Capytain, come to[5] Caleys þe Twesday in þe Ester weke; And on þe morne after, many[6] sowdioures of þe town wer Arested & put in warde. And in[7] þe same weke he rode to Terewyne; & bi þe mean of[8] Bisshop of Terewyn, he wedded þerles doughter of Seynt Poul, & came ageyn to Caleys. And þe x[9] day of Iune, on Seynt Barnabe day, *per* wer four[10] soudioures of Caleys, þat wer chief Causers of þe restreynt, beheded, þat is to say: Iohn Maddesley, Iohn Lunday, Thomas Palmer, & Thomas Talbot, & C & x[11] banniss*h*ed þe town þat same[12] tyme: & before wer banniss*h*ed C xx[13] soudioures. And on[14] Mydsommer ev*yn* after,[15] come þe Lorde Regent & his wife to London.

[16]Of þe heresie of Praghe, & of [þe] Counsel of Aras. &c.[16] Capitulum CC xlix.[17]

Aboute þis tyme Pope Martyn died; & After him, Eugeny þe Fourt was Pope, þat[18] was pesably chosen in Rome by þe Cardinalles, and was very & vndoubted Pope; but shortly after, he was put out[19] & expulsed fro[20] Rome,[21] *in* suche wise þat he was fayn to flee naked. In þis same tyme was þe Counsel of Basile, to which Counsel he was cited [22]to come; And because he come nat, they deposed hym; but he forsed[23] nat, ner sett[24] þerby, but[25] gat þe Cite of Rome, & Abode Pope stil[26] xvij yere.

This yere, About Witsontide,[27] þe heretikes of Praghe wer destroied; for at two Iourneys wer destroyed of þame mo þan[28]

[1] And *per* H. [2] he *om.* HC. [3] of London *om.* HC.
[4] yere *per* H. [5] into H. [6] many of the H. [7] in *om.* H.
[8] of the HC. [9] xi HC. [10] four principall H.
[11] Talbot and other H. Talbot And an Cx C. [12] same *om.* H.
[13] An C & xx H. and xx C. [14] of H. [15] after *om.* H.
[16–16] *om.* HC. [17] Cap iij H. [18] þis H. This C. [19] out *om.* C.
[20] out of C. [21] he was expulsed out of Rome H. [22] *leaf* 187.
[23] rought HC. [24] sett nought H. sette not C. [25] but he H.
[26] styll pope H. still Pope C. [27] about Witsontide *om.* H.
[28] mo þan *om.* H.

xxij M[l], *with* þer[1] Capitayns, þat is to say,[2] Procapius, Saplico, & Lupus presbiter. Also þer was taken on[3] lyve, maister Piers, clerk, an Englisshman &[4] heretike. Also þis same yere was A gret frost & A strong, during xj wekes; for it began on[5] seynt Katerines evyn, & lasted vnto[6] Seynt Scolastica Day in Februare: In which tyme þe vyntage þat come fro Burdeux come over Shotters Hill.

This yere was þe counsel of Aras, & A gret treaty bitwen þe King of Englond & þe King of Fraunce, wher was[7] Assembled many gret lordes of bothe parties: At which counsel was offred to þe Kyng of Englond, many gret thinges by þe meane of A legate þat come fro Rome, which was Cardinal of Seynt Crosse, which offres wer refused by þe Cardinal of Englond, & other lordes þat wer þer for þe Kinge. Wherfore þe Duke of Burgoyn, which had bene long English sworne, forsoke oure partie, & retourned Frensh, by meane of þe said[8] legate, & made A pees *with* þe Frensh kyng, receyving of þe King, for recompense of his fader deth, the counte[9] Pontien, þe lordeshipp of Macon, *with* mych other þat was[10] specified in þe said[8] treety; And so our Embassatoures come home Ayen in wers case þan[11] þei[12] went forth,[13] ffor þei lost þer[14] þe Duke of Burgoyn, which had bene, *with* his Burgoynons & Pycardes, A singler help in al þe Conquest of Normandy & of Fraunce.

This same yere was A gret batail on þe See, bitwen þe Ienewense3 & þe King of Aragon; of which batail þe Ianeuenses had þe victori, for þei toke þe Kinge of Aragon, þe King of Naverne, & þe gret Maister of Seynt Iames in Galise, *with* iij[c] knightes & squyers & moche other peple: & this was of[15] seynt Dominices day.

This same[16] yeer wer seen thre soles[17] Sonnes at ones, & Anone folowed þe threfolde gouernance[18] in þe chirch, þat is to wete, of Eugeny þe Pope,[19] of the Counsel, & of þe nevtralitie. Also þis same yere M[l] iiij[c] xxxiiij, was A passing gret wynd, by[20] which steples, houses &[21] trees wer ouerthrowen. About þis tyme was an holy maid in Holand, called Lydwith, which lyued onely bi miracle, not etynge any mete. This yere þe Duke of Burgoyn began his

[1] hir C. [2] wete C. [3] of H. a C. [4] And an H.
[5] of H. [6] tyll H. [7] was *om.* H. [8] same H. [9] counte of H.
[10] as is HC. [11] þan *om.* H. [12] the H. [13] forth *om.* HC.
[14] ffor *per* þei lost H. [15] on HC. [16] same *om.* H.
[17] *leaf* 187, *back.* [18] rule and gouernance H.
[19] þe Pope *om.* HC. [20] by the H. [21] & *om.* H.

ordre at Lyle of 'þe golden Flyes' & ordeyned certeyn knightes of þe ordre, & made statutes & ordinances moche Acordinge vnto[1] þe ordre of þe Garter. Also þis same yere þe Frenshe men had enterprised to have stolen Caleys in þe fysshing tyme, for many botes of Fraunce held[2] saufe conduyt to come to Caleys for to take hering; And þe Sowdiours of þe town had A custome to come to[3] chirch, & leve þer staves stonding at þe[4] chirch dore, which staves[5] þe Frenshemen, which wer Araied like fissheres, had purposed to[6] haue taken so[7] þere wepon, & wynn þe town. But one of þame lay with A comon woman[8] þe night to[9]-fore, & he[10] tolde to hir þare counsel; And she on þe morne told þe lieutenaunte, which forth[11]-with commaunded þat euery man shold kepe his wepen in his[12] hand, sacryng tyme and other. And when þei Aperceyved þis, þat[13] þei wer myspoynted, they sayled streght to[14] Depe, & stale & toke þat town. And on[15] Newyeres even after, þei toke Harflete; And thus Englishe men began to losse A litel and[16] liteH in Normandy.

[17]How Caleys and Guyhenes wer beseged by þe duke of Bergoyn, & how þei wer rescued by þe duke of Gloucester.[17] Capitulum CCl^mo.[18]

This yere was A gret noyse thrugh aH Englond, how þe Duke of Burgoyn wolde come & besegie Caleys. Wherfore þerle of Mortayn, with his Army þat he had for to haue gone with[19] in-to Fraunce, was contermaunded, & charged þat he shold go to Caleys, which was at þat tyme wel vitailed & manned; ffor Sir Iohn[20] Ratcliff was lieutenaunt of þe King in þat town. And þe Baron of Dudlay, lieutenant of þe Castel. And þe ix day of IuyH, þe Duke of Burgoyn, [21]with al þe power of Flaundres & moche other peple, come before Caleys, & sett his[22] siege About þe town; & euery town of Flaundres had þer tentes bi þame self. And þis Siege endured thre wekes. In þe meane while þe Duke of Gloucestre, beyng Protector of England, toke þe moste parte of þe lordes of Englond, & went ouer þe See to Caleys, for to rescu þe town, or for[23] to feght

[1] on to H. [2] had HC. [3] to the H. [4] þe *om.* C.
[5] which staves H. which stauis C. *om.* Ad.
[6] so to H. [7] so *om.* H. [8] woman *om.* H. [9] be H.
[10] he *om.* HC. [11] for H. [12] his *om.* H. [13] þat *om.* H.
[14] forth H. [15] of H. [16] and a C. [17—17] *om.* H.
[18] Cap. iij vice iij H. [19] on H. [20] Iohn of H. [21] *leaf* 188.
[22] sette his C. [23] for *om.* HC.

with þe Duke & his hoste, if they wold haue bidden. This tyme, London & euery gode towun of Englond sent ouer þe[1] See to þis rescuse certeyn peple wel Arayed, of þe best & chose men for þe Werre. And þe ij day of August, the said Duke of Gloucestre Arriued at Caleys *with* al his Army & v^{C} shippes & moo. And þe Duke of Burgoyn[2] & al his ooste þat lay in þe[3] Siegie, As sone as þei espyed þe Sayles in þe See, before þei[4] Approched Caleys haven, sodenly in A mornyng departed fro þe Siege, levyng behind þame moche stuffe & vitailes, & fled in-to Flaundres & Pycardy. And in likewise did þe Siege *þat* lay tofore Guynes, wher-as they of Guynes toke þe gret gonnes of brasse[5] called Gedcon,[6] & many other gret gonnes & serpentines. And þen when þe Duke of Gloucestre was Arryved *with* aH his oost, he went into Flaundres, & was þerin xi dayes, & did but litel harme; except *þat*[7] he brent ij fair villagies, Popering & Belle, & oþer houses *þat*[8] wer of no[9] strenght, & so he[10] returned home Ageyn. Also þis same yere þe King of Scotland beseged Rokesburgh[11] *with* myche peple; but Sir Rauf Gray departed fro þe CasteH, & ordeyned for rescouse; but as sone as þe Kyng vnderstode his departyng, he sodenly brak his siege & went his way,[12] levyng moche ordynnance[13] behinde him; wher he gat no worsshipe.

This same yeer, þe ij Day of Ianiuer, Quene Katerine, *þat*[14] was þe Kinges moder, & wife to Kyng Henry þe Fyft, dyed, & departed out of þis world, & was brought rially thrughe London to[15] Westmynster; & þer she lyeth worsshipfully buryed[16] in oure Lady Chapel. Also[17] þis same yere, þe xiiij day of Ianiuer, fiH down þe yate *with* þe[18] towr on it,[19] on London Brigg[20] towarde Southwerk, *with* two Arches, & al *þat* stode þeron. This same[21] yere was A gret treaty holden bitweene Grauenyng & Caleys, bitwen þe King[22] & Duke of Burgoyn, In which was þe Cardinal of Englond & þe Duke of Northfolk, for þe King, *with*[22] many othir lordes. And for þe Duke, was[23] þe Duchesse, having ful power of hir lorde as

[1] þe *om.* HC. [2] of Burgoyn *om.* HC. [3] *þat* H. [4] the H.
[5] brasse which was H. [6] Dygcon H. digeon C. digeo (*in margin*) Ad.
[7] *þat om.* C. [8] which HC. [9] of Add. of no HC. [10] he *om.* H.
[11] Rokesbrught H. burgh Ad. [12] way and C.
[13] stoff H. [14] which HC. [15] And so to HC.
[16] And þer lieth buryed worschippfully H. [17] And H. And also C.
[18] A H. [19] on it *om.* H. [20] *leaf* 188, *back.* [21] same *om.* H.
[22]–[22] And the Duke of Burgoyn where for the king was displesyd And sent for þe Cardinall of Englond þe Duke of Norfolk And H. Bourgoyne where for the king was the Cardinall of englond the duke of norfolk and C.
[23] was duble H.

Regent & lady of his landis, wher[1] was taken, by trewes[2] of both parties, An Abstinence of Werre for A certeyn tyme in þe name of þe Duchesse, & nat of þe Duke, because he had gone from his othe & legeance þat he had made to King Henry; þerfor King Henre neuer wold[3] write, ne Apoynt, ne[4] haue to do with him after, but al in þe Duchesse name.

Also þis same[5] yere, Quene Iane died, þe ij day of Iuyl, which had ben King Henry þe iiij^te^ wife; & was caried fro Carmondsey vnto Cauterbury, wher she lieth buried by[6] King Henry þe iiij^te^, hir houseband. This same[5] yere died al þe lions in þe Toure of London, which[7] had nat ben seen many[8] yeeris before out of mynde.

[9]How Owayne, a squyer of Wales þat had wedded Quene Kateryne, was Arested; And of þe Scisme bitwene Eugeny & Felix.[9] Capitulum cclj.[10]

IN þe xvj yere of King Henry, died Sigismond, þemperoure of Almaign, & Knight of þe Garter; whos entierment þe Kyng kept at Seynt[11] Poules in London ryally, wher was made a ryall hercie; and[12] þe King in his Astate, clad in blew, was at even at dirige. & on[13] þe morne at masse, &c'.[14] And after hym was elect & [15]chosen Albert,[16] Duke of Ostrych, which had wedded Sigismondes doughter, forto be Emperour; &[17] also was Albert[18] taken & receyved to be Kinge of Beme & of[19] Hungarie bi reson[20] of his wyfe; for he left[21] after him none other heir. Þis Albert was Emperour bot one yere, for he was poysond, [22]& died þerof.[22] Some say he dyed of A flixx: but he was A vertuouse man & A[23] piteful, so moche þat al þe peple þat knew him[24] said þat[25] þe world[26] was nat worthy to haue his presence.[27]

[1] which H. [2] sadenes H.
[3] the kyng neuer wold C. the king wold neuer H.
[4] with hym bot ne H. [5] same *om.* H. [6] with H.
[7] the wich H. the which C. [8] in many H.
[9–9] How Owayn . . . Eugeny & Felix *om.* H. [10] Cap iij 21 H.
[11] Seynt *om.* H. [12] in Ad. [13] in H. [14] &c'. *om.* H. [15] An H.
[16] Albert *om.* H. [17] & *om.* C. & also *om.* H.
[18] also was Ad. Albert was H. This was C.
[19] of *om.* HC. [20] bicause H. because C.
[21] his wyfe þat was Sygysmonds doughter which lefte H. his wife that was Sigismundis doughter whiche lefte C.
[22–22] and so he died HC. [23] A *om.* HC.
[24] him *om.* H. [25] þat *om.* H. [26] worde H.
[27] hys presence. In þis yere was þe Kynge of Scottes murthered in his chambor by night pytously which king had ben prisson xv yere in Englond And thei þat slew hym were takyn afterward and hade cruel Iustice H.

This same[1] yere, one Owayn, A squyer of Wale3, A man of low byrth, which had many A day[2] to-fore secretly wedded Quene Kate*r*ine, & had by hir iij so*n*nes & a doughte*r*, was taken & com*m*au*n*ded to Newgate, to p*r*ison, bi þe[3] lorde of Glowcestre, P*r*otecto*ur* of þe Reame. And þe same yere[4] he brake p*r*ison by þe mean of A preest þat was his Chapelayn. And afte*r*, he was[5] taken ageyn bi þe[3] Lorde Bemond, & brought Ageyn to Newgate, which afterward was delyue*r*ed at large; & one of his so*n*nes afte*r*ward was made Erle[6] of Richemou*n*t, Another,[7] Erle of Penbroke, & þe third, A monk of Westmynste*r*, which monk died sone after. This same[1] yere also, on New-yere day, at Baynard CasteH, fiH down A stakk of wod sodenly at afte*r*none, & slew iij men[8] mescieuously, & foul hurt othir. Also at Bedford, on Ash-twesday,[9] wer iij men[10] murthred wi*th*out strok, by falling doun of a steir, as þei come out of þe*r*[11] comon haH, & many foul hurt. In þe xviij yere, Sir Ric*h*a*r*d Beauchamp, þe gode Erle of Warwick, died at Rone, he beyng þat tyme lieutenau*n*t[12] of þe King in Norma*n*die; and fro þens his body was brought to Warthewick, where he lieth worsshipfully in a new chapel on þe South side of þe Queer. Also þis[13] yere was A gret derth of Corne in al[14] Englond; for I[15] busshel of whet was worth iij^{s} iiij^{d} in many places of Engl*o*n*d*,[16] & yet men might nat haue ynoghe[17]; wherfore Stephen Brown, þat tyme Mair of London, sent vnto[18] Pruse, & brought to[19] London certeyn shippes laden with Rye, which eased, & did myche gode to þe peple; for korne was so skarce in Engl*o*n*d* þat in some placez[20] pore peple made þame brede of braken ferne[21] rotes.

This yere þe gene*r*al Cou*n*sel of Basile deposed Pope Eugeny; & þei chese Felix, which was Duke of Sauoy; & þan began þe Scisme which[22] endured vnto þe yere of oure Lord Ihesu Crist[23] M^{l} iiij^{c} xlviij.[24] This Felix was A devout p*r*ince, & saw þe so*n*nes of his so*n*nes, & afte*r*, lyued An holy &[25] deuoute lyfe, & was chosen Pope

[1] same *om.* H. [2] A day *om.* H. [3] my HC.
[4] And þis yere H. And this yere C. [5] *leaf* 189. [6] the Erle H.
[7] And on oþer the H. & anothir C. [8] m^{l} Ad. men HC.
[9] schyrday H. a shrireday C. [10] m^{l} Ad. xviij men HC.
[11] the H. [12] levtenannt þat tyme H. [13] þis same H.
[14] al *om.* H. [15] a C. [16] for 1 busshel . . . of Englond *om.* H.
[17] thought H. [18] in to C. [19] in H.
[20] þat in some placez *om.* H. places of Englond C.
[21] braken) *om.* HC. *interlined as a gloss* Ad. [22] the which H.
[23] Ihu c*r*ist *om.* H. [24] M^{l} CCCC & xlviij H.
[25] holy & *om.* H.

by[1] þe Counsel of Basile. Eugeny [was] deposed; & so þe Scisme was long tyme. And þis Felix had no[2] moche[3] obedience, bi-cause of þe Neytralite for þe moste parte; & wel nygh al Cristendome obeid & repute Eugeny for verey Pope:—God knoweth who was þe[4] verey Poper of þame both; for both occupied, during þe lyfe of Eugeny. This same[5] yere, *Sir* Richard, which was[6] vicare of Hermetesworth, was degraded of his prestehode at Poules, & brent at Tour[7] Hill, as for an heretike, vpon[8] Seynt Botulphe day; how-be-it,[9] at his deth he died A gode Cristen man; wherfor, after his deth moche peple come to þe place wher he was[10] brent, & offred, & made an hepe of stones, & sett vp A crosse of tree, & held him for A Seynt, til þe Mair & shereves,[11] by þe commaundment of þe Kyng & of[12] bisshopes, destroyed it, & made þer A dong-hiH. Also þis same yere þe shyreves of London sett out of Seynt Martyns þe Grannt, þe sanctuarey, fyve persones, which afterward wer restored Ageyn to þe[4] same[13] sanctuarye by þe Kinges Iusticez. After Albert þe iij, Frederike was chosen Emperoure. This Frederike, Duke of Osterike, was long Emperoure, & differred for to be crowned at Rome because of þe[4] Scisme; but after þat vnion was had, he was crowned with Emperial Diademe, with gret[14] glorie & trivmphe, of Pope Nicholas þe Fourt: this was A man peseble,[15] & of singular pacience, nat hatyng þe chirch: he wedded þe King of Portyngale doughter &c'.

[16] How þe Duchesse of Gloucestre was Arested for treson, & committed to perpetuel prison in þe Ile of Mann; And of þe deth of Maister Roger Bolingbroke.[16] Ca. cclij.[17]

IN this yere,[18] Elianour Cobham, Duches of Gloucestre, was Arested for certeyn poyntes of treyson leyd Ageynst hir, wher-vpon she was examyned in Seynt Stephens Chapel at Westmynster, before þerchebisshop of Caunterbury; & þer she was enioyned to open penaunce, forto go thrugh Chepe, bering a tapere in hir hand, & aftir in[19] perpetuel prison in[20] þe Ile of Man, vnder þe keping of Sir Thomas Stanley. Also þat same tyme wer Arested Maister Thomas SouthweH, A chanon of Westmynster, Maister Iohn Hune,

[1] at H. [2] not C. [3] grete H. [4] þe *om.* H.
[5] same *om.* H. [6] was *om.* C. [7] *leaf* 189, *back.* [8] on HC.
[9] how weH HC. [10] had been H. he had be C. [11] & *om.* H.
[12] of *om.* H. [13] same *om.* HC. [14] gret *om.* H.
[15] pesebly quiete and HC. [16–16] *om.* H.
[17] Capitulum 22 H. [18] yere dame H. [19] to HC. [20] into H.

[1]A chappeleyn of þe said ladys,[1] Maister Roger Bolynbroke, A clerk vsyng Nygromancie, & one Mariery Iurdeman, called 'þe wyche of Eye' beside Westmynster. Thise wer Arested as for beyng of counsel with þe sayd [2]Duchesse of Gloucestre. And as for Maister Thomas Southwel, he died in þe Towr þe night before he[3] shold have benne regned on þe morow[4]; for so he said him self þat he shold die in his bedd, & nat bi Iustice. And in þe[5] xx yere,[6] Maister Iohn Hune & Maister Roger Bolyngbroke wer brought to[7] þe Guyldhalle in London, & þer, before þe Mayr, þe lordes & [8]chief Iustice of Englond, wer þei[9] rayned, & dampned both[10] to be drawen, hanged & quartred; but Maister Iohn Hune had his chartre, & was pardoned by þe King; but Maister Roger was drawen to Tiborne, wher he confessed þat he died gyltles, & neuer had trespassed in þat þat he died fore; nat-withstanding he was hanged,[11] heded, & quartred;[12] And Margery Iurdemain was brent in Smyth-felde. Also þis yere[13] was A gret Affray in Flet Strete by night tyme, bitwen men of court & men of London, & diuerse men slayn, & many[14] hurt: & one Herbotel was chief[15] cause of þe misgouernance & Affray. Also þis yere, at chesing of þe Mair of London, þe commones named Robert Chapton, & Raulyne Holand, taylor. & þe Aldermenn toke Robbert Clapton, & brought him at þe[16] right hond of þe Mair, as þe custome is. And þan certeyn talyoures & other[17] hand-crafty men cried "nay! nat þat[18] man, but[19] Raulyn Holand!" Wherfor þe Mair, þat was Padesly,[20] sent þo þat cried so[21] to Newgate, where they Abode a gret while, & wer wel[22] ponysshed.

In this same[23] yere wer diuerse Embassatoures sent in to Guyan for A mariage for þe King for þerles doughter of Arminak, which was concluded; but, by þe mean of[24] þerle of Suthfolk, it was lett & put Aparte. And after þis, þe said Erle of Southfolk went ouer þe[25] See vnto[26] Fraunce, & þer he treted þe mariage bitwen þe King

[1–1] *om.* H. [2] *leaf* 190. [3] *þat* he H. [4] morne HC. [5] þis H.
[6] yere þe xx H. the yere xx C. [7] into H. [8] and the H.
[9] þei *om.* HC. [10] both *om.* H. [11] hanged *om.* H.
[12] quartered, on whos saule God haue mercy H. quartred, on whos soule God haue mercy C.
[13] yere the lord talbott leyd feire to Deype, But þe Dolphyn rescowed it And wan þe Bastell þat Englishman hade made. Also þis yere H.
[14] som H. somme C. [15] chief *om.* H. [16] þe *om.* C.
[17] other *om.* H. [18] this HC. [19] no H.
[20] þat was padesly H. that was padysly C. *om.* Ad. [21] so cried HC.
[22] wel *om.* H. [23] same *om.* H. [24] þe mean of *om.* H.
[25] þe *om.* H. [26] into HC.

of Englond & [1] þe Kinges doughter of Cecil & of Ierusalem. & þe next yere it was concluded fully, þis [2] mariage; by which [3] mariage þe [4] Kyng shold delyuer to hir fader þe Duchie of Angeo & þerldome of Mayn, which was þe key of Normandy. Then departed þe Duke of Suthfolk, with his wife & diuerse lordes & knightes, in þe moste rial astate [5] þat might be, out of Englond, with new charez & palfreys, which went thrugh Chepe. & so went ouer þe See, & receyved hir, & sith brought hir in Lent [6] after to Hampton, wher she landed, & was ryally receyved. And on Candelmes evyn before, bi A gret tempest of thondre & lightenyng at afternone, Poules steple was sett A fire on þe middes of the [7] shafte in þe tymbre, which was qwenched bi force [8] of [9] labour, [10] & specially bi þe labour [10] of þe morow masse preste of þe Bow in Chepe, which was thought inpossible, saufe only bi [11] þe grace of God.

This yere was þerle of Stafford made & create Duke of Bokynham; þerle of Warewik, Duke of Warwike; þerle of Dorsett, Marques [12] of Dorsett; & þerle of Suthfolk was [13] made [14] Marquys of Southfolk.

[15] How King Henry þe Sext [16] wedded Quene Margaret; And of hir Coronacion. [15] Capitulum CCl[i]ij. [17]

IN this yere Kyng Henry maried at Southwyke Quene Margaret; & she come to London [þe] xviij day of May; And bi þe way al þe lordes of Englond receyved hir worsshipfully in diuerse places, & in especial þe Duke of Gloucestre. And on þe [18] Blakhethe, þe Mair of London, [19] Aldermen, & al þe crafte-men [20] in blew gowunnes browdred with þe deuyse of his craft, þat þei might be biknowen, mett with hir, with rede hoodes, & brought hir to London, where were diuerse pagentis & continuance of diuerse histories shewed in diuerse placez of þe Cite Rially, & castelles. And þe xxx day of May þe forsaid Quene was crowned at Westmynster; and þer was Iustes iij dayes during, with-in þe sayntuarie tofore þabbey. This yere þe Prior of Kilmain Appelled

[1] And Marget H. [2] þat H. that C. [3] the which H.
[4] by the which the H. [5] *leaf* 190, *back*. [6] the lent H. the lente C.
[7] of Ad. of the C. [8] bi force *om*. H. [9] by H.
[10–10] and . . . labour *om*. H. [11] bi *om*. HC. [12] þe marques H.
[13] was *om*. H. [14] þe H. [15–15] How . . . Coronacion *om*. H.
[16] þe sext *om*. C. [17] Capitulum 23 H.
[18] þe *om*. H. [19] of London *om*. C.
[20] men *om*. HC.

þerle of Vrmond of treson, which had A day Assigned to þame forto feght in Smythfeld. And þe listes wer made, & þe feeld dressed; but when it came to poynt, þe King commaunded þat þei shold nat fight, but toke þe quarel in-to his own hond. & þis was[1] done at þe Instance & laboure[2] of certeyn prechiours & doctoures of London, as Maister Gilbert Worthington, parson[3] of [4]Seynt Andrews in Holborn, & other. Also þis same yere come A gret Enbassate into Englond out of Fraunce, forto haue concluded A perpetuel pees; but in conclusion it turned vnto[5] A trewes of A yere. About þis tyme dyed Seynt Bernardyne, A gray frere[6] which began þe new reformacion of þat ordre in many places, In so myche þat þei þat wer reformed bene called 'Obseruantes,' which Obseruauntes bene encrecid gretly in Italie & in Almaigne. This Bernardin was canonized bi Pope Nicholas þe Fyft In þe yere Mt CCCCl.[7] Iohannes de Capestrauo was his disciple, whiche profited moche[8] to þe reformacion of þat ordre; for whome God shewed many a fair[9] miracle. Also here is to be noted, þat fro þis tyme forward, King Henry neuer profited[10] ne Went forward; but Fortune began to turn fro him on al sides, als[10] wel in Fraunce, Normandy, Guyan, as in Englond. Some men hold opinion þat King Henry gaf commission plenerly[11] to Sir Edward Hulle, Sir Robert Roos, Dean[12] of Seynt Seuerynes, & oþer, to conclude A mariage for him with þerle of Arminakes suster, which was promysed (as it was seid) & concluded; but afterward[13] it was broken, & he wedded Quene Margarete, as A-fore is seid; which was A dere mariage for þe reame of Englond;[14] [15]ffor it is knowen verely þat, for to haue hir, was delyuered þe Duchie of Angeo & þe Erldome of Maign, which was þe key of Normandie, for þe Frensh men tentre. And Aboue þis, þe[15] said[16] Marquys of Southfolk axed in playn parlement A fyftenth & an half for to feche hir out of Fraunce. Se now[17] what A mariage was þis, as to þe comparison of þat oþer mariage of Armynyke! for þer shold haue ben delyuered so many castels & townes in Gwyhen; And so moche gode shold haue bene yiffen with hir, þat al Englond shold haue bene enryched þer-by,[18] but contrary-wise feH. Wherfor

[1] was *om.* H. [2] & laboure *om.* H. [3] the person Hs [4] *leaf* 191.
[5] to H. [6] ℓ MS. frerer. [7] yere of our lord M[l] CCCC and fyfty H.
[8] moche *om.* H. [9] a fair *om.* H. [10–10] *om.* H. als = as C.
[11] plenerly *om.* H. [12] þe Dean H.
[13] afterward it was broken for by the mene of þe marquyus of suffolke H.
[14] englond as it schewed before H. [15–15] *om.* H.
[16] & for H. [17] lo HC.
[18] ben þer by encreased H. þer by *om.* C.

euery gret [1] *prince* ought to kepe his *promisses*; [2] for, bicause of breking of þis promisse,[2] & for mariage of Quene Margaret, what losse hath þe reame of *Englond* had,[3] bi losyng of Normandy and Guyan, bi diuison of [4] þe reame, þe rebelling of com*m*ines Ageynst 4 þer *princes* & lordes; what diuison Ayen [5] þe lordes, what murdre & sleying of þame! what feldes foughten & made! in *con*clusion, so many,[6] that many a [7] man hath lost his life; And in conclusion, þe King deposed, & [8] þe Quene *with* hir son̄ fayn̄ to flee into 8 Scotland, & fro þens to [9] Frau*n*ce, & so to Lorayn̄, þe place wher [10] she come first [11] fro! Many men deme þat þe breking of [12] þe Kinges *promisse* to þe suster of þerles of Armynak, was cause of this gret losse & Adu*er*site. 12

How þe gode Duke of Gloucest*re*, Humfrey, þe King*es* vncle, was Arested at þe p*ar*leme*n*t of Bury; And [13] of his death; And how Anges in Mayn̄ was delinered.

In [14] þe xxv^te^ yere [15] of King Henry þe VI^te^,[16] was A parlement 16 at Bvry called seynt Edmund*es* Bury; About which was com-*m*aun̄ded aH þe com*m*unes of þe cont[r]e to be þer in þer most defensable Aray, to [17] A-wayt vpon þe King, to which [18] p*ar*leme*n*t come þe Duke of Gloucestre, Hu*m*frey, þe King*es* vncle, which had 20 bene þe [19] *protector* of Eng*l*ond al þe non̄-Age of þe King. And Anone after *þat* [20] he was come to [21] his logyng, he was Arested bi þe Viscount Bemond, þe Constable of Eng*l*ond, acompanyed [22] *with* [23] þe Duke of Bokyngham & many o*þer* lordes, and forth [24] *with* al 24 his [25] ser*u*and*es* wer com*m*aun̄ded for to dep*ar*t fro him; And xxxij of [26] þe chief of them̄ wer arested also,[27] & sent to diu*er*se pr*i*sones. And anone, after þe [28] said Arest,[29] þe said Duke was on þe morn̄ found [30] dede: on whos soul, God haue m*er*cy, Amen! [31] But how 28 he died, & in what man*er*, þe *cer*tentie is nat knowen to me.[32] Some said he died for sorow; some said he was murthred bitwene ij

[1] *leaf* 191, *back*. [2–2] *om.* H. [3] had *om.* HC. [4] in HC.
[5] emong H. amonge C. [6] so many *om.* H. [7] a *om.* H.
[8] and *om.* H. [9] into H. that C. [10] þat H.
[11] first *om.* H. [12] of *om.* H. [13] of *om.* C. [14] Also in H.
[15] yere xxv C. [16] þe vi^te^ *om.* HC. [17] for to HC. [18] to the which H.
[19] þe *om.* C. [20] þat *om.* C. [21] come in H. was in C.
[22] whome Acompanyed H. whom accompanied C.
[23] with *om.* HC. [24] for H. [25] his *om.* H.
[26] also of H. [27] also *om.* H. were also arested C. [28] this C.
[29] And v or vj days after þis seid arest H.
[30] was . . . found *om.* H. found *om.* C. [31] Amen *om.* H.
[32] to me *om.* H. to me knowen C.

federbeddes; other said þat an hote spytt was put in his foundement; & so,[1] how [2]he died, God knoweth, to whome is no thing[3] hidd. And when[4] he was thus[5] dede, he was leid open, þat al men might se him, And so both lordes & knightes of þe shires, with burgessers, come & saw him[6] ded; but þai coud nat perceif wound ne token[7] how he died. here may men mark what þis world[8] is! this Duke was A noble man & A gret clerk, & had worsshippfully rewled þis reame to þe Kinges behove, & neuer coude be found faute in[9] him,[10] but envy of þame þat wer gouernoures, & had promised[11] þe Duchis of Anges & þerldome of Maign, caused[12] þe destruccion of þis noble man; for thei drad him, þat he wold haue enpesshed þat deliuerance. And after, þei sent his body to seynt Albones[13] with certeyn lightes for to be buried; And so Sir Geruase of Clifton had þan[13] þe charge to convey þe corps[14]; & so it was buried at Seynt Albons in þe Abbey; & v persones of his houshold wer sent to London, & þer wer reyned & juged to be drawen, honged & quartred; Of wome þe names wer Sir Roger Chammbrelayn, knight, one[15] Midelton, A[16] squyere, Herbard, A squyer, Arthur,[17] A squyer, & Richard Nedham: which v persons wer drawen fro þe Toure of London thrugh Chepe to[18] Tiburn, & þer honged, & lat down quyck, & þen striped for to have bene heded & quartred. And þan þe Marquys of Southfolk showed þer for þame þe Kinges pardon vnder his gret Seale; & so þei wer pardoned of þe remanent of thexecucion, & had þer lyues, & after[19] war brought agen yn to London, & [20]frely deliuered. this began þe trouble in þe reame of[21] England for þe deth of þis noble Duke of Gloucestre; & [22]al þe communes of þe reame began forto murmure[23] for it,[24] & were nat contente.

After þat[25] Pope Eugeny was dede,[26] Nicholas þe Fyft was elect Pope. This Nycholas was chosen for Eugeny, yet honggyng þe

[1] but H. so *om.* C. [2] *leaf* 192. [3] nothing is H.
[4] þen when H. thenne whan C. [5] so HC.
[6] him lye H. hym lye C.
[7] but wond ne token colde the not perceyue H. but wounde ne token coude they perceyue C.
[8] worde H. [9] to C. [10] found be hym Any faute H.
[11] promised to deliuer H. [12] for thei caused H.
[13–13] *om.* H. [14] in the charge of the corpus to convoy H.
[15] And H. [16] A *om.* H. [17] or Archure H.
[18] vnto H. [19] and so þei H. And so they C.
[20] And after H. and after C. [21] þe reame of *om.* H.
[22] of Gloucestre & *om.* H. & *om.* C. [23] to mourne H.
[24] for it *om.* H. [25] þat *om.* HC. [26] was dede *om.* H.

Scisme natwithstondying he gat þe obedience of al Cristen Reames; for after þat[1] he was electe & sacred [2]Pope, certayn lordes of Fraunce & of England wer sent vnto[3] Sauoy, to Pope Felix, for to entrete him to cese of þe[4] Pepecy. And bi þe special[5] labour of þe[6] Bisshop of Norwich & þe lorde of Seynt Iohnes, he cessed þe ij^de^ yere after þat Pope Nicholas was sacred. And þe seid Felix was made Legate of Fraunce & Cardinal of Sauoye, & resigned þe hole papacy to[7] Nicholas; after,[8] lyved an holy lyfe, & died an holy man: And as it is said, Almighty[9] God shewed miracles for him. This was þe xxiij Scisme bitwen Eugeny & Felix, & dured xvi yere. þe cause was þis: The[10] general Counsel of Basil deposed Eugeny, which was only Pope & vndoubted, forasmyche as he obserued nat & kept[11] þe decrees & statutes of þe Counceyl of Constance, as it is A-fore[12] said; nethir[13] he rought not to gyve obedience to þat generał Counseł in no maner wise;[14] wher-of Arose A gret Altercacion emong Writeres of þis mateer, *pro* & contra, which kan nat Accorde vnto[15] þis day. one partie seith þat[16] 'þe Counsel is Aboue þe Pope,' þat oþer partie seith "nay, but þe Pope is Aboue þe Counsel." Godd, blessed Aboue ał thinges, gif & graunt[17] his pees in[18] holy chirche, spouse of Criste, Amen! This Nicholas was commen of Iene,[19] of low burth; A doctour of dyvynite, an Actif man, he reedyfied many places þat wer broken & ruynouse, & did do[20] make A gret wał About þe Palays, & made þe[21] wall new About Rome, for drede of þe Turkes. And þe peple wonndred of þe eresing[22] &[23] resignyng of Felix to[24] him, considering þat he was A man of so humble[25] burth; And þat othir was of Affinite to al þe moste parte of Cristen princes; wherof þer was A verse publisshed in Rome, þus:[26] hic fulsit mundo; cessit Felix Nicholas.

[27]How Sir Fraunceys Aragonoys toke Fogiers in Normandy; & of þe losse of Constantinoble by the Turks.[27] Ca. cclliij.[28]

[1] þat *om.* H. [2] *leaf* 192, *back.* [3] in to H. into C.
[4] þe *om.* H. [5] special *om.* H. [6] þe *om.* H.
[7] vnto H. [8] afterward H. [9] Almighty *om.* H.
[10] þat the H. [11] And kept not H.
[12] A-fore *om.* H. [13] Neuer H. [14] in no maner wise *om.* H.
[15] on to H. [16] þat *om.* H. [17] send H. [18] among H.
[19] was young of Iene comyn H; was of Iene comen of C. [20] to H.
[21] A H. [22] ceysyng H. ceesing C. [23] and of the H.
[24] vn to H. [25] lowe H. [26] in þis maner H. in this maner C.
[27–27] *om.* H. [28] Capitulum 25 H.

In þe xxvij yere of King Henry þe vj^te,[1] beyng trewes bitwen Engl*and* & Fraun*ce*,[2] A knight of þe Englissh p*ar*tie named S*ir* Fraun*ce*ys Aragonys, toke A town of Normandy, called[3] Fogiere, Ayens þe trewes; of which takyng began moche sorow & losse, for þis was þe occasion bi which[4] þe Frenshmen gat al Normandy &c.[5] [6]About þis tyme þe Cite of Constan*ti*noble, which was Imperiall [7]Cite in al Grece, was taken bi þe Turkes infideles, which was betrayed (as some hold Opinion), & þemp[er]*or* taken & slayn, & þat ryal chirch of Sancta Sophia robbed & despoyled, & þe reliques & ymages & þe Rode drawen Aboute þe strete; which was done in despite of Cr*i*sten feith. And sone after, al Cristen feith in Grece perisshed & cessed. Ther wer many Cr*i*sten men slayn, & innumerable solde & put in Captiuite. by þe takyng of þis towne, þe Turkey gretly[8] enhaunsed in pride; & it is A gr*et* losse vnto all Cr*i*stendome.[6]

[9]In þe xxviij yere[10] was A p*ar*lement holden at Westmynst*er*, & fro þens Adiourned to þe Blakfreres of[11] London, And after Cristenmasse, to[12] Westmynst*er* Ageyn. And þis same yere, Robert of[13] Cane, A man of þe West contre, w*i*th A few shippes, toke A gret[14] flote of shippes comyng out of þe baye, laden w*i*th salt,—which shippes wer of Prays, Flaundres, Holand & Zeland,—& brought þame to Hampton. Wherfor þe m*er*chantes of Engl*and* beyng in Flaundres, wer Arested in Bruges, Ippre, & oþer places, & might nat be deliu*er*ed, ner þ*er* dettes dischargied, til þei hadd made A poyntm*en*t for to pay for thamendes & hurtes of the shippes; which was payed bi þe m*er*chandes of þe staple, euery penny. And in like wise, þe m*er*chauntes & godes beyng in Danske wer also Arested, & made gr*et*[15] Amendes.

This same yere the[16] Frenshmen in A mornyng toke, bi A trayn,[17] þe town of Ponter*a*largee, & p*er*-in þe Lorde Faucounbrigge was taken pr*i*soner. And after þat,[18] in Decembre, Roan was taken & lost, beyng þ*er*-in þe Duke of Somersett, Edmund, þerle[19] of Shrewsbury, whiche bi A-poyntment left Pleges, & left al[20]

[1] tho in the yere of kyng harry xxvij H. In the yere of kyng henry xxvij C.
[2] fraunce and Englond C. [3] named HC. [4] bi the which H.
[5] &c *om.* H. [6—6] *om.* H. [7] *leaf* 193. [8] is gretly C.
[9] This yere A squiere of Englond named Chalons duer armes with A knyght of fraunce named Sir leuys de buyell to fore þe french kyng And ranne þe french knyght through wyth A spere And slew him in þe feld H.
[10] yere xxviij C. [11] at HC. [12] on to H. [13] of *om.* H.
[14] an hole H. [15] Agrete H. [16] the *om.* H. [17] by A trayn toke H.
[18] þat *om.* H. [19] Erle H. [20] lost H. loste C.

Normandye, &[1] come home. And during þe said[2] parlement þe Duke of Suthfolke was Arested & sent to[3] þe Towre; & þer he[4] was Amoneth. And after, þe King did do feche him out, for which[5] cause all þe commones of England wer in A gret rumor, what for[6] deliueraunce of Anges & Maign, & after,[7] losing of al Normandie, And in especial for þe deth of þe gode Duke of Gloucestre; In so myche þat, in some places, men gadred togedre, & made þame capitaynes—as Blew-Berde & oþer, which wer resisted, taken, & had Iustice, & died. And þen[8] þe said Parlement was adiourned to Leycestre; and thidder þe King brought with him þe Duke of Southfolk. & when[9] þe Comon house vnderstode þat he was oute of þe Toure, & come thider, þei desired to haue execucion on[10] þem þat wer cause of þe delyuerance of Normandy, & had bene cause of þe deth of þe[11] Duke of Gloucestre, & had sold Gascoygn & Guyhan, of which þei named to-be gylty, þe Duke of Southfolk as chief, þe Lord Say, þe Bisshop of Salesbury, Danyel, & many moo. And for to Apease þe comons, þe Duke of Southfolk was exiled out of England v yere; & so, during þe Parlement, he went in to Northfolk, & þer toke shipping forto go out of þe Reame of England[12] vnto[13] Fraunce. And þis yere,[14] as he sayled on þe See, A shipp of Werre called[15] Nicholas of þe[16] Tour mett with þis[17] shippe, & founde him þer-in; whome þei toke out, & brought hym into þere shipp tofore þe Maister & Capitayns; & þer he was examined, & at last Iuged to þe[18] deth. And so þei put him in A Cabone, & his chapeleyn for to shryve him; And þat done, þei brought him in to Dover Rood, & þer sett him in-to þe boot, & þere smote of his hede, & brought þe body Alonde, vpon þe sondes, & sett þe hede per-by. And þis was done þe fyft day of Maye. loo! whatt Availed him now, al his[19] deliuerance of Normandy &c.[20] And here yhe may leer[21] how he was rewarded for þe deth of þe Duke of Gloucestre. This began sorow vpon sorew, & deth for deth.[22]

[23] **How this yere was thensurrexion in Kent of þe communes, of whome Iake Cade, On Irishman, was Capitayn.[23] Ca. cclv.[24]**

[1] A H. [2] same H. [3] in to HC. [4] he *om.* H.
[5] for which of Ad. of which HC. [6] for the HC. [7] after for H.
[8] þen *om.* H. [9] *leaf* 193, *back.* [10] of H. [11] þe *om.* H.
[12] of Englond *om.* H. [13] into HC. [14] yere *om.* H.
[15] called the HC. [16] þe *om.* HC. [17] hys H. his C. [18] þe *om.* H.
[19] þis H. [20] &c *om.* H. [21] se H. here C. [22] deth &c. C.
[23—23] *om.* H. [24] Capitulum 26 H.

This yere of our Lorde M[l] cccc l, was þe gret grace of þe Iubilee at Rome; wher was gret pardon, in-so-mych þat, frome[1] al place; in[2] Cristendome, gret multitude of peple resorted thider.

Þis yeere[3] was A gret Assemblee &[4] gadering togedre of þe[5] comons of Kent in gret nombre, & made an Insurrexion, & rebelled Ageynst þe Kyng & his lawes, & ordeynd þame[6] A capitayn called Iohn Cayd, An Irish man, which named him self Mortymer, Cosyn to þe Duke of Yorke. And þis Capitayn held thise men togedre, & made ordinances Among þame, & brought þame to Blak-Heth, where he made A bill of peticiones to þe King & his Counsel, & shewed what iniuries & oppressions þe Poer comons suffred; & al vnder colour forto come[7] to his Abone; & he had A gret multitude of peple. And þe xvij[8] day of Iuyn, þe King,[9] many lordes, [10]Capitaynes & men of Werre, went toward him to þe Blakk-heeth. And when þe Capitayne of Kent vnderstode þe commyng of þe King with so gret[11] puysaunce, he[12] with-drew him with his peple to Seuenoke, A litel village. And þe[13] xxviij[14] day of Iun, he[15] beyng with-drawen & gone, þe King come, with his Armee sett in ordre & enbatailed, to þe Blak-Heth, And, by Aduise of his Counsel, sent Sir Vmfrey Stafford, knight, & William Stafford, squyer, two valiaunt Captanes, with certeyn peple, to feght with þe Capytane, & to take[16] & bryng him & his Accessaries to þe King, which went to Seuenoke; & þer þe Capytane with his felisshepe mett with hem, & fought Ayenst þame,[17] & in conclusion slew þame bothe, & as many as Abode & wold nat yheld þame ner flee. Duryng þis sharmysh fill[18] A grete variaunce Amonges þe[19] lordes men, & þe[20] comon peple beyng on Blak-Heth Ayens þe[21] lordes & Capitayns, sayng playnly þat þei wold go to þe Capitayn of Kent, to Assist and help him,[22] but if þei might haue execucion of þe traytoures beyng[23] About þe King, to which[24] þe King said nay; And þei said playnly þat[25] þe Lorde Say, Tresourer of England, the Bisshope of Salesbury, [26]þe Baron of Dudley,[26] þabbot of Gloucestre, Danyel, & Trevillian, & many mo, wer traytoures, & worthy to be dede.

[1] in H. [2] of H.
[3] yere was sir Thomas Oryell ouerthrown At Fermygny And many Englisch men slayn and takyn prisoners This same yere H.
[4] A H. [5] þe *om.* H. [6] hym C. [7] haue come H. [8] vij H.
[9] king with H. [10] *leaf* 194. [11] grete A H. [12] he *om.* Ad.
[13] þe *om.* H. [14] xxvij[ti] H. [15] he *om.* H. [16] take hym HC.
[17] them Ayenst H. [18] þer fell H. [19] þe *om.* H. [20] þe *om.* H.
[21] þer H. their C. [22] him *om.* H. [23] beyng *om.* H.
[24] to where H. wher to C. [25] þat *om.* H. [26–26] *om.* H.

herfore, forto[1] please þe lordes menys & also some of þe Kinges house, þe Lorde Say was Arested & sent to þe Toure of London. And þan þe King, hering tydynges of þe deth & ouerthrowing of þe Staffordes, with-drew him to London, & fro thens[2] to Kylling- worth; ffor þe King ne þe lordes durst nat trust þer own household meney &c.[3] Then, after þat þe Capytan had þis victory vpon þise[4] Staffordes, Anone he toke Sir Humfrey Salett, & his brigantines smytten ful of gylted nayles, & also his gilted sporres, & Araied him like A lorde & a Capi[5]tayn, & resorted with al his meyney, & also mo þan he had tofore, to þe Blak-Heth. Ageyn to whome come þerchebisshope of Cauterbury & þe Duke of Bokyngham to þe Blak-Heth, and spake with him; &, as it was said, þei found him [6]witty in his talkynge &[7] request; & so they departed.[6] And þe third day of Iuyl he come & entred into London with al his peple, &[8] did make A[9] cry þer[10] in þe Kinges name & in his name,[11] þat no man shold robb ne take no mannes gode bot if he payd for it; & come ridyng thrugh þe Cite in gret pride, & smote his swerde vpon London stone in Canwykstrete. And he, beyng in þe Cite, sent to þe Towre forto haue þe Lord Saye; & so þei sett him & brought him to þe Guyld-Hall before þe Mayre & þe Aldremen, wher he was examined. And þe lorde[12] sayd þat[13] he wolde & ought to bene Iuged by his peres. And þe communes of Kent toke him by force fro þe Mair &[14] officers þat kept him, & toke him to A prest to shryve him. & er he might be half shryven, þei brought him to þe Standard in Chepe, & þer smote of his hede:[15] & thus died þe Lorde Say, Tresourer of Englond. After þis, þei sett his hede on[16] A spere, & bare it Aboute in þe Citee. And þe same day, Aboute[17] þe[18] Mylle-Ende, Crowmer was beheded. And þe[19] day before, at afternone, þe Capytan, with certeyn of his meyney, went to Philipp Malpas house, & robbed him, & toke Away moche gode. And fro thense he went to Seynt Margret Patyns, to one Cherstis hous, & robbed him, [20]& toke A way moche gode.[20] Also, At which robbyng diuerse men of London of þer neghburse wer at it, & toke part with him.[21] For þis robbyng þe

[1] to H. [2] thens vn to A. [3] &c. *om.* H. [4] the HC.
[5] *leaf* 194, *back*. [6–6] *om.* H. [7] and his C.
[8] And þer H. and there C. [9] A *om.* HC. [10] þer *om.* HC.
[11] name *om.* H. [12] And he HC. [13] þat *om.* HC. [14] And the H.
[15] hede on whos saul god haue mercy Amen) H. hede on whos soule Almyghty god haue pite and mercy Amen. C.
[16] vp on H. [17] Aboute *om.* H. [18] at H. [19] þe same H.
[20–20] *om.* H. [21] them H.

peples hertes fiH fro him, & euery thryfty man was A-forde[1] forto[2] be serued in like wise. for þer was many A man, in London þat Abbayted and wold fayn[3] haue seen A comon robbery, which Almighty[4] God for-bidd! for it is to suppose þat,[5] if he had nat robbed, he might haue gone ferre er he had be with-stonde; ffor þe King & al the [6]lordes of þe Reame of Englond wer departed, except the Lorde Scales þat kept þe Toure of London.[7] And þe fyft day of Iuyl he gert[8] smyte of A mannes hede in Southwerk. And þe night after, þe Mair of London, þe Aldermen & þe[9] communes of þe Cite, concluded to dryve Away þe Capytane & his hoste, and sent to þe Lorde Scales in[10] þe Toure, & to Mathew Gogh, A Capitayn of Normandie, þat þei wold þat night Assail þe Capitayn with þem of Kent. & so þey did, & come to London Brigge, in to Southwerk, er þe Capitan had any knowleage þer-of; & þer[11] þei fought with þem þat kept[12] þe brigge. & þe Kentissh men went to harnoys, & come to þe brigge, & shott & fought with þame, & gat þe brigge, & made þame of Londone to flee, & slew many of þame, & þis endured al þe night, to & fro, til ix of þe[9] clokk on þe morne. & at[13] last þei brent þe drawbrigge, wher many of þame of London wer drowned. In which night, Sutton, an Alderman, was slayn; Roger Hesant, & Mathew Gogh, & many oþer. And, after this, þe Chaunceler of Englond sent to þe Capytane A general pardone[14] for him, & Another for all his meyney. And þan þei departed fro Southwerk, euery man home to his hous. And when þei wer al departed & gone, þer wer proclamacions made in Kent, Southsea, & in[15] oþer places, þat what man coude take þe Capytane, quyk or ded, shold have A m[l] mark. And after þis, one Alexander Iden, A squyer of Kent, toke him in A gardyn in Southsex; & in þe takyng þe Capytane, Iohn Cade was slayn, & after beheded, & his hede sett on London Brigge. And þan Anone after,[16] þe King come in-to Kent, & did his Iustices sitt at Canterbury, & enquire who wer Accessaries & chief cause of þis Insurreccion. And þer wer viij men Iuged to dethe in one day, & in othir places, mo. And fro þens þe King went vnto[17] Sucessex, & so[18] in-to þe West

[1] Arested H. [2] to H. [3] fayn *om.* H. [4] almighty *om.* H.
[5] þat *om.* HC. [6] *leaf* 195. [7] of London *om.* H.
[8] he did do H. he dide done C.
[9] þe *om.* H. [10] to HC. [11] þer *om.* H. [12] And H.
[13] at the H. [14] pardon generall H. pardon general C.
[15] in *om.* H. [16] And Anon after then H. And anone after thenne C.
[17] in to H. [18] so *om.* HC.

contre, where A litel before was slayn þe Bisshop of Salisbury. And þis[1] yere so many wer[2] Iuged to deth, þat xxiij hedes stode [3]vpon[4] London Brigge at ones.

[5]Of þe felde þat þe[6] Duke of York toke at Brenthethe in Kent; And of þe birth of Prince Edwarde; And of þe first batail of[7] Seynt Albones, wher þe Duke of Somersett was slayn.[5] Ca. cc lvi.[8]

In þe xxx yere of King Henry þe vi^te^, þe[9] Duke of York came out of þe Marche of Walys, with þerle of Devonshire &[10] Lorde Cobham, &[11] gret puysaunce, for reformacion of certayn Iniuries & wronges, & also[12] to haue Iustice of[13] certeyn lordes beyng[14] About þe King; and toke A[15] felde at Brenthoth beside Derthford in Kent, which was A strong feld. For which cause þe King, with al þe lordes of the land, went vnto[16] Blakheth with A gret & A strong[17] multitude of peple, armed & ordeyned for þe werr in þe best wise. And when þei had musteried on þe Blakheth, certeyn lordes wer sent to him for to trete & make A-poyntment with him, which wer, þe Bisshope of Ely &[18] þe Bisshop of Wynchestre, & þe Erles of Salesbury & of Warrewick. And þei concluded þat þe Duke of Somersett shold be had to warde, & to Aunswer to such Articles as þe Duke of York sholde put on[19] him; and þan þe Duke of York shold brek his felde, & come to þe King, which was[20] promised bi þe Kynge. And so þe King commaunded þat þe Duke of Somersett shold be had in warde; & þen þe Duke of York breke vp his felde, & come to þe King. And when he was commen, contrary to þe promisses tofore[21] made, þe Duke of Somersett was present in þe felde, Awayting & chief about þe King, & made þe Duke of York ride tofore as A prisoner thrugh London; & after þei wold haue put him in holde. But A noyse Aroose þat þerl of Marche, his son, was commyng with[22] x m^l^ men to London-ward, wher-of þe Kyng & his counsel fered. And þan they concluded þat þe Duke of York sholde departe at his will.

[1] þis same H. this same C.
[2] were so many H. were soo many C. [3] *leaf* 195, *back*.
[4] on H. at C. [5–5] *om.* H. [6] þat Ad. that the C. [7] at C.
[8] Capitulum 27 H. [9] In the yere xxx the HC.
[10] & þe H. and the C. [11] with H.
[12] also *om.* H. [13] on HC. [14] beyng *om.* H.
[15] An H. [16] vn to the H. vnto the C. [17] & A strong *om.* H.
[18] and *om.* H. [19] to H. [20] was all H. was al C. [21] Afore HC.
[22] *Here* H *breaks off imperfect.*

About þis tyme began gret diuision in Spriusse bitwene þe gret Maister & þe knightes of þe Duche ordre, which wer lordes of þat Contre; ffor þe communes & townes rebelled [1] Ageynst þe lordes, & made so gret werre þat, at þe last, þei called þe King of Pole to be þer lorde; which [2] King come, & was worsshipfully receyved, & laid siege to þe castel of Marienburgh (which was þe chief Castel & strenght of al þe land), & wan it, & drove out þe Maister of Dansk & al othir places of þat land. And so þei þat had bene lordes many yeres, lost al þere seygnorie & possessions in þo landes.

And in [3] þe yere of þencarnacion of our Lord M^{t} iiij^{c} liij, vpon [4] Seynt Edwardes day, Quene [5] Margaret was delyuered of A fair prince, which was named Edwarde. þat same day Iohn Norman was chosen for to be Mair of London, And on [6] þe day þat he shold take his othe at Westmynstre, he went thider by water with al þe craftes, wher Afore-tyme þe Mair, Aldremen, & al þe craftes rode on [7] horse back: which was neuer vsed afore, [8] but seth [9] þat tyme þei haue gone euer bi water, in barges.

Yhe haue wel vnderstond before, [10] how þat, contrary to the promise of þe King, & also þe conclusions taken bitween þe King & þe Duke of York at Brentheth, þe Duke of Somersett went nat to warde, but Abode about þe King, & had gret rewl. And Anone aftir, he was made Capytayn of Caleys, & rewled þe King & his reame as he wold. Wherfor þe gret lordes of þe Reame, & also þe communes, wer nat pleased, for which cause þe Duke of Yorke, þerles of Warrewick & of Salesbury, with many knyghtes & squyers & moche peple, come for to remeve þe said Duke of Somersett & othir fro þe Kyng. And þe King, hering of þer commyng, thought by his counsel forto haue gone Westward, & nat for to mete with þame: and he [11] had with him þe Duke of Somersett, þe Duke of Bokyngham, þerle of Stafford, þerle of Northumbreland, Lorde [12] Clifford, & many oþer. And what tyme þat þe Duke of York & his felisship vnderstode þat þe King was departed with þise said lordes fro London, Anone he chaunged þe [13] way, & costed þe Contre, & come to Seynt Albons [14] þe xxiij day of May, & [15] mett with þe Kyng, to whome the Kyng sent certayn lordes, & desired him to kepe þe peax, & departed, but in

[1] *leaf* 196. [2] the which C. [3] in *om.* C. [4] on C. [5] the quene C. [6] on *om.* C. [7] a C. [8] after C. [9] syn C. [10] tofore C. [11] he *om.* C. [12] the lord C. [13] his C. [14] *leaf* 196, *back*. [15] & there C.

conclusion whiles þei treted on þat one side, þerle of Warwik, with þe Marchemen & with othir, entred þe town on þat other side, & fought Ayenst þe King & his partie: & so began þe batail & feghtyng, which endured A gode while, but in conclusion þe Duke of York apteyned & had þe victorie of þat Iorney; In which was slayn þe Duke of Somersett, þerle of Northumbreland & þe Lorde Clifford, with[1] many knightez & squyers, & many[2] hurt. And on þe morne after þei brought þe Kinge in gret Astate to London, and he was[3] looged in þe Bisshop paleys of London. And sone[4] After was A gret parlement; In which parlement þe Duke of York was made Protector of Englond, & þerl of Warwick Capytane of Caleys, & þerle of Salesbury Chaunceler of Englond. And al suche persones as had the rewl tofore About þe King, wer sett Aparte, & might nat reul as þei did Afore.[5]

In this same yeer died Pope Nicholas þe Fyft; & after him was Calixt þe Third. This Calist was A Catalane, & an olde man when he was chosen, & continuelly seek; wherfore he might nat performe his zele & desire þat he had conceyved Agenst þe Turke.[6] & þe cause of lettyng þirof was his Age & sekeness. This Calixte instituted & ordeyned þe Feste of þe[7] Transfiguracion of our Lorde to be halowed on Seynt Sixt day in August, bicause of þe gret victory þat þei of Hungary had Ayenst þe Turkes þat same day he was chosen Pope, in þe yeer of our Lord Ml iiij^{c} lv, and died þe yere M^{l} iiij^{c} lviij, þat same day þat he ordeyned þe Fest of þe[7] Transfiguracion to be halowed.

In þis same yere fill A gret Affray in London Ayenst þe Lumbardes. The cause began for[8] A yong man toke A dagger fro A Lumbard, & brake it; wherfor þe yong man on þe morne was sent fore to come tofore þe Mair & Aldermen, & per, for þe offense, he was commytted to warde. And [9]then þe Mair departed fro þe Guyldhall for to go home to his dyner, but in þe Chepe þe yong men of þe mercerie, for þe moste parte Apprentises, held þe Mair & Shyreves stil in Chepe, & wold nat suffre him to departe vnto þe tyme þat þare felow, which was commytted to warde, wer delyuered; & so by force þei rescued þer felowe fro prisone, & þat done, þe Mair & Shyreves departed, & the prisoner was[10] delyuered, which, if he had be put to prisone, had be in Iubardie of his lyfe.

[1] And C. [2] many mo C. [3] which was C. [4] anone C.
[5] tofore C. [6] he had agenst the turke conceyued C.
[7] of Ad. of the C. [8] bycause C. [9] *leaf* 197. [10] was *om* C.

And þan[1] began A Rumor in þe Cite Ayenst þe Lumbardes, And þe same evenyng þe handcrafty peple of þe town Arose, & come[2] to the Lumbardes houses, & dispoyled & robbed[3] diuerse of þame; wherfore þe Mair & Aldremen come with þe honest peple of þe town, & drofe þame thens, & sent some of thame þat had stollen, to Newgate. And þe yong man þat was rescued bi his felowes saw þis gret Rumor, Affray & robbery, folowed[4] of his first mevyng to þe Lumbard; he[5] departed & went to Westmynster to sanctuary, or els it had cost him his lyfe, ffor Anone After come down An oþer determyne for to do Iustice on al þame þat so rebelled in þe Cite Ayens þe Lumbardes, vpon[6] which satt with þe Mayr þat tyme William Marow, þe Duke of Bokyngham, & many oþer lordes, for to se execucion done, bot þe comons of þe Cite secretely made þame redy, & did Arme þame in þer houses, & wer in purpose forto haue rongen þe comon beH which is named Bow BeH; but þei wer lett bi sad men, which come to þe knowlege of þe Duke of Bokyngham & othir lordes. & forthwith[7] þei Arose, for þei durst ne lenger Abide, for þei doubted þat þe hole Cite shold haue risen Ayenst þeme, but yett neuer-þe-lesse, ij or iij of þe Cite were Iuged to deth for þis robbery, & wer honged at Tiburn.

Anone After, þe King, þe[8] Quene, & othir lordes, rode to Covente, & with-drew þame fro London for this cause And a liteH[9] to-fore, þe Duke of Yorke was sent fore to Grenewiche, & þer was dischargied of þe protectorshipp, & þerle of[10] Salesbury of þe[11] Chauncelershippe. And after þis þei wer sent for by privey seal forto come to Covente, where þei wer almoste deceyved, & þerle of Warwick also, And shold haue bene destroyed if þei had nat seen wele too.

How Lord[12] Egremond was take by þerle of Salesbury sonnes. And of þe robbyng of Sandwyche. ca^m. cclvij.

This yere wer taken iiij gret ffisshes bitwen Greth & London: one[13] was called 'mors marine,' þe secund, A 'swerd fyssh,' & þe other tweyn wer whalles. In þis same yere for certeyn, þer was An[14] Affray in[15] þe North contre bitwene Lorde[16] Egremond & þerle of Salesbury sonnes; & when thay had taken him, was had to

[1] þan *om.* C. [2] ran C. [3] & robbed & despoylled C.
[4] ensyewed C. [5] he *om.* C. [6] on C. [7] incontynent C.
[8] þe *om.* C. [9] *leaf* 197, *back.* [10] And my lord of C. [11] his C.
[12] the lord C. [13] that one C. [14] was An *om.* C. [15] done in C.
[16] the lord C.

London), & þer[1] condempned in a gret somme of money to þe said Erle of Salesbury, & þerfor committed to prison in Newgate, in London, wher, whan he had be A certayn space, he brak þe prison), & iij prisoners with him, & ascaped & went his way.

Also þis yere þerle of Warrewikk & his wife went to Caleys with A fayr ffelaushipp, & toke possession of his office. About þis tyme was A gret reformacion) of many monasteris of Religion, in diuerse parties of þe worlde, which wer reformed after þe first Institucion), & continued in many Places. Also About þis tyme þe craft of enprinteng was fyrst found in Magvnce in Almaign, which craft is multiplied thrugh þe world in many places, & bokes ben) had gret chepe & in gret nommbre, bicause of þe same craft.

This same yere was A gret batail in þe marches bitwen Hungary & Turkey, at A place called Septedrade, where innumerable Turkes wer slayn, more by miracle þan bi mannes hond, ffor onely þe hondes of God smote þeme. Seynt Iohn of Capestrane was þer present, & prouoked þe Cristen peple, beyng þen Aferde after to pursew þe Turkes, wher ane Infinite multitude wer slayn) & destroyed. þe Turkes said þat A gret nombre of Armed men folowed þame, þat þei wer Aferde to turn Ageyn: [2] they wer holy Aungels.

This same yere þe prisoners of Newgate in London brake þer prisone, & [3] kept þe gate A long while; but at þe [4] last þe town gett þe prison one them), & þen þei wer put in feteris & Irons, & were sore punisshed, in example of other. In this yere also was A gret erthquake in Naples, in-so-moche þat þer perisshed xl M[l] peple þat sanke þer into þerth. Item, in þe yeer xxxvj, Seynt Osmunde, somtyme Bisshope of Salesbury, was Canonized at Rome bi Pope Calixt; & þe xvj day of Iuil he was translated at Salesbury bi þerchebisshope of Caunterbury & many other bisshopes. And in August after, Sir Piers [5] de Breisey seneschal of Normandy, with þe Capytane of Depe & many oþer Capitaynes & men of Werre, went to þe See with A gret Navy, & come to Downes by night; & on þe morne erly, before day, þei londed & come to Sandwych, both bi land & water, & toke the town), & ryfled & dispoyled it, &

[1] sones, the sayd lord Egremond whome they had taken was C.
[2] *leaf* 198.
[3] prison, & wente vpon the leedes / & fought agenst them of the cyte / & C.
[4] þe *om.* C.
[5] *There is a gap in C from here to p.* 527, *line* 1.

toke many prisoners, & left þe town al naked,—which was A rich town & mych gode þer-in,—& had with þame many ryche prisoners. In this same yere, in many places of Fraunce, Almaign, Flaundres, Holand & Ze[land, men, women &] children gadred þame by gret Companyes forto go on pilgremage to Seynt Micheles Mount in Normandy, which come fro fer contrees; wherof þe peple mervailed; & many supposed þat some wicked spirite meved þame so to doo; but it endured nat long, by cause of þe long way, & also for lak of vitail as þei went.

In this yere Reynold Pecok, Bisshop of Chichester, was founden an heretike, & þe iij day of Decembre was Abiured at Lambeth, in þe presence of þerchebisshop of Caunterbury & many bisshoppes & doctoures & lordes temperel; & his bokes brent at Paules crosse.

Yhe haue herd tofore how certayn lordes wer slayn at Seynt Alboyns, wherfor was euermore A grutche & wrath had, by þe heires[1] of þame þat wer so slayn; Ayenst þe Duke of Yorke, þerles of Warwick & of Salesbury. Wherfor þe Kyng, by þavise of his Councel, sent for thame to London: to which place þe Duke of York came, þe xxvj day of Ianyuer, with iiij^{c} men, & logied at Bernardes Castel in his own place, And þe xv day of Ianiuer come þerle of Salesbury with v^{c} men, & was logged in therber, his own place. And þen come þe Duke of Excetre & of Somersett, with viij^{c} men, & lay without Temple Barr. & þerl of Northumbreland, Lord Clifford & Lord Egremond, with xv^{c} men, & loged without þe town. And þe Mayr þat tyme, Ieffray Boleyn, kept gret watche, with þe comons of þe Cite, & rode About þe Cite by Holborn & Flete Strete with a v M^{l} men wel Armed & Araied for to kepe þe pees, And þe xiiij day of Feuerer, þerle of Warwick come to London fro Caleys, wel beseen & worsshypfully, with vj^{c} men in rede Iaquettes, browdred with A ragged staff behynd & Afore; & he was logged at þe Gray Freres, And þe xvij day of Marche þe King come to London & þe Quene; & þer was A concorde & pees made Among those lordes, & þei wer sett in pees. And vpon our Lady Day, þe xv day of Marche þer[2] of our Lorde M^{l} iiij^{c} lviij, þe King, Quene, & al þise lordes went in procession at Poules in London. And Anone after, þe King & þe lordes departed. In þis yere was A gret Affray in Flet Strete bitwen men of Court & men of þe same stret: In which Affray þe Quenes Attorney was slayn.

[1] *leaf* 198, *back*. [2] þer = the year.

How þe Kinges howshold mad Affray Ayenst þerle of Warrewikk; & of þe Iourney at Blorehethe. Ca^m. cclviij.

Also þis same yeer, als þerle of Warwyk was at A CouncelH in Westmynster, al þe Kinges houshold meyney gadred þame to-gedre for to have slayn þe said Erle; bot, bi help of God & of his frendes, he recouered his barge, & escaped þare evyl enterprise, how wel þe Coques come renyng out with spyttes & pestelles Ayenst him. And þe same Day he rode to-ward Warrewik; And sone After he gate him A commission), & went ouer þe see to Caleys. Sone after þis, þerle of Salesbury commyng to London, was encountred at Bloreheth [1] with Lorde Awdeley, and moche oþer peple ordeyned forto haue destressed him; bot he, having knawlege þat he shold be mett, was Accompanied with his ij sonnes, Sir Thomas & Sir Iohn NeviH, & A gret felawshipp of gode men. & so þei mett & fought to-gedre; wher þerle of Salesbury wan þe feld; And þe Lorde Awdley was slayn, & many gentilmen of Chesshire, & moche peple hurt; And therles ij sonnes wer hurt; & goyng homeward afterward, þei wer taken, & had to Chestre bi þe Quenes meyney.

After, Calixt Pius was Pope, & was chosen þis yere M^t iiij^c lvii./ And he was called before, 'Eneas'; An Eloquent man & A poete laureat; he was embassatoure of þemperor Afore tyme, & he wrote in þe Councel of Basile A noble tretise for þe Auctorite of þe same; Also he Canonized Seynt Katerine of Senys. This Pope ordeyned gret Indulgences & pardon to þem þat wold go Werre Ayenst þe Turke, & wrote An Epistle to þe gret Turke, exorting him to be-come Cristen. & in þe ende he ordeynd A passage Ayenst þe Turks at Ancone, to which moche peple drew, out of al parties of Cristendome; of which peple he sent many home Ayene, be-cause þei suffised nat. And Anone after, he dyed at þe said Ankone, yere of our Lord M^t iiij^c lxiiij, xiiij day of Auguste.

How Andrew Trollop & þe Soudioure of Caleys forsoke þe Duke of Yorke, & per Maister þerl of Warrewik, in the West contre. Cap. cclix.

The Duke of York, þerles of Warwik & of Salesbury, saw þat þe gouernance of þe Reame stode moste by þe Quene & hir CounseH, & how þe gret princes of þe lond wer nat called to Counceil bot sett A-parte; & nat onely so, but þat it was seid

[1] *leaf* 199.

thrugh þe reame þat the[1] said lordes shold be destroyed vtterly, as it[2] openly was shewed att Bloreheth bi þame þat wold haue slayn þerl of Salesbury, þan þei, for saluacion) of þer lyves, & also for þe comon) wele of þe reame, thought forto remedie thise thinges, Assembled þame to-gedre with moche peple, & toke A feld[3] in þe West contre; to which þerle of Warwik come fro Caleys, with many of þe olde soudioures, as Andrew Trollop & other. In whose wisdome, as for þe werre, he mych trusted. And when þei wer thus Assembled, & made þer feld, þe King sent out his commissions & privey seales vnto al þe lordes of his realme, to come & Awayt on him in þer moste defensable wise. And so euery man come, in suche wise þat þe King was stronger, & had moche more peple þan þe Duke of York & þerles of Warrewik & of[4] Salesbury. For it is here to be noted þat euery lord in Englond at þis tyme durst nat disobey þe Quene, for she rewled pesibly al þat was done About þe Kyng, which was A gode, simple, & Innocent man, And þan when þe King was commen to þe place wher al[5] þei were; þe Duke of York & his felasship had made þer felde in þe stronggest wise, & had proposed verely to abyden & have foughten; bot in þe night Andrew Trollop & al tholde soudioures of Caleys, with A gret felasship, sodenly departed out of þe Dukes oost[6] & went strayt vnto þe Kinges feld, wher þei wer receyved joyously, for þei knew þe entent of þe othir lordes, & Also þe maner of þer felde. And þen þe Duke of York, with þe oþer lordes, seyng þame so descevyd, toke A councel shortly þat[7] same night, & departed fro þe felde, levyng behynde þame þe moste parte of þer peple to kepe þe feld til on þe morne. Then þe Duke of York, with his second son, departed thrugh Walez toward Ireland, levyng his eldest son þerl of[8] Marche, with þerles of Warwyck & of[9] Salisbury, which to-gedre with iij or iiij persones, rode strait vnto Devenshyre, & þar, bi help & Ayd of one Denham, A squyer, which gat for them A shipp which cost xccxx[10] nobles, & with þe same shipp sayled fro þens in to Garnesey, & þer refresshed þame, & fro þens sayled to Caleys, wher þei wer receyved in-to þe Castel bi þe postern, er þei of þe town) knew of it; & þe Duke of York toke ship in Wales, & sayled ouer in-to Ireland, wher he was wel receyved.

[1] tho C. [2] it *om.* C. [3] *leaf* 199, *back.* [4] of *om.* C
[5] as C. [6] hooste C. [7] in that C. [8] of the C.
[9] of *om.* C. [10] cc xx C.

[1] **How therles of Marche, Warrewik & Salesbury, entred into Caleys; & how[2] þerle of Warwik went in to Ireland. ca. cclix.[3]**

Then King Henry, beyng *with* his oost in þe felde, nat knowing of þis sodeyn de*par*ting, on þe morne fond none in þe felde of þe said lordes, sent forth in al haste men to folow & *per*sue after, to tak þame; but þei mett nat *with* hem, as God wolde. Then[4] þe King went to Ludlow, & despoiled the Castel & þe town, & sent þe Duches of York, *with* hir childer, to þe[5] Lady of Bokingham, hir suster, where she was kepte long aftir. & forth*with* þe King ordeynd þe Duke of Somersett Capitayn of Caleys; & thise othir lordes so de*par*ted as Afore is said, wer proclamyd rebelles & gret traytoures. Then the Duke of Somerset toke to him al þe sowdioures *þat* de*par*ted fro þe felde, & made him redy in al haste to go to Caleys, & take possession of his office. And when he come, he founde þerl of Warwick *þer*in as Captayn, & þerles of Marche & Salisbury also; & *þan* he londed by Scales, & went to Guysnes, & *þer* he was receyved. And it fortuned *þat* some of þe shippes *þat* come ouer *with* him come in-to Caleys haven bi *þer* fre wiH, for þe shipmen ought more favour to þerl of Warwik þan to þe Duke of Somerset. In which shippes wer taken diuerse men, as Ieuyn FynkhiH, Iohn Felaw, Kaylles & Parser, which wer beheded sone after in Caleys. And after þis, dayly come men ouer þe[6] See to þise lordes to Caleys, & began to wex strenger,[7] And þei borowed moche gode of þe Staple. And on *þat* othir side þe Duke of Somersett, beyng in Guysnes, gat peple to him, which come out & scarmusshed *with* þame of Caleys, & þei[8] *with* þame; which endured many dayes; and[9] moche peple dayly come ouer þe see to[10] these lordes. Then on A tyme, by thavyse of councel, þe lordes at Caleis sent ouer Maister Denham, *with* A gret felawship, to Sandwych, &[11] toke þe town, & *per*-in þe Lorde Ryvers, & þe Lorde Scales his son, & toke many shippes in þe haven, & broght þam al to Caleys; *with* which shippes,[12] many mariners of *þer* fre wiH come to Caleys to serue þerle of Warrewik.

And after þis, þerle of Warwik, bi þavise of þe lordes, toke al

[1] *leaf* 200. [2] as Ad. how C. [3] cclx C. [4] And thenne C.
[5] my C. [6] þe *om.* C. [7] stronger & stronger C.
[8] they of Caleys C.
[9] many dayes / During thus this same scarmuchyng / C.
[10] come over vnto C. [11] which C.
[12] *leaf* 200, *back*.

his shippes, & manned þam wel, & sayled his[1]-self into Ireland fro to speke *with* þe Duke of York, & to take his Advice how þei shold entre in-to England ageyn. And when he had ben *þer*, & done his erandes, he returned toward[2] Caleys, & brought with him his moder, þe Countesse of Salesbury. Tho was[3] commyng in þe west contre, vpon þe See, þe Duke of Excestre, Admiral of Englond, beyng in þe Grace of Dieu, Accompanied *with* many shippes of werre; which[4] mett *with* þe flete of þerl of Warwik[5]; but þei fought nat, for þe substance of þe peple beyng *with* þe Duke of Excestre ought better will & more fauor to þerle[6] þan to him; & þei departed & come to Caleys in saufte, blissed be God! Then þe Kinges councel, seyng þat these lordes had goten these shippes fro Sandwiche, & taken Lorde[7] Ryvers & his son, ordeyned A Garnyson at Sandwich, to Abide & kepe þe town, & made one Mountforte, Capytan of þe town, & warned[8] þat no man, ne vitail, ne merchant þat shold go vnto[9] Flaundres, shold nat go vnto[10] Caleys. Then þei of Caleys seyng þis, made out Maister Denhame & many oþer, to go to Sandwich. & so þei did, & Assayled þe town by water & by lond, & gat it, & brought Mountforte *þer* Capitayn ouer þe See to Risebanke, & *þer* smote of his hede; & yet dayly men come ouer to þame fro[11] al parties of Englond.

How þerles of Marche, of Warwik & of Salesbury entred in to England. And of Northampton felde[12] wher diuerse lordes wer slayn. Cap^m. cclxj.

After[13] þis, þe said Erles of Marche, of[14] Warwik & of Salisbury come ouer to Dover *with* moche peple, & landed *þer*[15]; to whome al þe contrey drew, & come to London Armed; & for to lat þe lordes of þe Kinges Counceil know *þer* entent & thought, þei[16] assembled þame, & told þame þat þei entended no harme vnto the Kinges person, sauf *þat* þei wold put fro him such persones as wer About him, & so departed fro London *with* A gret puysaunce toward Northampton, wher þe King was, Accompayned *with* many lordes, & had made A strong felde *with*-out þe town. & [17] there bothe parties mett, & was foughten A gret batail, In which wer [18]

[1] hym C. [2] ayenetoward C. [3] And C. [4] which *om.* C.
[5] met with therle of Warwyck & his flote C.
[6] therle of Warrewyk C. [7] the lord C. [8] warned *om.* C.
[9] in to C. [10] in to C. [11] out of C.
[12] And of the felde of Northampton C. [13] And after C. [14] of *om.* C.
[15] ther londed C. [16] knowe theyr trouth and also theyr entent C.
[17] *leaf* 201. [18] batayll were C.

slayn þe Duke of Bokynham, þerl of Shrewesbury, Vicount[1] Beamont, Lorde[2] Egremond, & many knyghtes & squyers, & other Also; And þe King his[3] self taken in þe feld, & afterward brought to London. And Anone After[4] was A parlement at Westmynster, During which parlement þe Duke of York come out of Ireland, with þerle of Rutland rydyng with A gret ffelasship in-to þe paleys at Westmynster, & toke þe Kinges paleys, & come in-to þe parlement chamber, & per toke þe Kinges place, & clamed þe Crown as his propre enheritance & right, & kast forth in writing his title, & also how he was rightful heyr; wherfor was moche to doo; but in conclusion it was Apoynted & concluded þat Kyng Henry shold regne & be King during his Naturel lyfe, for-as-myche as he had be so long King, & was possessed; & after his deth þe Duke of York shold be King, & his heires after him; & forthwith he shold be proclamed heyr Apparent, & shold also be Protectour of[5] Englond during þe Kinges lyfe, with many oþer thinges ordeyned in þe same parlement. And if King Henry during his life went fro þis Apoyntment, or any Article concluded in þe said parlement, he shold be deposed, & þe Duke shold take þe Crown & be Kyng: Al thise[6] thinges wer enacted bi þe Auctorite of þe said parlement. At[7] which parlement þe commones of þe reame being Assembled in þe common house, comonyng & treting vpon þe title of þe said Duke of York, sodenly fill doun þe crown which hang þan in[8] myddes of þe said hous, which is the ffraytor of þe Abbey of Westmynster, which was take for A prodige or token þat þe reign of King Henry was ended. And also þe Crown which stode on þe highest toure of þe steple in þe Castel of Dover, fil down þis same yere.

How þe Duke of York was slayn; And of Wakefelde felde,[9] & of þe ij^te^ jorney at Seynt Albones bi þe Quene & Prince. ca. cclxij.

Then, for-as-moche as þe Quene with þe prince was in þe North, & Absented hir fro the King, & wold nat obey such thinges as was concluded in[10] þe parlement, Itt was ordeyned þat þe Duke of York, as Protector, shold go Northward for to bring in þe Quene, & subdew such as wold nat obey; with whome went þerl of

[1] the Vysecounte C. [2] the lord C. [3] hym C. [4] afterward C.
[5] & regent of C. [6] whiche C. [7] at the C. [8] in the C.
[9] and of the feld of Wakefeld C. [10] *leaf* 201, *back*.

Salesbury, Sir Thomas Nevile his son), with myche peple. And at Wakefeld, in Cristmasse weke, þei wer al ouerthrowen & slayn) bi þe lordes of þe Quene partye, þat is to say,[1] þe Duke of York was slayn), þerl of Rutland, Sir Thomas Nevil, & many mo. þerl of Salesbury was / taken[2] Alyve, & other, as Iohn Harow of London, Capitayn) of þe foot-men, & Hanson) of Hull, which wer brought to Pountfret, & after þer beheded, & þer hedes sent to York, & þer sett vpon þe yates, &c.

And þis tyme, þerl of Marche beyng in Shrewesbury, hering þe deth of his fadre, desired Assistence & Ayd of þe town) for tavenge his fadres deth; & fro þense went to Walys, wher, at Candelmasse after, he had A batail at Mortimess Crosse Ayenst þerles of Penbrok & of Wilshire, where þerl of March had victorie. Than þe Quene, with lordes of þe north, After þei had destressed & slayn) þe Duke of York & his felowsship, come southward with A gret multitude of peple & A gret puissance of peple, for to come to þe King, to defect such conclusions as had bene taken before bi þe parlement. Ageynst whos commyng, þe Duke of Northfolk, þerle of Warewick, with moche peple & ordinaunce, went vnto Seynt Albones, & lad King Henry with þame; & þer encountred to-gedre in suche wise, & fought, þat þe Duke of Northfolk & þerl of Warewick, with other of þat partie, fledd & lost þat felde; wher King Henry was takyn), & went with þe Quene, & Prince his son), which tho had goten þat felde. Than þe Quene & hir partie, beyng at þer Above, sent Anone to London), which was on Asshwodenesday, þe fyft day of Lent, for vitail, which þe Mayr ordeynd, bi chanes of þe Aldremen, þat certayn) cartes laden with vitail shold be sent to Seynt Albones to þame. And when þo Cartes come to Crepilgate, þe commones of þe Cite þat kept þat gate, [3]toke þe vitailles fro þe Carters, & wold not suffre it to passe. Then wer þer certeyn Aldermen & comoners Apoynted to go to Barnett forto speke with þe Quenes Counsel for treatie, þat þe Northeryn) men shold be sent home vnto þer contre Ageyn); ffor þe Cite of London dred fore to be robbed & dispoyled if þei shold come. And thus, during þis tretye, tydinges come þat þerle of Warrewick mett with þerle of Marche on Cotteswold, comyng fro Walys with a gret meyney of Walesshmen, & þat þei both wer commyng to London ward.

[1] wete C.
[2] Here is a gap in C from *taken* to *men þat wer þer* (page 533, line 5).
[3] *leaf* 202.

Anone as thise tydinges wer knowen, þe treaty was broken; for þe King, Quene, Prince, & al þe othir lordes þat wer with þame, departed fro Seynt Albones northward, with al þer peple yet or þei departed fro þens. Þei beheded þe Lorde Bonevil & Sir Thomas Kyriel, which wer taken in þe Iourney done on Shroft-Tuesday. Then þe Duches of York beyng at London, & hering of þe losse of þe felde at Seynt Albones, sent ouer þe See hir ij yong sonnes, George & Richard, which went to Vtrecht; & Philip Malpas, a riche merchant of London, Thomas Vaghan, Squyer, & William Hatteclif, & many oþer, fering of þe commyng of þe Quene to London, toke a-shipp of Andwarpe for to haue gone in-to Zeland; And on þat other coste wer taken of one colompne of Frenshmen, A shipp of Were; & he toke þame prisoners, & brought þame in-to France, wher þei payd gret godes for þer raunson; & þer was myche gode & rychesse in þat shippe.

Of þe deposicion of Kyng Henry þe vj^te^; And how King Edward þe Fourt toke possession; And of þe batail of Palme Sonday; and how he was crowned. Cap. cclxiij.

Than when þerle of Marche & þerl of Warwick had mett togedre on Cotteswold, In-continent they concluded to go to London, & sent worde Anone [1]to þe Mair & to þe Cite þat þei shold come. Anone þe Cite was glad of þer commyng, hoping to be releued bi thame. And when þei wer commyn to London, & had spoken with þe lordes & Astates þat wer ther, þei concluded, for-as-mych as King Henry was gone with þame Northward, þat he had forfeted his Crown, & ought forto be deposed, According to þe Actes made and passed in þe last parlement. And so, by thavice of þe lordes spirituel & temperel þen beyng At London, þerle of Marche, Edward, bi þe grace of God þe oldest son of Richard, Duke of Yorke, As rightful heir & next enheritour to his fadre, þe iiij^te^ day of Marche, þe yere of oure Lorde God M^l^ cccclix, toke possession of þe Reame of England at Westmynster in þe gret hall, & after, in þabbey church; & offred as King, bering þe Sceptre ryal, to whome al þe lordes, both spirituel & temperel, did homage & obeisaunce, to þer souereyn liege & lawful lord & Kyng; & forthwith it was proclamed thrugh þe Cite, Kinge Edwarde, þe Fourt of þat name. And Anone after, þe King rode in his royall Astate Northward, with al his lordes, to subdue his subgettes þat

[1] *leaf* 202, *back*.

tyme beyng in þe North, & tavenge his fadre deth, And vpon Palme Sonday after, he had A gret batail in þe north contre at A place called Towton, nat ferre fro Yorke, where, bi þe help of God, he gat þe felde & had þe victorie; & þer wer slayn of his Aduersaries xxx^ml men & moo, As it was said by men þat wer þer. In which batail was slayn þerl of Northumbreland, þe Lorde Clifford, Sir Iohn Nevil, þerle of Westmerlandes broþer, Andrew Trowlopp, & many oþer knightes & squyers.

Then King Henry, þat had be King, beyng with þe Qvene & Prynce at York, hering þe losse of þat felde, & so moch peple slayn & ouerthrowen, Anone forthwith departed al thre, with þe Duke of Somersett, þe lorde Roos & other, toward Scotland. And þe next day King Edward, with al his Army, entred into York, & was þer proclamed King, & obeyed as he ought to be; And þe Mair & þe[1] Aldremen come in, &[2] swore to be his liege men. And whan he had taried A while in þe Northe, [3]& þat al þat contre was[4] turned to him, he retorned Southwarde, levyng þerle of Warrewyck in þoo parties, for to kepe & gouerne þat contre. And About Midsommer after, þe yere of our Lord God[5] M^l iiij^c lx, & þe first yere of his regne, he was crowned at Westmynster, & ennoynted King of Englond, having þe hole possession of al þe hole reame; whome I beseche[6] God to preserue,[7] & send him þe Accomplisshment of þe remanent of his rightful enheritance beyonde þe see, so[8] þat he may regn in þame to þe pleyasor of Almighty God, helth[9] of his soul, honor & worsship in þis present life, & wel & profet of al his subgettes, And þat þer may be A verry final pees in al Cristen reames, þat þe Infidelis & miscreantes may be withstanden & destroied, & our feith enhaunced, which in thise dayes is sore mynnshed by þe puissaunce of þe Turkes & hethen men; And þat after þis present & short life we may come to þe euer-lastyng life.[10] Amen!

Explicit.[11]

[1] & þe *om.* C. [2] & aldermen & comyns C. [3] *leaf* 203. [4] & that al the countre ther had C. [5] God *om.* C. [6] pray C. [7] god saue & kepe C. [8] & C. [9] hath Ad. helthe C. [10] lyfe in the blysse of heuen / C. [11] Explicit *om.* C.

[H]

EXTRACTS FROM HARLEIAN MS. 53.

I.

[The Foundation of Battle Abbey by William the Conqueror.]

[1] When William Bastard had[2] conquert aH Englond, and was crownet kyng, and had receyvet his homages and stablisshet his pees, he passet ouer see ageyn in-to Normaundy. And att Ester next folowynge he come ageyn in-to Englond, and landit at Dover, and brought with hym Maude his wif, and many faire ladies and gentiHwemen with hir, and from thens so to London, with gret nobley. and on the Wittesonday after folowyng, she was crownet be the Archbisshope of Euerwik at Westemynster, with gret solempnyte and wurshipe. And þe[3] Kyng William, by counsail of his baronry, ordeynt how his Reame shuld be gouernet for the wele of the land. And he bethought hym howe he had causet gret shedynge of bloode wrongfully; wherfore he foundet an Abbay in the same place where-as the batail was, & made for to clepe it þe Abbay of Bataile; and he gave there-to gret lordshippes, londes and rentes, for to pay for al the sawles that were slayn ther for his love.

¶ And after the discomfiture of the batail, ich wurthy knyght of Normaundy that was there, laft a scochon of his armes, with his name peyntet, in a place of the batail clepit Southope, which was clepit 'the peyntit chamber,' in remembraunce of their[4] honour and wurshipe[5] [6]for euer; and there thei stode so long, tiH þei feH doune to the erth, and many of hem were lost.[6] And In that same tyme there was one Thomas Sayntlegerd, squyer, dwellynge with the Abbot of Batail, and sawe þe gret myschef and periH that myght aftirward faH of disherytyng of hem of whome the Armes were lost.[7] And of aH the scochons and names that were lafte clere, and not lost, he made for to make a faire boke, and peyntet hem therin, for cause they shuld be there founden in remembraunce for euer,[8] that al men myght fynde there their armes if thei hem not knewe. And that same boke was kept in the Abbay of Bataile vnto the tyme that Kyng Henry the .Vte. shuld passe in-to Normaundy,

[1] *leaf* 76. [2] duke of Normandy had L. [3] there L.
[4] the L. [5] wurship & honour that they had there L.
[6–6] *om.* L. [7] were falle doune & lost L.
[8] be fonden therein euremore in remembrance L.

to conquere his right, and toke with hym al the gentiH-men which had forgeton) their armes; wherfore þe said Kyng sent vnto the Abbot of Bataile for to sende hym that boke of Armes; And the Abbot sent to hyme the boke at his comaundement, the which boke was neuer brought ageyn); and the chambre where þe armes were was not repeiret, nor none hede taken to hem; wherfore a gret part of the Armes feH doune, and was lost and forgeten); but then aH the names and armes that were founden clere were writton) [1] in a table which is of recorde in the Abbay of Batail, the which names ben rehersit in this table next folowynge in ordre. that is to say: *

[-*ard*]	Purceн	Baywaн [5]	Hanet
Bastard	Chameн	Meyniн	Lynet
Baynard [2]	Rideн	Dariн	Hachet
Brassard	Russeн	Rocheн	Haket
Maignard [3]	Blounden	——	Truret
Berard	Mauncen	[-*et*, -*ot*]	Burdet
Maureward	Torchappen	Toret	Bret
Beygnard [4]	Charneн	Tanet	Trevet
Hansard	Tireн	Tupet [9]	Bigot
Hasard	Toreн	Bratet	Bagot
Ayelard	Oreн [7]	Boynet	Tallebot
Achard	Saintbrenen	Malet	Tibot
Swyward [5]	Tramen	Bluet	Tabot
Saylard	Clareн	Brachet	Lincot
Bereward	Freseн	Belet	Lonetot
Wishard	Waden	Ledet	Pigot
Musard	Trussen	Pilet [10]	Tiptot [11]
Lyard	Coudren	Palet	——
Giffard	Burneн	Tuchet	[-*aunt*, -*ent*, -*ount*]
Picard	Bussen	Basset	
Pipard	Peveren	Buket	Gaunt
Gerard	Auenen	Duket	Passauaunt [*col.* 3]
Fossard	Veen	Piket	Niuelent
——	Spigurnen [*col.* 2]	Mulet	Duredent
[-*aн*, -*eн*, -*iн*]	Loven	Baret	Richemount
Moreн	Crien	Mounfichet	Nepount [12]
Marteн	Furnyvaн	Pounchet	Neyrount [12]
Pameн	Drutaн	Pachet	——
Pineн	Surdevaн	Corbet	[-*act*]
Ducreн [6]	Orivaн	Birset	Pountfract

[1] *leaf* 76, *back*. [2] Barnard L (Lambeth MS. 6). [3] Maynard L.
[4] Boigmard L. [5] Swyaud L. [6] L. adds Putnell.
[7] Torell L. [8] *om.* L. [9] Tapet L. [10] Pelet L.
[11] Tiptot comes 4th in the next list.
[12] These two come at the end of the -*court* list.
* The same names are given in alphabetical order on pp. 605–607.

[*-court*]
Harecourt
Bricourt
Phanecourt
Deynecourt

——

[*-y*]
Lucy
Lacy
Luncy
Darcy
Sunely
Mounteny
Barry
Berry
Curty
Tracy
Bracy
Aubeny
Perly
Cunly
Curly
Crecy
Arcy
Percy
Vescy
Verly
Soldeny
Mountanasy
Meisy[1]
Gaugy
Hercy
Mougomery
Semery
Akeny
Pleisy
Panely
Audeny
Quincy
Tuny
Massy
Welby

——

[*-ay, -ey*]
Hay
Say
Aubray[2]
Morley
Mansey
Candrey
Sancey [*col.* 4]
Curecy
Anney
Bussey
Lescey
Moubray
Gurnay

——

[*-ille, -ille*]
Morvile
Sechevile
Bernevile
Graynvile
Bontvile
Frivile
Longevile
Fresvile
Folvile
Berevile
Cannevile
Carevile
Cardevile
Asprevile
Colvile
Torevile
Barevile
Scutevile
Butevile
Vmframvile
Nevile
Grenevile
Turbevile
Arvile
Sandervile
Amondevile
Spynevile
Widvile
Wivile
Ofvile
Gorunvile[3]
Abvile
Somervile
Sonevile
Baskervile
Hanvile
Hautevile
Audevile
Danstervile
Maundevile
Souppitt *or* Soupeitt

——

[*-ampe*]
Longchampe
Nunchampe
Feschampe
Beauchamp

——

[*-er, -ere, -our*]
Passamere [*col.* 5]
Mortymer
Poer
Renger
Roter
Beler
Boner
Butteler
Despenser
Budler
Saucer
Chaucer [*]
Ferrer
Gorger
Miler
Saunzaner
Gower
Leverer
Sainteler
Saintomer
Ascher[4]
Malynoler
Hurfer
Veer
Saintleger
Gunter
Gamager
Gauter
Banaster
Venour
Vauesour

——

[*Fitz-*]
Fitz[5] Geffray
Fitz[5] Water
Fitz[5] Piers
Fitz[5] Symond
Fitz[5] Vise
Fitz[6] Hu
Fitz[5] Brian
Fitz[5] Garin
Fitz[5] Herbert

——

[*-ace, -ars, -as, -aus; -eis, -ers, -es, -eus, -euse; -oris, -os, -urs, -uce; -is, -oise, -ose; -euges, -euse, -us, -ux*]
Curteis
Santemareis
Beaumeis
Bleis
Greis
Wasteneis (*or* -eils)[6]
Curteneis[7]
Mareis
Seygnes
Raynes
Keynes [*tf.* 77, *col.* 1]
Freynes
Roos
Curthose[8]
Trauers[4]
Matroners
Vilers
Prers[4]
Ferrers
Moreus[9]
Valeus[10]
Chalurs
Saintclus
Saintmoris[11]
Pus
Bruce
Chalenges
Auerenges
Parles
Huscharles
Setvaus[12]
Taillois

[1] Mersy L. [2] Ambray L. [3] Gounrvile L. [4] *om.* L. [5] Filz L.
[6] Wasteneis L. [7] Cartenais L. [8] See 537, 1, 3. [9] Morens? L.
[10] Valens? L. [11] Saintmorioris L. [12] Setvans? L.

	Camois	[*-an*]	Veisyn	Plevien
	La Heuse	Brian	Mamelbarin[2]	Saintmore
	Courtheuse[1]	Baucan	Comyn	——
4	Breuse	Truan	Warenne	Wildbef [*col.* 5]
	Chaundos [*col.* 2]	——	Dulapenne [*col.* 4]	Pantulf
	Sainterois	[*-oun*]	——	Bardulf
	Tailepas	Britoun [*col.* 3]	Meyne	Sanctelou
8	Marcimas	Frisoun	Cheyne §	Gantlou
	Ferebrace	Grauntsoun[2]	Penire [*or* Pemre]	Mountegu
	Fetepace	Vernoun	Tenere	——
	Bars	Piroun[2]	Lysle	Rosynis[2]
12	Quatremars	Heiroun	Burle	Heris
	Fyneux	Peisoun[3]	Rusak	Brok
	Punegis	Leoun	Murdak	——
	Eurons	Motoun[2]	Gorge	Hubert
16	Manus (*or*	——	Saintgorge[2]	Lambert
	Manns)	[*-yn*]	——	Foliambe[2]
	Grace	Cosyn	Dalamare	——
	——	Rosyn	Mire	Escot
20	[*-ayn, -eyn*]	Sainthelyn)	Saunzire	Kirlecot
	Morteyn	Costentyn	Lunar	Trusbut
	Butvileyn	Formentyn	Orrewar	Ynogre
	Malemayn	Manyn[2]	Clare	Saintnoyre
24	Foleyn	Iardyn	Savage	——
	Chambreleyn	Taryn	Neomarch	Zoochh [? MS.][2]
	Chastelleyn	Saintquintyn[2]	Saint Iohn)	Cornor
		Hamelyn	Chene §[2]	

[The Lambeth MS., leaves 111–112, leaves out a few names, spells others with slight differences, and puts in 'Putrell.']

[1] See 536, IV, 30. [2] *om.* L. [3] Tyson L.

II.

[*The battle of Crecy and the Siege of Calais*, A.D. 1346.]

28 [4]¶ And in the xix yere of his regne he went in-to **Britayne**, and into **Gascoyne** & **Gian**,[5] & *with* hym the Erle of **Huntyngtoun**, þe Erle of **Warrewik**, þe Erle of **Suffolk** [6]and þe Erle of **Arundell**, and *with* many oþire lordes, *with* CC
32 and .xl^ti^. shippes, onon after Mydsomer, to avenge hym on the wronges and harmes þat was done be **Philipe** Valoys,[7] Kyng of **Fraunce**, agaynes þe truyce beforesaid made; which truys he falsly and vntrewly brake by cauelacioun. And he
36 come ageyne in-to **Englonde** with-in the same yere.

[4] *leaf* 138. The words in large type are underlined in red in the MS. In other pages of the text, no difference of type is made.

[5] & Gian *om.* L. [6] *leaf* 138, *back*. [7] de Valoys L.

¶ **Of the bataile of Cressy, and of the seege of Caleys; and of the bataile of Durham where-as the Kyng of Scottes was taken; and alle in one yere.** [*This heading is underlined in red in the MS.*]

IN the yere of oure Lord. M^{l}. CCC. xlvj^{ti}. and in the xx^{ti} yere of the regne of Kyng Edward of Wyndesore, he held a parlement at Westmynster, where-as were al the lordes of the reame, spirituell and temperall.[1] At which parlement were proclame þe gret iniuries and wronges þat was done be the Kyng of Fraunce and Frenshmen in the parties of be-yonde the see, and on þe see-costes in Kent, and specialy be theym of Caleis. Wherfore þe Kyng, be the counseil of his lordes spirituall and temperall, and of al his reame, ordeynt hym to passe ouer see ageyne, to chastise the rebelles of Fraunce, and to lay seege to Caleis, which did gret harme about al þe see-cost; wherfore it was þat tyme kept with saudiours, to gret cost to þe King and the reame. And þerfore þe Kyng sent to al his frendes be-yonde the see, þat were to hym assuret, as before is said, to mete with hym in Fraunce with al þeire power and Alliaunce. And the whiles he purveid hys navey, and made his retenewe in Englond, in al þe hast he myght; of which þe names of the chef lordes and capteyns, with their retenewe and the noumbre, folowith heraftir in this table, that is for to say:

¶ Prynce Edward with xj banerettes, C. ij. knyghtes, CC lxiiij. men of armes, CCC iiij^{xx} iiij Archers on horsebak, iij^{xx} ix. Archers on foote, vj^{C} Walshmen, wherof on was a chapeleyn, & anoþer a leche, and anoþer a crier. And in his retenewe was xxv^{ti}[2] vynteners, & iiij^{C} & iiij^{xx} footmen, & v standart berers.

¶ Henre, Erle of Lancastre, with an Erle, xj banerettes, C. iiij^{xx} xiij. knyghtes, v^{C} xiij. men of Armes, and vj^{C} xij. Archers on horsebak.

¶ William Bohome, Erle of Northamptoun, with ij banerettes and xlvj^{ti} knyghtes, C and xij. men of Armes, And C. lxj of Archers on horsebak.

¶ Thomas Beauchampe, Erle of Warrewik, with iij banerettes, and lxiij knyghtes, and C and xxx^{ti} men of Armes, and C. xlj^{ti} Archers[3] on horsebak.

[1] lordes spirituall & temporal of þe reame. spirituall and temperall *om.* L.
[2] xxvj L. [3] men of armes L.

¶ Richard, Erle of Arundell, *with* iij banerettes, and xlj[ti]. knyghtes, and C and .vj. men of Armes, and C liij[ti]. Archers on horsebak.[1]

¶ Robert Dufford, Erle of Suffolk, *with* on baneret, and xxvj[ti] knyghtes, and lviij[ti] men of Armes, and lxiij Archers on horsebak.

¶ William Clynton, Erle of Huntingtoun, *with* ij. banerettes, and xxx[ti] knyghtes, and $\overset{xx}{}$iij and xiij. men of Armes, and $\overset{xx}{}$iij. viij. Archers on horsebak.

¶ John Veer, Erle of Oxenford, with on baneret and xxij knyghtes, and xlviij[ti] men of Armes, and lxiiij Archers on horsebak.

¶ Laurence Hastynges, Erle of Penbrok, with on baneret, and xxxvj[ti][2] knyghtes, and $\overset{xx}{}$iij[3] vj men of Armes, And C xxij[ti][4] Archers on horsebak.

¶ The Erle of Kildare, *with* on baneret, and on knyght, and xxiiij[ti][5] men of Armes, and xxviij[ti] hobilers.

¶ Maistre Thomas Hattefeld, bisshope of Dureham, *with* iij banerettes, and xlviij[ti]. knyghtes, C lxiiij men of Armes, and $\overset{xx}{}$iij and xv Archers on horsebak.

¶ Hughe Spenser as an Erle, with .ij. banerettes, and xl[ti] knyghtes, and $\overset{xx}{}$iij and xvj[6] men of Armes, and $\overset{xx}{}$iij and xv Archers on horsebak.

¶ [7]Rauf, Baron of Stafford, *with* ij banerettes, and xx[ti] knyghtes, & $\overset{xx}{}$iij and xij men of Armes, and $\overset{xx}{}$iij and xv Archers on horsebakke.

¶ Richard Talbot,[8] Baroun, Stuard of þe Kynges house, *with* xiiij knyghtes, and lx of men of Armes, and lx Archers on horsebakke.

¶ Iohn Darox[9] the fadir, Baroñ, with xj knyghtes, and xlviij[ti] of men of Armes, and lx Archers on horsebakke, and xx[ti] Archers on foote.

¶ Berthelemew Burewassh, Baneret, the Kynges Chamberleyn, with one baneret, and xxvj[ti][10] knyghtes, lxxxj of men of Armes, & lviij[ti] Archers on horsebak, & xix on foote.

¶ Waulter Manny, *with* oþer xxv[ti][11] banerettes, with theyre

[1–1] *om.* L. [2] xxv[ti] L. [3] C & L. [4] CC L.
[5] xl[ti] L. [6] xv L. [7] *leaf* 139. [8] Talbot *om.* L. [9] Barox L.
[10] & vj & xx[ti] L. [11] xxxvj[ti] L.

retenets, that is to say, with C xxiiij^{ti} knyghtes, D[1] xx iiij xiij of[2] men of Armes, and D xx iiij xij archers on horsebakke, and of hobillers and Pavysers, and C xix Archers on foote.

¶ **Sir William Wareyne**, knyghte, with oþir xx iiij and xv knyghtes, CCC xx iiij xiiij[3] pavisers and hobelers on horsbakke, and xvj archers on foote. 4

¶ **Sir Waulter Wetewang**, the Kynges wardroper, with ij knyghtes, and xxv^{ti} of men of Armes, and xxxvj^{ti} Archers on horsbakke. 8

¶ **Maistre Symond Islepe**, Privey Seal, with xvij[4] men of Armes, and xij Archers on horsebakke, and iiij Archers on foote. 12

¶ **Philip Westoñ, Clerk**, with iij knyghtes, and xxvij^{ti} of men of Armes, and xxx^{ti} Archers on horsebakke.

¶ **William Keldesby, Clerk**, with iij knyghtes, and lxxiij of[5] men of Armes, and lxviij Archers on horsbakke, and xij Archers on foote. 16

¶ **Sir William Daltoñ, Countroller** of þe Kynges house, with oþer xix Clerkes of dyuers officers, with an C xiiij vndir-Clerkes and squyers, and C xxv^{ti} Archers on horsebakke, and ij Archers[6] on foote. 20

¶ **William at Wode**, the Kynges banerer, with oþer iiij banerers, and C xxxij^{ti} of Sergiauntes to meñ of Armes, Scutifers of þe Kynges house, sergeauntes of diuerse office, and mynstrelles, CClxviij Archers, hobelers, banerers, messagers and yemen of þe Kynges Chambre, and of diuerse offices in þe Kynges house. 24 28

¶ **Sir Thomas Haukestoñ**, knyght, with an C lxj of men of Armes, and CCC xiij Archers on horsbakke, and CC xlj^{ti} Archers on foote.

¶ **Maistre Siluestre Benet**, and oþer CCC xiiij Masons, Carpenters, Smythes, pavylers, mynours, Armerers, Gunners, and Artillers. 32

¶ **Sir Iohñ Ward**, knyght, with x Centenaries and l^{ti} men of Armes, and D[7] xx CC xx iiij, and viij vyntenaries, and CC xx iiij xviij[8] Archers on horsbakke, and D hobilers, and xv[9] M^{t} iiij Archers on foote. 36

[1] and L (D = 500, misread as &). [2] of *om.* L. [3] & xv L.
[4] xxvj L. [5] of *om.* L. [6] on horsebakke and ij Archers *om.* L.
[7] D (500) *om.* L. [8] viii viiij L. [9] xvj L.

¶ Sir Howell Griffith, knyghte, with oþer ij knyghtes, and $\overset{xx}{iiij}$ men of Armes of Walshemen of Northwales and Southwales, and ij C and iij vintenares, and iiij M^{l} CC Walshmen.

¶ Maisters of Shippes, and Constables, maryners, and pages, þe nombre of DCC: þe nombre of maryners, bargers, and balyngers and vitailers, xvj M^{l}.

¶ And thes ben þe names of the Aliens which were þe Kynges frendes, and in his Sande that same tyme, and halp hym in his werres in Fraunce. *scilicet*:—

[1]¶ Lodewik, the Emperoure of Rome, with a certeyn men of Armes.

¶ Reynold, Duke of Gildre, with a certeyn-men of Armes.

¶ Iohñ, Duke of Braban, with a certeyne men of Armes.

¶ William, Erle of Henawde, with a certeyne men of Armes.

¶ Tederik, lord Faukemand, with a certeyne men of Armes.

¶ Corald of Marke, with a certeyne men of Armes.

¶ Bertold, Erle of Baiespath, Maurchion de Brandesburghe, and othir knyghtes and squyers, straungers, witholden with þe Kynge.

¶ Baudewyñ, Archbisshope of Treeue, with a certeyn men.

¶ Archbisshope[2] of Magunense*r* with a certeyn men.

¶ Guilmyn, Marchion Iuliacen, with a certeyn men.

¶ The Erle of Helsteyn, with oþer xxiiij^{ti} knyghtes alieyns, clepit 'Nethirbandes,' and C $\overset{xx}{iiij}$ viij of men of Armes, and C lxvj pavisers.

¶ The Erle of Freyburghe, with oþer xl^{ti} knyghtes alieyns, clepit 'Euerbandes,' &[3] CC xxxiiij^{ti} of men of Armes and C $\overset{xx}{iiij}$ ix[4] pavisers.

¶ The nombre of þe retenue, without Alieyns, that is to say, of erles, barons, banerettes, knyghtes, men of armes, Constables, Centeners, capteyns, vynteners, Archers on horsbak, hobelers, Archers of[5] foote, and Walshmen, as þe rolles of þe retenu make mencion, is xxv^{Ml}. CC $\overset{xx}{iiij}$. ¶ The nombre of Masone, carpenters, smythes, paviloners, Armerers, Gunners and artillers, is CCC xiiij.

¶ The nombre of þe maisteres of shippes, Constables, maryners and pages of shippis, bargers, balyngers, and vitteilers is xvj. M^{l}.

¶ When Kyng Edward had made his retenu and his Armee

[1] *leaf* 139, *back*. [2] The erchbisshop L. [3] & *om*. L.
[4] clxvi L. [5] on L.

in þis wise as before is said, and his navey was redy; he shippit the xij^te^ day of Iule, the yere of our Lord M.^l^ CCC xlvj^ti^, and saylet toward **Normaundy**, and londit at **Hogges**, and restet hym ther vj daies, and vnshippit his pepiH; and þen went he toward **Cane**, brennyng & distrying euer as he went by þe way. And þe xxviij^ti^ day of Iuyle, at þe brigge of Cane, that was strenghet be Normaundes, he had there a gret bataile, and longe duryng, thrughe gret multitude of pepil þat was þer slayn; and þer was take þe Erle of **Elbe**,[1] the Lord **Tankervile**, and an C knyghtes and men of Armes, and vj^C^ footemen; and al þe subbarbes to þe hard walles was born and cariet away, al þat couth be cariet. And so þe Kyng passet forth in þe cuntrey, and wastet and distryet xx^ti^ myle in brede.

¶ **Philip of Valois**, Kyng of **Fraunce**, was fast by with a gret host, and hard þerof, and wold not come ouer þe water of **Seyne**, but brake al the brigges beyonde þe water, from **Roan** to **Parise**, and fled with his host to Parise. ¶ When Kyng **Edward** come to þe water of **Seyne**, he fand al þe brigges broken; but within ij daies he made a brige ageyne. and on þe morowe aftir oure Lady day Assumpcion, he passet ouer þe **Water of Seyne**, and went toward **Cressy**, & distryet by þe way, townes, and þe pepiH in hem. And in þe Fest of Saynt **Berthelemewe**, he passet the water of **Summe** vnhurt, with al his host, where-as neuer was no passage before þat tyme; And yet þer ware ij M^l^ Frenshmen to haue lette his passage. And þen, þe xxvj^ti[2]^ day of August, **Edward** faught beside **Cressy**, in a feld, havyng iij batayles of Englishmen, & Philipe of Valois iiij batailes: þe lest batail passet þe nomber of Englishmen. And when þe ij hostes mette to-gedre, ther [3]fell in-with the host of **Fraunce**, the Kyng of[4] **Beame**, þe Duk of **Loryn**, And oþer Erles, as of **Flaundres**, **Dalison**, **Blois**, **Harecourt**, **Aunard**, and[5] **Navers**, and many oþer lordes and barons, knyghtes and men of Armes, the nombre of j M^l^ CCCCC and xlij^ti^, without footemen. And yette for al this, **Phelip** the Kyng[6] withdrowe hym with the residew of aH his pepiH; wherfore it was said among his oune mewe "**Nostre beal retreit**," that is to say, 'Oure faire withdraweth hym.'[7] ¶ And thus Kyng **Edward** had þe Victory; and there he and his pepiH hem restet, and thanket God. and on þe morow after, þe

[1] þe Erle of Elbe *om.* L. [2] vj L. [3] *leaf* 140. [4] kyng Ha. king of L. [5] Aunard and *om.* L. [6] þe king Phelipe L. [7] hym *om.* L.

Frenshe men come ageyne with a gret host to gyve Kyng **Edward** batail̃e; but the Erle of Warrewik mette with hem, and þe Erle of Norhamptoun, and þe Erle of **Suffolke**, *with* theire meyny, and slowe of hem ij M^{t}, and toke many of the gentils prisoners; and al þe remenaunt fled iiij lekes thens. And thrid day after, the[1] Kyng **Edwerd** went toward **Caleis**, distrying al þe cuntrey as he rode, and laide[2] seege to **Caleis**[3] þe iij^{de} day of **Septembre**, with the CasteH, and contynuet þe sege stiH[4] from that day vnto þe iij^{de} day of Aust the next yere folowyng.

¶ Whiles Kyng Edward lay at Seege of[5] **Caleys**, a gret power of Scottes come in-to **Englond**, to Nevileros, about **Saint Luyk** day, wenyng to haue founden al þe land destitute and voide of men, because the Kyng was beyonde þe see with a gret host; [6]þei wend *per* had be non lafte at home, but prestes, men of religion, plowmen and laborers;[6] but, thanket be God! they fand[7] enow to wiststonde hem: they robbit and made gret distruccion; And so ther was a day of Batail sette betwene hem and certeyn lordes and meñ of holy chirch that were in that cuntrey, and þe comyn pepiH; at which batail, throw Goddes myghte, [the Scottes] were[8] discomfit, notwithstondyng they were iij meñ ageyne one of Englisshe meñ.[9] And þere were slayne the chiualry of **Scottelond**; and there was Dauid, the Kyng of **Scottes**, taken fleying, smytte thrughe þe nose with an Arowe, be a yoman that was callet **Copeland**; and there was take, the Erle of **Moriss**, Sir **William Douglas**, and many oþer gret meñ. And this batail was done beside **Dereham**, the xvij day of Octobre, the yere of oure Lord aboue-said. And when þe batail̃e was done, þe Englisshe men hem restet a fewe dayes, and ordeynt kepers of the north countrey, and after came to London, and broȝt *with* hem þe Kyng of **Scottes**, and oþer lordes that were take *prisoners*, and led hem to þe Toure, where-as they abode of þe comyng of Kyng **Edward** out of Fraunce; and aftir that was raunsont at C M^{t} marcs, to be payde in x yere, ich yere x M^{t} marcs.

[1] the *om.* L. [2] laide þerto L. [3] to Caleis *om.* L.
[4] Septembre which seege continued still L. [5] att L.
[6–6] *om.* L. [7] fande men E. [8] were þe scottes L. were Ha.
[9] of englisshe meñ *om.* L.

¶ **Of the Conquest of Caleis by Kyng Edward of Wyndisore; and of the tresoun that was ordeynt for Caleis by one Sir Geffrey Charney.** [*Big writing underlined in red in the MS.*]

EDward, Kyng of Englond contynuet at þe seege stiH aH the wynter, and Philip Valois, Kyng of Fraunce, purpaset hym with some fraude to putte hym fro þe seege, and come the xxvij^ti day of Iuyle, þe yere of oure Lord M^l CCC xlvij^ti to CalkeweH, a myle and an half from Caleis, with a gret host; and sent to Kyng Edward, and askit hym whedir he durst feight with hyme the iij^de day, about euensonge tyme, and leve þe seege. And Kyng Edward onon, with-out eny counsaile or avisement, acceptet gladly the day; and yette much of his pepiH wer seke and ded on þe fflux. ¶ When þe Kyng of Fraunce wist verely that he wold feight, with-out eny avisement or long tarying he sette his loggynges on fyre, and went cowarly his way.

III.

[*From Bolingbroke's return*, A.D. 1399, *to* A.D. 1405.]

[1] ¶ When Kyng Richard had tithynges in Irlond, that Henry of Boleynbroke, Duyke of Herford, was comyn into Englond, he lafte al his ordynaunce in Irlond, and hastet hym into Englond, in al that he myghte, and come vnto the casteH of [2]Flynt in Wales, and there he abode, to take his counsaile what was best for to done; but ther come no counsaile to hyme. And in the menewhile, Henry Boleynbrok [3]come [to] Herford, and [þe] Erle of Derby[3] come to Chestre, and loggit in the CasteH, [3]with-in the Inner ward þerof, which casteH Kyng Richard had riolly repeiret, and made with hertes of frestone betwene ich lope, with crownes and cheynes about theire nekkes, for he lovit wele that place[3] // And then was there sent vnto the casteH of Flynt, Maister Thomas ArundeH, Archbisshope of Caunterbury, and Sir Henry Percy, Erle of Northumbrelond, and othir lordes, both spirituaH and temporaH; and there was much thyng spoken of betwene þe Kyng and hem, by gret othis and suyrtees made, that he shuld come vnto Chestre savely, and[4] spek with the Duyk, and be delyuert savely ageyn to the said casteH: which othis and suyrtees were not al parfowremet.

[1] *leaf* 152, at foot. The red underlines are not now markt by difference of type.
[2] *leaf* 152, *back*. [3]–[3] *om.* L. [4] to L.

And so come the Kyng ridyng vnto Chestre [1]and yong Henry with hyme, that was þe eldest sone of the said Duyk of Herford[1] // and was loggit in the vtterward of the casteH of Chestre.[2] Then Kyng Richard vndirstood and knewe wele that it was not wele on[3] heire[4] syde. And the same nyght, after that[5] Kyng Richard was gone to Chestir, Sir Thomas Percy, Erle of Wircestre and stuard of the Kynges howsold, come into the haH amonges the pepiH, and there he brak the rodde of his office, and bade enery mañ do his best; And so went ich man his way.

¶ Then þe Kyng and[6] the Duyk mette and spake to-gedirs in þe haH of þe said CasteH, [1]that was in the vtterward,[1] a longe while, and aftir departet; and in[7] the departyng, Henry, the sonne and heire of the said Duyk, come to his fadir, and knelit doun before hym, and welcomet hym, as hym aught to do; And there forthwith his fadir hym charget the next day to come from the Kyng, and waite vppon hym. ¶ Then this yong knyght Henry brought þe Kyng to his chambre with a sorowfuH hert, for cause he shuld depart from his godfadir and his Souerayne Lord, for he louet hyme enterely. And when he come into the Kynges chambre, he tolde the Kyng how he most, the next day aftir, wayte vppon his fadir, be streyt and hard comaundement. And then þe kyng said to hym the[s]e wordes: ¶ "Good sonne Henry, I gyve thè good[8] leve to do thy fadirs comaundement; but I knowe wele there is on Henry shal do me much harme; and I suppose it is not thowe. Wherfore I pray thè be my frende, for I wot now howe it wil go." And so on the next day aftir, Henry toke his leue of þe Kyng his godfadir with an hevy hert, and went to his fadir, Duyk of Herford. And after that, was the Kyng arestet in thè same CasteH by the said Duyk, and al his meyny that were about hym put away; and such men were put about hym as the Duyk wold. Then from thens he was broughte to London, and, by assent of al þe lordes, putte in þe Toure. [1]And on Saint Laurence even, þe hed of Perkyn of Lee was smyt of vnder the Iubet[9] of Chestre.[1]

[1–1] *om.* L. [2] of Chestre *om.* L. [3] in L. [4] his L.
[5] that *om.* L. [6] þe kyng and *om.* L. [7] at L.
[8] good *om.* L. [9] gibbet L.

[1]¶ Of the deth of Kyng Richard, and of othir dyuers Duk*es*, Erles, and barons moo. [*Big writing, underlined with red.*]

IN the first yere of the regne[2] of Kyng Henry the iiij^te^, Kyng Richard, which þ*at* was put doune of[3] his Rialte, was in þe Casteł of Pountfret vndir þe ward of Sir Robert[4] of Watirton, knyght[5]; and þere he was ich day servet [as] a[6] Kyng aught to he, that he myght se it; but he myght come to non þ*er*of; wherfore sone aftir he deyd for honger in prisoñ in þe same Casteł[7]; and so he made his ende. ¶ And when Kyng Henry wist verely that he was ded, because much pepił said he was on lyve many a day after, he made to sere hym, and cloþe hym in[8] lynnen Cloth, al saave onely the visage; and that was lafte open, that men myght se and knowe his p*er*sone from al oþ*er*; and so was he brought with torch-light vnto Paulis at Londoñ, and had þere his masse and dirige, and þe same wise at Westemynster; and þen from Paules he was brought*e* to Langeley, and þere he was enteret.

¶ That same yere Kyng Henry the iiij^te^ held his Cristemas in þe Casteł of Wynnessore: and on the xij^te^ even come to hym the Duke of Awmarle, and told hym how þat he and þe Duke of Surry, þe Duk of Excestre, and þe Erle of Salesbury and þe Erle of Gloucestre,[9] and oþ*er* moo of theyre Affynyte, were accordit to make a mu*m*my*n*g vnto þe said Kyng Henry on xij^te^ day at nyght, in[10] which mu*m*myng þei purpaset to sle hym. ¶ When[11] Kyng Henry þe iiij^te^ was thus warnet, he rode in hast þat same nyght pryvely to London, to gete hym socoure and counsaile. But assone as þe forsaid lord*es* wist and knewe that their counsaile were discou*er*t openly, they fled, eu*er*y man his way; And aftirward thei were taken in certeyn places of Englond be þe comyns, and hedit, and þeire hedis sette on London Brigge, [12]and theire bodyes quartert, and sett vp in dyu*er*s townes of Englond.[12] Whos names folowen her*e* aftir[13] in þis table, and the places where þei wer taken, and hedit:

Att Circestre were taken with hem of þe toune	The Duke of Surry and Erle of Kent[14] The Erle of Salesbery The Erle of Oxenford	quart*er*et[15] and hedit.

[1] *leaf* 153. [2] of the regne *om.* L. [3] from L. [4] Henry L.
[5] knyght *om.* L. [6] a Ha. as a L. [7] in þe same Casteł *om.* L.
[8] on L. [9] and þe Erle of Gloucestre *om.* L. [10] on L.
[11] And when L. [12—12] *om.* L. [13] aftir *om.* L.
[14] and Erle of Kent *om.* L. [15] And þes thre were quartered L

At Oxenford were take with hem of þe toune . { Sir Thomas Blount, Sir Rauf Lumnay, Sir Benet Sely, Thomas[1] Wyntersshill squyer } knyghtes { quarteret and hedit.

At Pritwell in a mylne was take by th[e] Comyns . . . . . { Sir Iohn Holand, Duyk of Excestre } And quarteret,[2] and hedit at Plasshe in Essex.

At Bristow was take by hem of þe toune . . { The Erle of Gloucestre and Lord Spencer. } quarteret and hedit.[3]

[4]And aftirward in that[5] same yere, was Sir Bernard[6] Brocas, knyght, [7]and Sir Iohn Shelley, knyghte, And Sir Iohn Mawdeleyne and Ferby, parsones of Kyng Richard Chapell,[7] take, and put in þe Toure of Londone; and there they were iuget to the deth[8], [7]theire hedes to be smytton of, and sette on London Brigge: and so they were. ¶ That same yere, Queene Isabell, that was the wiff of Kyng Richard the Secunde, was dischargit of hir dowery, and sent home in-to Fraunce ageyne with many rich gyftes.[7]

¶ Of the werre of Wales betwene the Lord Gray of Rithen and Oweyn of Glyndore of Wales, and of the bataile of Shrewisbury.

[Big writing, underlined with red.]

IN the secunde yere of the regne of Kyng Henry the iiij[te], was Sire Roger of Claryntoun, knyght, and the Pryoure of Launde, and viij Freres Mynoures,—[7]wherof somme were maisters of dyvinite[7]—and oþer moo, were, for tresone, drawe and hanget at Tiburne.[9] ¶ That same yere ther began a gret discencion and a debate in Wales betwene þe Lord Gray of þe Rithyn and Oweyne of Glyndore, Squyer of Wales, for bying of an hare in the market. This Oweyne Arerit a gret nombre of Wa[l]sshe-men, and distroyet þe lordeshipes of the Lord Gray, and of þe Kynges also, and did much harme through-out Wales, and robbet and slowe the Kynges pepill, both Englissh and Walsh. and the Lord Gray distroyet, on his party, al þat held with þe said Oweyne; And this werre endurit xij yere. ¶ And at last this Oweyne toke the Lord Grey, Prisoner, and were raunsont for V^c[10] prisoners of Walsh-men of the March[11];

[1] And Thomas L. [2] And quarteret *om.* L.
[3] quarteret and hedit *om.* L. [4] *leaf* 153, *back.* [5] þe L.
[6] Thomas L. [7–7] *om.* L. [8] Iuged & put to deth L.
[9] at Tiburne *om.* L. [10] vj C L. [11] of the March *om.* L.

and þe Lord Gray at last to wedde his doughter, and kept hym there with his wiff; and sone after he dyet. ¶ Then went the Kyng in-to Wales with a gret power, to distry this Oweyne and þe rebelles of Wales; but þe Walssh mén fled vp on hye mounteynes, where-as þe Kyng couth in no wise come to hem; and so þe Kyng sped not þere; wherfore he retournet home ageyne. [1]And þat same yere was a gret drourth and a scariste of whete, so that a quarter was wurth xvj[s].

¶ That same yere Sir William Sawtre, preest, was brent in Smythfeld, for eresy; and that yere Sir Roger Waldeyne and Sir Richard Clidrowe qvytte[2] by a quest of men of Loudoñ. and that same [yere] was a bataile on Halydoun Hylle betwene Englissh-men and Scottes, where-as was taken þe Erle Douglas, and his one ey smytte out, and þe Erle of Moriss, and many othir lordes, knyghtes and squyers; and so, as God wold, thenglissh men had þe feld and þe victory.[1]

¶ In the iij[de] yere of þe regne of Kyng Henry the iiij[te],[3] Apperit a sterre in þe firmament [1]in the west, in þe monyth of Feuer yere,[1] which wes clepit the 'blasyng sterre,' [1]and of clerkes it was clepit 'stella Comata.'[1] Anon after, fell a debate betwene þe Kyng and Sir Henry Percy, that was callet amonge þe Scottes 'Henry Hatespurre.' This Syre Henry come vnto þe Kyng, and asket of hym certeyn wages that he was behynde, for þe kepyng and wardeynshipe of þe Marches, and þe kyng hym gave but a light Answare. And Sir Henry Percy said 'he quyt hym not to hym as he shold do, for,' he said, 'ne had he ben, he had neuer be Kyng of Englond.' The Kyng then, with that word was sore mevyt, and with his fist stroke Sir[4] Henry Percy on þe cheke. And þen Sir Henry, sore aggrevid, said the[s]e wordes vnto the Kyng: "In faith, this shal be the derrest-boght buffet that euer was in Englond"; and with þat word [1]turnet the bakke, and[1] toke his hors, and rode his way with his meyny [1]that come with hym.[1] When þe Kyng had smytten Sir Henry thus, as before is said, yet he was sory þerof, and hym repentet, and sent for Sire Henry ageyne; but he wold come to þe Kyng in no wise, but rode forth, and rayset a gre[te] pepill of diuers shires, and specialy of Chestre-shire; and on Saynt Mary Mawdeleyne euen next folowyng, the yere of owre[5] Lord I.M[l]. CCCC. iij.,[6] was a gret bataile besydes Shrewesbery, betwene Kyng

[1]—[1] *om.* L. [2] qvytte = were acqnitted. [3] the iiij[te] *om.* L.
[4] Sir *om.* L. [5] *om.* Ha. owre L. [6] & iij L.

Henry þe iiij^te[1] and þe said Sir Henry Percy, by false counsaile and wikket steryng of Sir Thomas Percy, Erle of Wircestre, and vncle vnto the said Henry Percy. in which batail was slayne, first, Sir Henry Percy hym self,[2] and þe moost party of his pepiH; and Sir Thomas Percy, Erle of Wircestre[3] was taken), [4]and was kept ij dayes, and after was drawe[4] and[5] hanget, [4]and his hed smytton of, and sette on London Brigge. And in that same batayle,[4] on[6] þe Kynges party, was slayne The Erle of Stafford, and Sir Waltere Blount in þe Kynges cote Armure [4]vnder þe Kynges baner,[4] & many othir wurthy knyghtes and Squyers and good yemen.[8] And in that same batail þe Prynce was smytte thrugh þe hed with an Arowe; and yet God fortunet that he lyvit. [4]And Sir Iohn of Stanley, knyght, was smytte in the throte with an Arowe; and when þe batail was done, the Kyng sent to hym, and to wete of hym what he shuld do with Chestirshire, for-as-much [as] they were ageynes hym. And he Ansuard þe messager, so as he myght speke rattelyng in þe throte, and said, "Brenne and sle! Brenne and sle!" And þe Kyng asket what he said; and he þat was sent to hym said to þe Kyng that he shuld take hem to grace; and so the Kyng þen hem toke to grace; and al þat wold ask grace þat were taken, had grace and forgyvenes; but aftir þe batail the Kynges meyny come into Chestirshire, and dispoylet þe cuntre in euery part, and bare away the goodes that couth be caryet.[4]

¶ This batail was þe heviest, and vnkyndest and sorest batail þat euer was before that tyme in Englond; for ther was þe sonne ageynes þe fadir, and the brothir ageynes brothir,[9] and kynne ageynes kynne; [4]and þer was beriet in on pitte xj^c men; in which place is nowe a ChapeH of oure Lady, & prestes syngyng for the sawles. And thys batail was the yere of oure Lord aboue-sayd, wherof a versifier makith mencion, And sayth on thys wyse:

Anno Milleno quadracenteno-*que* trino,
Bellum Salopie fuerat in Mag[ne] Mari[e] nocte.

How Dame Iahne, Duchess of Britayne, come into Englond, and weddit vnto Kyng Henry the iiij^te. And of the comyng of þe Emperoure in-to Englond.[4] [*Big writing, underlined with red.*]

[1] MS. þerte. [2] and hym self Ha. hym self *om.* L.
[3] Erle of Wircestre *om.* L. [4–4] *om.* L. [5] And aftirward L.
[6] And on L. [7] *leaf* 154. [8] and good yemen *om.* L.
[9] the broþer L.

IN the iiij^te^ yere of þe regne of Kyng Henry the iiij^te^ [the] Emperoure of Constaigynople come in-to Englond, to se þe gouernaunce and þe conveyaunce of þe land, and þe comoditees, on þe Kynges cost; and when he had seyne al þat he wolde, he went ageyne. And þat same yere, Dame Iahne, Duches of Britayne, come into Englond, and landet at Falmouthe in Cornewaile, and was weddit vn-to Kyng Henry þe iiij^te^ at Wynchester, in the Abbay of Saynt Swithyn, and sone aftirward was crownet at Westemynster. ¶ And þat same yere, Dame Blaunche, the eldest daughter of Kyng Henry þe iiij^te^,[1] was sent *with* Sire Iohn Beaufort, Erle of Somerȝed, hir vncle, and with Maistre Richard Clifford, that tyme Bysshope of Londone, and oþer notable persones, vnto Coleyne; and þer was she weddit vnto þe sone of þe Duke of Barry; and after þe ffest of þe mariage was done, þe saide Erle and Bisshope come into Englonde ageyne.

Of the bataile of Mark. [*Big letters, red underlines.*]

¶ In þe v^te^ yere of þe regne of Kyng Henry þe iiij^te^, þe Lord Thomas, þe sonne of Kyng Henry, and þe Erle of Kent, with many oþer wurthy men, went to þe see; and they landit at Scluys, and made þere a gret assaut, and brent [2]in þe Ile of Cageant, and token[2] iij karrikkes of Geene, lade[3] *with* diuerse[4] Marchaundise, and hem brouȝt into þe Cambre[5] before Winchilsey; [2]and þere þe goodes were cantet, and one of þe karrikkes was sodanly brent; and so þe said lordes went no ferther at þat tyme.[2]

¶ And that yere, in þe xxiiij^ti^. day of Iunij, the Erle of Saynt Paule laide seege to þe CasteH of Mark, iiij myle out of Caleys, *with* iiij M^l^ men, and diket hem stronge with-in þe toune of Mark,[6] Iohn[7] Beaufort, Erle of Somerȝed, that tyme beyng Capteyn of Caleis, [2]and Sir Richard of Asshton, knyghte, his leotenaunt; which Richard,[2] *with* the garison of Caleis, allonely[8] went to Mark, and faught with þe Frensshmen long, and entirt in on hem at þe Northgappe, [2]and at þe west gappe,[2] and slow and toke al that wolde abide. And þe Erle of Saynt Paule hym-self fled his way, [9]be þe marreys; and or þe bateH wes done, Sir Iohn Beaufort, Erle of Somerȝed and Capteyne of Caleys, come out of Englond, and landit at Caleys,

[1] þe eldest doughtir of king henry dame Blanch L.
[2–2] *om.* L. [3] with lade Ha. [4] diuerse *om.* L.
[5] into þe Cambre *om.* L. [6] of Mark *om.* L. [7] But Iohn L.
[8] of Caleis allonely *om.* L. [9] *om.* L to line 2, next page.

and went to Mark, and come to þe ende of þe discumfiture of þe Frenssh-meñ[9]: And þer was taken the Lord Hanget and[1] many wurthy prisoners of[2] knyghtes, squyers, [3]and meñ of Armes. and þis bataile was done þe yere of oure Lorde aboue [said, M[t]] CCCC v, and on saynt Crispyne and Crispianes day, as a versifier makes þerof mencion, and saith[3]: [*No verses follow in the MS.*]

IV.

[*From the first year of Henry V*, 1413, *to the third year*, 1415.]

[4]And in þat same yere, on Twelft Night, certeyne lollardes were arested at the signe of þe Ax, without Cripilgate, at London, which had purposet, thrugh þeire false treson, to haue made a mummyng at Eltham, where þe Kyng was; and vnder þe coloure of the mummyng, they wold haue distryet þe Kyng, and þe lordes spirituaH and temporaH, and all þe clergy of þe Reame. And þey had cast to haue taken þe feld be-side Saint Giles; but, as God wold, þe Kyng þerof had warnyng, and come to London, and with hym þe Bisshope[5] of Caunterbery, and toke þe feld beside Saint Iones and Clerkyn-weHe, and made to kepe al þe hye wayes to London; and so were thei taken ay as they come thidirward. And in London was tak Sire Roger Acton, knyghte, and was drawe & hanget be-side Saint Giles, where þe Kyng lete do make iiij paires of gallous, þat were callet 'þe lollers galowes.' And þer wes take, Syre Iohn Beuerlay, a prest, and Iohn Broune, a squyere, and many oþer moo, þe nombre of xxxviij persons and moo, and were draw, hanget and brent. ¶ And Sir Iohn OldcasteH, þe Lord Cobham, was arest at Wyndesore for heresy, and was sent to þe Toure of London; and sone after, he was examynt at þe[6] ffrere prechours, before al the[7] clergy of þe wurthiest of religion, and bisshoppes, and doctours of dyvinite; and þer were temporal lordes to here hys opynions. and after, he was sent vnto þe Toure ageyn; but sone after he brake out of þe Toure, and went in-to Walis. ¶ And þat same yere Iohn Sere, a squyer, slowe Tibey,[8] a prest in [9]London, beside Aldrichgate,[10] and þen toke the chirch of Saint

[1] the Lord Hanget and *om.* L. [2] prisoners of *om.* L.
[3–3] *om.* L. [4] *leaf* 155, *back.* [5] erchbisshop L.
[6] þe *om.* L. [7] al Ha. al the L. [8] Tibey *om.* L. [9] *leaf* 156.
[10] beside Aldrichgate *om.* L.

Anne; wherfore þe Kyng made þe Cite to wach hym *þer*, day and nyght, duryng iij wok*es*; and þen was he muret vp in the chirch: þen he and iij of his mene forswore þe londe, and went in-to Fraunce, and there he dyet.

¶ And in þe seconde yere of his regne, he helde a gret counsaile at Westmyn[s]*ter*, with al þe lord*es* of his Reame, spirituaH and temp*er*aH: where it was tretit and spoken of his title þat he had to Normaundy, Gascoyne and Gyan, which was his enheritaunce of right*e*. and after, he held a gret p*ar*lement at Leicestre, where, be thavice of al his lord*es* of his Counsaile, and of þe comyns of his land, he sent in-to Fraunce his enbassato*urs*, to þe Kyng there and to his Counsaile, requirynge hem to yelde vp to him his said enheritaunce, or elles he lete hem wete he wold it gete with þe sword, by þe helpe of Ihesu Crist. ¶ Then þe Dolfyn of Fraunce, Charles, ansuard to þe Kynges enbassatours, and said: "youre Kyng of Englond is ouer[1] yong and tendre of age to be a good werrioure, and not like to make such a conquest on Fraunce."

¶ Then þe Kynges enbassatours, heryng this scornfuH ansuare, retournet in-to Englond ageyne, and told þe Kyng and his Counsaile the ansuare and þe entent of þe Dolfyn and of þe Counsaile of Fraunce. ¶ The Kyng then was *þer*with sore amevide; and anon in al hast made redy his ordinaunce necessary for þe werre, and lete make .iij. gret shippes—one of xv^{C} tonne þat was clepit þe 'Gracedieu,' and þe 'gost' and þe 'trynite,' smaller shippes. and he lete ordeyne and make gret gunnes, and al o*þer* ordynaunces, and made his retenewe, And comaundet his lordys, duk*es*, erles and[2] barons, knyght*es*, squyers,[3] and al o*þer* comyner*s*, masons, carpenters, and al[4] artificers, to make hem redy to go with hym into Fraunce, to help hym wynne his heritage and his right*e*, and to mete with hym on Lam*m*as Day at Southampton, where he ordeynt his navey to be *per*, redy to abide his comyng: [5]whidir come many shippes out of Holynd.[5] And when þe kyng was redy, he come to Southampton on Lam*m*as day,[6] where-as mette hym al his pepill; and *per* was he redy[7] to take his viage [5]in-to Normandy.

At which day[5] it was puplisshit, and openly knowen, þat iij lord*es*, þat is to say, Richard, Erle of Cambrigge, bro*þer* to Edward,

[1] on Ha. ouer L. [2] and *om.* L.
[3] & squyers L. [4] al o*þ*ir L. [5—5] *om.* L.
[6] on Lam*m*as day *om.* L. [7] And as he was redy L.

Duyk of York, and þe Lord Scrope, Tresourer of Englond, and Sir Thomas Gray, knyght, had receyuet a gret somme of money, þat is to say, a M[l] pounde of gold,[1] and had sold þe Kyng vnto þe Frensshmen and his brether.[2] Wherfore they were onon taken and Iugit, their hedis to be smytton of; and so they were, [3]*without* þe Southgates at Southampton.[3] And when that was done, þe Kyng shippit with his host, and so saylet in-to Normaundy[4] *with* xv[c] shippes, gret and smaH, And arryvet at Kittance one oure Lady even, þe Assumpcion. And from thens he went streight to Harflewe, and besegit þe toune be londe and be watir.

How kyng Henry the Vte wanne Harflewe; and of the batail of Agincourt, and how the Emp*er*oure come into Englond.

WHen Harflewe was besegit be londe and be wat*er*, þer were in þe toune viij[c] men of werre, with-out lord*es* and state*s*. And thes were þe names of þe lord*es*: Sir Iakes de Harecourt, capteyn, þe Lord Gawcourt, the Lord of Hakvyse, the Lord of Florry, the Lord of Bleynvile, the Lord of Tiptot, the Lord of Combrevyle, the Lord of Beushvyle, and opir moo which shal be reherset herafter

¶ The Kyng þen sent to Sir Iakes de Harecourt, Capteyn of Harflewe, and hym comaundit to delyu*er* þe toune. And Sire Iakes ansuard and said, 'he toke hym none to kepe; nor none he shuld haue þere.' And when this ansuare was brought vnto þe Kyng, he made to lay 'goodgrace,' his gret gune, and al his op*er* gunnes, on ich a side, and comaundit his gunners to bete doune þe walles. and so thei shotte on ich side, and brak doune þe walles, and þe houses with-in the toune. ¶ When thay of þe toune þat saw, they sent to Kyng Henry, besechyng hym of viij dayes of respite, if eny man*er* rescouse myght come to hem in þe menewhile. and if so were there come none rescouse to hem wit*h*-in þe viij[te] dayes, they wold deliu*er* to hym the keyes and þe toune: and þ*er*-vppon þai wold deliu*er* hym xxiiij lord*es* in hostage, and of the wurthyest men of þe-toune.

¶ The Kyng then grauntet wele þerto; and so [5]they delyu*er*t xxiiij[ti] hostage*s*, whos names ben writton in this table [3]next folowyng, þat is to say:[3]—

[1] receyued the somme of M[l] li of gold L.
[2] and his brether *om.* L. [3–3] *om.* L.
[4] shipped & sailed toward Normandy L. [5] *leaf* 156, *back*.

The Lord Tuttevile,
The Lord of Clere,
The Lord of Chasteleyn),
De Beauvise,[1]
The Lord Blowset,
The Lord Burnet,
of Langchampe,[2]
The Lord Iohn)[3] of Malevile,
The Lord Charles[4] de Saint Claleyn),
The Lord Caradouse[5] Deskesewis,
The Lord Iakes[6] de Bankvyle,
Guilliam de Pount,
Thomas de Asses,
Iohn) Malherbe,
Iohn) Harrard,
Stephan Heuband,
Guilliam Buchier,
Laurence Robyn),
Iohñ Buchier
Aleyn Ligne,
Iohn) Graunt,
Robyn) Walkyle,
Iohn le Mare,
Ianyn) le Duyk,
Guilmot Guillias.
Colyn)[7] Langloys,

¶ And when thes xxiiij^te^ hostages were sent out of þe toune to þe Kyng, al thoo viij dayes after they of þe toune loket after rescouse; but þer come none. Wherfore Sir Iakes de Harecourt, [8]þat was Capteyn) of þe toune of Harflew,[8] with lordes and states of þe toune, brough[t] þe[9] Kyng þe keys at the viij^te^ dayes ende, and deliuert hym þe toune. ¶ Then þe Kyng made þe Erle of Dorset, Beaufort his vnkill, capteyn) of þe toune, and hym comaundit to put out al the Frensshe pepiH þat were within, man) woman) and child, and stuff þe toune with Englisshemen, and so he did. ¶ Then þe Kyng remevit from þens with his pepiH, and come doun) to Caleis-ward be land, to þe noumbre of viij M^l^.; but þe Frensshe-men hade breken) alle the brigges where he shuld haue passit ouer. Wherfore he sought his way in oþer places, and come dounward to a place clepit Agincourt; where-as al þe power of Fraunce wer gedirt, and redy to stoppe hym þe way, and to gyve hym bataile. ¶ And when þe Kyng this sawe, he praid God be his helpe; and with þe pepiH þa[t] he had, which was but scarse viij M^l^, made hym redy, and hym enbatailt. ¶ The Kyng þat tyme had a mys-trust in Edward, Duyk of York; and þat the Duyke wele perceyuet, and come to þe Kyng, and hym besoughte that he myght haue þe vaward þat day. and þe Kyng hym

[1] De Beauvise *om.* L. [2] of Langchampe *om.* L.
[3] Iohn) *om.* L. [4] Charles *om.* L.
[5] Caradouse *om.* L. [6] Iakes *om.* L. [7] And Colyn L.
[8–8] *om.* L. [9] to þe L.

graunted. Then þe Duyk went forth, and comaundit and charget euery man to ordeyne hym a stake of tre, sharpet at both endys, and pight an ende asslope in þe ground before hem, that þe Frenshemen shuld not ouerride hem; for thair purpose was to haue ouerriden hem; for they were nombret $\overset{xx}{vj}$ M[l] and moo. And þe Frenshmen, al þe nyghte before or þat the batail was, made muche reveH, and cryeng and shoutyng,[1] al þe nyghte, and plaiet Englisshemen at þe,[2] dyce, euery archer for a blank. ¶ And on þe morowe about pryme, þe Kyng comaundit euery man to make hym redy to batail, and said thes wordes: "Sirres! thenkes this day to quyte youe as men, and feightes for þe righte of Englond! and, in the name of Almyghty God, avaunt baner! and Saynt George, this day thyn helpe!" Then oure men knelit doune al attones, and made a cros on þe grounde, and kissit it, and put hem in þe mercy of God.

¶ The Frenshmen þen come with[3] gret pride ferisly, and oure archers shotte frely; and att last, both þe battailes ioynet and mette, and sore foughton togedirs. And þe Frenshe men presit so fast and so thikke on oure pepiH, þat they feH on þe stakes þat were pighte in the ground, horse and man, so thikke, ich ouer[4] othir, þat gret pepiH of hem were slayne with-out eny stroke. And þe Kyng þat day fuH manfully faughte [5]that same day, his oune handys[5]; so that 1 pece of his croune was broken, which afterward was founden and[6] broughte to hym. and so at last, Almyghty God gaue grace that he had þe victory of hys enmys, for al theire pride, and slowe xij M[l]; of the which, þe lordes and þe states of name, theire names folowen in þis table herafter:

The Bisshope of Sayntis,	The Erle of Brene,
The Duyke of Brabane,	The Erle of Sannes,
The Duyk of Barry,	The Erle of Grauntpre,
The Duyke of Launson,	The Erle of Fallyngberge,
The Erle of Douers,	The Lord Dalabret,
The Erle of Marle,	The Lord Heyle,
The Erle of Russe,	The Constable of Fraunce,
The Erle of Almartyne,	The Lord of Dampiere,
The Erle of Vandemound,	The Lord of Beaufremound,

[1] and shoutyng *om.* L. [2] þe *om.* L. [3] in L.
[4] on L. [5–5] *om.* L. [6] founden and *om.* L.

The Lord of Daussy,[1]
The Lord Damnery,[2]
The Lord Robert[3] Frere,
The Lord of Ranavile,
The Lord Waryn,
The Lord of Kemeram,
The Lord of Bakevyle,
The Lord Senal of Henawe,
The Lord of Mongangies,
[4]The Lord Coursy,
The Lord Oudard of Rant,
The Lord of Hemes,
The Lord Symond of Fragneh,
The Lord of Cramys,
The Lord Robert[5] Monerigny,
The Lord of Quemes,
The Lord Dauchy,
The Lord Gerard of Herbanes,
The Lord Iohn of Gres,
The Lord of Soile,
The Lord Dauphyan,
The Lord Mounteney,
The Lord Burcy and his sonne,
The Lord Reynold Dagincourt,
The Lord Mayhewe[6] of Humes,
The Lord Philipe of Fosseins,
The Lord Burian[7] of Rubenpre,
The Lord of Poys,
The Lord Launcelet of Clarre,
The Lord of Hemede,
The Lord of Coresques,
The Lord of Marquet,
The Lord Robert of Poys,
[8]The Lord of Noel,[8]
The Lord Robert of Waryn,
The Lord Haucon[9] of Croan,
The Lord of Eroun and his sonne,
The Lord Colard of Fessenis,
The Lord Cheyny,
The Lord of Beauford,
The Lord of Branen,
The Lord Raulond of Grotuse,
The Lord Philipe of Lens,
The Lord William Eriche,
The Lord of Saint Clos,
[8]The Lord Iohn of Poys,[8]
The Lord Iakes of Coriamble,
The Lord of Caunkesy,
[8]The Lord Colard Somanyng,[8]
The Lord Colard of Frenys, [*cont.* 2]
The Lord Gaumot of Burnvile,
The Lord Ronale of Flaundres,
The Lord Bidamue of Lannoys,
The Lord Iohn of Garonns,
The Lord Dacoy,
The Lord Colenchet,
The Lord Doo,
The Lord Iohn of Beaumont,
The Lord Iohn of Drouy,
[8]The Lord Charles,[8]
The Lord Philipe Lynberk[10] and his sonne,
The Lord Iohn of Calkevile,
The Lord of Bryoile,
The Lord William of Granevile,
The Lord Humers,
The Lord Iohn of Monteney,
The Lord of Harlyn and his broper,
The Lord Malare of Gurnay,
The Lord of Cankers,
[8]The Lord of Houncious of Poys,[8]
The Lord of Long,

[1] Anvy L. [2] Amery L. [3] lord of L. [4] *leaf* 157. [5] lord of L. [6] Mayhewe *om.* L. [7] Burian *om.* L. [8–8] *om.* L. [9] Haucon *om.* L. [10] Lynberk *om.* L.

The Lord of Tenys and his sonne,
The Castelyn of Lens,
The Baron of Mary,
The Stuard of Henawde,
The Baily of Dauneus,
Iohn Guryn,
Damset Dannay,
Iohn of Lesele,
Fort-escu,
Robert of[1] Savage,
Brian of Geromes,
Iohn of[1] Gardyn,
Dorn dez Pres,
Iohn of Sempy,
Pier Bonenfaunt,
[2]Burgu of Rony,[2]
Pers of Fossenis.

And many othir moo, as before is saide. And thes were þe names of þe Frenssh lordes þat were take prisoners in þat batail:— The Duyk of Orlyaunce, The Duyk of Burboyn, [2]The Erle of Eawe,[2] The Erle of Richemond, The Erle of Vandome, Sir Iohn of Bare, þe [2]Dukes broþer of Bare, Sir Bursigaunt,[2] stuard of Fraunce, [2]Sir Iohn de Roche,[2] And many oþer[3] moo, to þe nombre of viij^{c}.

And þes were þe names of þe lordes þat were slayn on oure party:—The good and noble Edward, Duyk of York, in þe vaward, The Erle of Suffolk, and oþer moo yemen to þe nombre of xxviij^{ti}. and þis bataile was done þe xxv^{ti} day of Octobre, on Saint Crispyn and Crispians day, the yere of oure Lord, M^{l} CCCC xv. [2]¶ Of which a versifier makes mencion, and saith "Crispini multos strauit gens anglica Francos." ¶ Then come tithynges to þe Kyng þat a newe bataile of Frenshmen were redy to feight with hym ageyn. Then þe Kyng onon chargit and comaundet euery man to sle his prisoner. And when the Frensh men þat sawe, they withdrowe hem, and went their way.[2]

¶ Then come þe Kyng to Caleys with his prisoners, and thankit God of þat gloriose victory,[4] and Saint George, which halpe hym to fighte, and was seyne abouen in þe eyre, þat day they faught. And when þe Kynge come to Caleys, he restet hym þere awhile, and after shippit, and come into Englond, and landet at Dovir, and passit so forth to Berehamdoune, where-as mette with hym þe v portes, with x M^{l} men clenly harnesshit and arrayet. And þen said þe Duyk of Orlyaunce: "¶ what! shal we now go ageyne to bataile?" And þe Kyng hym ansuard, and said: "Nay: thes ben childer of my cuntre come to welcome me home." And there[5] þe

[1] of *om.* L. [2–2] *om.* L. [3] oþer *om.* L.
[4] *leaf* 157, *back.* [5] their Ha. there L.

v portes presentit þe Kyng *with* a shippe, & gold therin. And so rode he forth to Caunterbery, where-as þe procession hym mette *with*-out þe toun, and hym broght to Cristischirche; and the Kyng offert at Saint Thomas shryne. And from thens he rode to Eltham. [1]And fro thens he toke his way to London;[1] and on Blakke-Heth mette *with* hym þe Meyre and the Aldermen, with al the craft*es* of þe Cite clothet al in rede, to þe nombre of xx^{ti} M^{t}; and þer they welcomet hym home, and þe Kyng hem thanket. And so rode he forth to London [1]on Saint Clement day,[1] where-as he was riolly receyuet *with* precession, And song "Aue Anglor*um* flos, mundi miles *Christi*!" And when he come to London Brigge, where-as were ij turrett*es* on þe draw-brige, and a gret Geaunt, and on þe turrett*es* stondyng a lyon and a Antlope, with many angeles syngyng "Benedictus qui venit in no*mine* Dom*i*ni!" And so rode he forth in-to London; and þe stret*es* were rially hanget with rich clothes; [1]And in CornhyH was made a rioH toure, full of patri-arches syngyng "Cantate Domino canticu*m* nouu*m*! laus laus eius, in eccle*s*ia *sanctorum*!" and kest doun quyk bridd*es*, which flawe thikke about þe Kyng.[1] And when he come into Chepe, þe Condit*es* ranne wyne. And on þe gret condit were xij Apposteles, syngyng "Benedic, Anima mea, Domino!" and xij kyng*es* knelyng, castyng doune oblays, and welcomet hym home. And þe cros in Chepe was riolly arrayet like a CasteH, with toures pight fuH of baners, and *per*-in Angeles syngyng 'NoweH, noweH!' gyvyng besand*es* of gold to þe Kyng. And so rode he forth to Paules, where-as mette hym xiiij[2] bisshopes; and al þe belles ronge agaynes hym; and þere he alight and went to þe hye awter. And there þei song "Te Deum laudamus." And from thens he rode forth to his palice at Westmynst*er*; And after, he rode about in the land on pilgremage, and ordeynt be holy Chirch þat Saint George day shuld be kept hye and holy: and so was it neu*er* before þat day.

¶ In þe iij^{de} yere of þe reyne of Kyng Henry þe v^{te}, Segewyn, þe Emper*o*ure of Almayn, come in-to Englond, and was right wurshiply receyuet at London [1]with þe Meyre, alderme[n] and craft*es*,[1] and broughte to þe Kyng*es* paleys at Westmynster, where-as was þe gret haH assignet to hym, which was ryolly hanget *with* clop*es* of gold and of Arras. And eu*er*y AngeH in þe haH-rof

[1–1] *om.* L. [2] xij L.

holdyng a torche in his honde; [1]and iiij angeles at þe hye deece, ich holdyng iiij torches.[1] And þe Kyng gave þe Emperoure þe Gartour. And sone aftir, þe Duyke of Holand come in-to Englond, and was loggit in Holborn, and abode a long tyme in þe lond, on þe Kynges cost; and after, they went home. And þe Kyng went with the Emperoure to Caleys, where-as was a Counseyle; at which Counseyle was both þe Kyng and þe Emperoure, and þer taried to haue ansuare of þe Frenssh party. And thider come the Duyk of Burgoyn; but he wold not come þer til Humfrey, Duyk of Gloucestre, lay plegge for hym. And after, the Emperoure went home in-to his cuntre, [1]and many Englissh men with hym made officers, for he trustid hem better þen his oune nacion.[1] ¶ And when þe Kyng had his ansuare of þe Frensshe party, þat liket hym not, he come in-to Englond ageyn, and ordeynt a gret army.

V.

[*From the Capture of Rouen*, 19 *Jan.* 1419, *to the Defeat of the Ghent men at Calais, and the Death of Watkin* RUSKIN, A.D. 1436.]

[2]And then þe Kyng entret in-to þe toune of Roane, and hym restit in þe CasteH till þe toune was sette in ruyle and in gouernaunce; and after þat, was Caudebek, and oþer garisons þernegh, yolden to þe Kyng [1]vnder the same appoyntement.[1]

¶ **Of the trety of pees þat was betwene Kyng Henry of Englond and Kyng Charles of Fraunce; and of þe mariage of Kyng Henry þe Vte and Dame Katheryn, þe Kynges doughter of Fraunce; and so þe pees was made[3] and fynysshit.** [*Big writing, with red underlines.*]

WHen Kyng Henry of Englond had goten Roane, as before is said, the Dolfyns enbassatores, as it was accordit before—with fuH power to do al thynges, as he were þere hymself present,—comen to þe Kyng to þe said Cite of Roane; and after many tretise had, thus it was appoyntet: þat a certeyn day sette, þe Dolfyn shuld come to þe toune of[4] Dreux, and Kyng Henry to Aueraunchis, and

[1–1] *om.* L. [2] *leaf* 158, *back.* [3] made Ha. was made L. [4] toun Ha. toun of L.

þere chese a mene place betwene both assent, where they myghte peasbely tret of þe pees. Which appoyntement truly to be kept, þe Kyng and the said Ambassatoures sette-to þaire seales. at which day þe Kyng come; but þe Dolfyn̄ com̄ not: wherfore þe pees was broke as for that tyme.

¶ In this mene while, Iohn̄, Duyk of Burgoyn̄, which had þe ruyle of þe Kyng of Fraunce because of his sekenes, be letteres and ambassatouris sought Kyng Henry grace; and þe Kyng sent[3] Ambassatoures ageyn̄ to Charles, Kyng[1] of Fraunce, and to þe said Duyk, to Province, of which ambassatours þe Erle of Warrewik was chef;[2] and in þe way as he shuld go, lay a gret busshement of Frenshe men, to take hym, and let hym þe way and his purpose; but he slogh and toke the moost party of hem̄, and come to Province, and purposet his ambassiat. And so was it þere appoyntet and accordit, that Henry of Englond and Charles of Fraunce, with þe Quene his wif, and þe Duyk of Burgoyn̄, shuld come to a mene place, & trete of þe pees. And to do þis message, þe Erle of Saint Paule, and þe sonne and heire of þe Duyk of Burgoyn̄, come to þe Kyng as Ambassatours. ¶ Then Kyng Henry of Englond, of þe mater be relacion of Ambassatoures of both partyes, appoyntet with his enmys that, at a certeyn̄ day, he shulde come to Maunt, and Charles, Kyng of Fraunce, and Iohn̄, Duyk of Burgoyn̄, shuld come to Pounteys; and þe mene place of this trety should be Melan̄ sus Sayn̄; to þe which, noþer party shuld come with moo þen M^{l} v^{c} men̄; and in þe mene tyme truyce shulde be on both parties: which mene place was aftirward arayet betwene ij villages, and lymytit and market betwene ij gret diches, where-in no man shuld come, but onely such as shuld trete. And þer þe Kynge tentes were riolly pighte and arrerit, and þe Kynges tentes of Fraunce. And Kyng Henry lete arere ij tentes betwene .ij. diches, where-in both þe Kynges myght trete apart with theire secret Counsaile, [3]and þe astate of boþe Kynges observet and kept.[3] and a stake was pighte in þe myddes of a faire playn̄, to þe which, and no ferther, eythir Kyng shuld come to oþer. And þe day appoyntet,[4] Kyng Henry come to Maunt, And Kyng Charles, because of his acustumet sekenes, came not; but þe Quene his wif, and þe Duke of Burgoyn̄, with oþer notable prynces of theire

[1] Ambassatours to the king L.
[2] the king made chef the erle of Warrewik L.
[3]—[3] *om.* L.
[4] assigned L.

alliaunce, and with[1] M^{l} v^{C} men, comen to Pounteys, and aftir, to þe mene place. And Kyng Henry first kisset þe Quene, and þen Dame Kateryn, hir doughter, [2]for at þat tyme þe Kyng sawe hir first.[2] ¶ Then Kyng Henry, þe Quene and hir doughter, and þe Duyk of Burgoyn, with oþer, went into a tent to trete of pees, where they were almost iij dayes; but it toke non ende [3]at that tyme.

In the menewhile, the Dolfyn, with letters and messagers, sterid the Duyk of Burgoyn that he, nor non of his, shuld assent to þe pees. And at þe v^{te} nonas of August, in þe which þe said Kynges shuld haue semblet, þe Kyng of Fraunce, þe Quene, þe Duyk of Burgoyn, nor non of hem, come. Wherfor it was openly knawe that þe Frensh party was cause[4] þat the pees was not endit at that tyme.

Then Kyng Henry went vnto Pounteys, and gat it. And sent Thomas his broþer, Duyk of Clarence, with a notable power, to Parise, and gate it. And retournet ageyn to þe Kyng. And þen þe Kyng went to Bokenf-villers and[5] Gysours, and gate hem.[6] And whiles this was in doyng, þe Duyk of Burgeyn, þat first sought þe Kynges grace, went to þe Dolfyn to Motreux, vnder sav-condit of comyng and goyng, and þere, by þe said Dolfyn, was traytosely and vnmanly slayne, As he knelit before hym, and after, put in-to a pitte, botit and spurret. ¶ And when Philip, his sonne and his heire, þerof had knawlege, he sought Kyng Henry grace, and become his man. ¶ The same tyme, certeyn ambassatours of Kyng Charles and of þe Duyk of Burgoyn, & of Citizyns of Parise, come to Kyng Henry vnto Maunt, to trete of pees; but because the Kyng was so besily occupiet in his werres, and also he supposet þat the Frenshmen were not fully enclynet to þe pees as than, þis trety toke non ende at þat tyme,[7] but aftirward at Roan it was fully fynesshit.

¶ Aftirward, whiles Kyng Henry held his Cristenmas in[8] Roan, the Ambassatours of Kyng Charles and of þe Dukes of Burgoyn come þidir to hym; to whom Kyng Henry[9] sent ageyn Richard, Erle of Warrewik, with oþer wise men, and a notable power of men of armes,[10] wiþ fuH power to concluyde the pees; and aftir many wise tretise had, pees was on both sides concludit, by þe affinite and wedlok of Kyng Henry and Dame Kateryn,

[1] *with* a L. (Ha has 'M^{l}. M^{l}.' for 1000.) [2–2] *om.* L. [3] *leaf* 159.
[4] cause *om.* L. [5] Bokenf-villers and *om.* L.
[6] it L. [7] at þat tyme *om.* L. [8] att L. [9] þe king L.
[10] of men of armes *om.* L.

Kyng Charles doughter. But be-cause certeyn thynges were necessary, for þe which þe presence of both þe Kynges most nedis be had, what for settyng-to of their seales, what for the mariage sewyng, And also Charles was so feblet for age, and oft tymes was vexit with his sekenes. ¶ Thus it was betwene hem appoyntet, þat Kyng Henry shuld come at a day lymyt, vnder truyce, with suche puysshaunce as hym liket, to Nogent vpon Sayn, to perfourm fynally al thyng that to þe pees was nedfull; and if he come not, al thyng shuld be had as for noughte. Aftir this appoyntement þus made, þe Erle retournet to þe Kyng, notifying vnto hym in writyng al þe affecte of his enbassiat. ¶ Then þe Kyng from thens went to Nogent; and þer mette with hym Philipe, Duyk of Burgoyn, with a gret company of men of Armes. Then, after many and diuerse tretise, þe xij^te kalendes of Iune, þe xl^ti yere of þe regne of Kyng Charles, in þe Cathedrall chirch þer, Kyng Henry, with Thomas, Duyk of Clarance, his broþer, and oþer princes and nobles, and Isabell, Quene of Fraunce, with þe Duyk of Burgoyn beyng þer for Kyng Charles laboryng þen in his forsaid affirmite; and in þeir oune names, and þe iij states of Fraunce, pees betwene þe ij remes of Englond and of Fraunce was made, and with certeyn condicions approvit. And Kyng Charles charget al his legemen, on payn of fforfeture of þaire legeaunce, to kepe þe said pees; And þerto þai mad their gret oth, and plight þeir trouthis in þe handes of Kyng Henry. And onon, Quene Isabell of Fraunce, & Philipe, Duyk of Burgoyn, in þe name of Kyng Charles, swore vppon þe Euangelistes to kepe this pees, þus concludit, for theym, for theire heires, & their[1] successoures, withouten fraude or male engyne, for euermore. And this same othe made Quene Isabell, and the Duyk of Burgoyn, and þe iij states of Fraunce, to Kyng Henry, his heires and his sucessoures. And at the ix^te kalendes of Iune, before Quene Isabell and Kyng Charles Counsaile in þe parlement, and þe iij states of Fraunce, and oþer Englisshe prynces and lordes, contracte of Matermony be present wordes, betweene Kyng Henry and Dame Kateryn, Kyng Charles doughter, there was solempnet and made. And as sone as this was enditet in writyng, as it was accordit, Kyng Henry, Kyng Charles, and þe ij Quenes, [2]Isabell and Kateryn, and þe Duyk of Burgeyn, went to Saynluys and gate it; and fro thens vnto Melon, and beseget þe toune. and þe seege enduret from þe first Idus of Iuyle vnto

[1] their Ha. & for þeyre L. [2] *leaf* 159, *back*.

Nouembre aftir. and at that seege, lay *with* Kyng Henry, Iames, Kyng of Scottes, as *presoner*. And þei within þe toune suffert gret duresse; but at last, for diffault of vitaile, thei yolde vp the toune. ¶ Then þe Kynges and þe Quenes, and Philipe, Duyk of Burgoyn, with theire hostes, went to Parise; and the Citizyns of þe Citee mette *with* hem in[1] fulle noble array, and riolly hem receyued. ¶ And at þe viij^te^ Idus of Ianuare, Kyng Henry and Dame Katerin comen in-to Englond, and laft at Parise Thomas Beaufort, Duyk of Excestre, his vncle, and Thomas, Duyk of Clarence, his broþer, Regent of Normaundy. And þe xiiij day of Feuer*yere*, [2]þat felle on þe Sonday,[2] Dame Kateryn was crownet at Westemynst*er* with gret solempnyte.

¶ And in this while Thomas, Duyk[3] of Clarence, with oþer certeyn lordes, made a iournay, and lefte at home þe yomanry, but toke *with* hym gentels and speris; at which iournay he was slayn with þe Scottes, and al þat come *with* hym; and þe Erle of Huntyngton was þer take, and oþer moo, [2]and þat was gret routh.[2] ¶ And when tithinges þerof come to Kyng Henry, he was sorowfulle and hevy, and made hym redy to go ouer see; and at Mydsomer next aftir the coronacion,[4] he went ouer[5] into Fraunce ageyn, [2]and left the Quene in Englond,[2] and gat certeyn garisons þat were rebelle, and besegit þe toune of Meux; at which seege tithynges come to þe Kyng þat þe Quene was deliuert of a sonne at Wyndesore þat was clepit Henry. ¶ And whene þe Quene[6] was purifiet, she went ouer into Fraunce to þe Kyng. And after þat Meux was yoldon, Kyng Henry went to Parise, makyng ordynaunce to be-seege þe toune of Cane. And þen a sore and a fervent malady hym toke, and fro day to day hym vexit til he deyed in þe Castelle of Bois de Vincent, the last day of August, when þat he had regnet ix yere, v monithis, iij. weekes and iij days; and aftirward he was brought in-to Englond Riolly, and enterid at Westemynster.

[*The Accession of Henry VI.*]

After the noble[7] victoriose prynce, Kyng Henry the vth, regnet his sonne, Henry the vj^te^, [2]that was bore at Wyndesore in the fest of Saint Nycolace the Confessoure,[2] and began to regne in þe age of ix monithes and xv dayes. And to Richard, Erle of

[1] *with* L. [2–2] *om.* L. [3] Duyk Ha. duyk of L.
[4] the coronacion *om.* L. [5] ouer *om.* L. [6] quene Ha. þe queene L.
[7] noble & L.

Warrewik, was commyttit þe kepyng of hym, for-as-much he was countet and hold þe best-nurturet man of Englond; and þe Bisshope[1] of Caunterbery and the Bisshope of Wynchester were his godfaders; and þe Duches of Holand was his godmoder; [2]and so forth-with-al he was sette to howsold. and þat same yere þe Duches of Holand was weddit to Humfrey, Duyk of Gloucestre.[2] and the first yere of his regne, dyet Charles, þe Kyng of Fraunce, [2]att Bois de Vyncent, and was entered at Parise,[2] and þe Quene his wif with[3] [2]hym. And þat same yere was one Sir William Tailoure, prest, brent in Smythfeld for heresy.

¶ And þe second yere of his regne, Sir Roger Mortymer, knyght, brak out of þe Toure of Londoñ, be counsaile of certeyñ persones of þe same Toure, and was tak ageyñ on þe Toure-wharf, and after brought to Westmynster: and þere was he iuget to þe deth, and was draw and hanget at Tiburñ, and quartert, and his hed set on Londoñ Brigge; and his hert and his bowelles were beryet in þe Grey Freris in London, on the north side of þe chirch.[2]

¶ Of the Bataile of VernuH in Perche be Iohñ, Duyk of Bedford, and Regent of Fraunce. [*Big letters, red underlines.*]

In the second yere of þe reyne of Kyng Henry the vj^te^ aboue-said, Iohñ, Duyk of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce, &[4] the Erle of Salisbery; Mountegu,[5] the Erle of ArundeH, the Lord Scales, the Lord Poynynges,[6] with þe nombre of xij M^l^ of Englisshe men, laid seege to Ivory in Normaundy. And whiles they lay att that seege, the Duyk of Launsoñ gadert a gret host of Frensshmeñ, and Scottes and lumbardes, þe nombre of lij M^l^, to rescowe Ivory, and to give bataile to þe said Duyke of Bedford. But when they herd that þe Duyk of Bedforde had with hym xij M^l^ men, thay lafte Ivory, and come to VerniH in Perche, which was þat tyme in þe handes of Englisshe-men, [2]And the Lord Scales therof beyng capteyñ, and was att þe said seege of Ivory.[2] ¶ Then þe Frensshe men chargit þe Englisshe men to delyuer þe toun of VerniH vp to hem, And [7]the said Duyke of Bedford and aH his power were ouerthrawe and slayn before Ivory. And they of the toun of VerniH wend it had ben trewe, And gave vp þe toune to þe Frenshmen. And þus[8] by this trayn, VerniH was lost, vnknowyng of

[1] Archbysshop L. [2–2] *om.* L. [3] also L.
[4] & *om.* L. [5] Mountegu *om.* L. [6] the Lord Poynyng *om.* L.
[7] *leaf* 160. [8] þus *om.* L.

the Duyke of Bedford and þe lord*es* whieh lay att þe said seege of Ivory[1]; neuerþeles at last it was yolden vp to hem. ¶ Then iij M^{l}. men toke theire leve of the Duyk of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce,[2] and departet from thens[3] hom to their garisons. And they were not passet thens xij lekes, but tithyng*es* come to þe Duyk how þe Frensshe had geten VernyH, and were therin. Wherfore he onon, *with* þe Erle of Salesbery, Mountegu, þe Erle of ArundeH, þe Lord Scalis, and þe Lord Poynyng*es*, with[4] ix M^{l} Englisshe men, retournet[5] to VernyH, and toke thair feld a myle from the toune, to gyve the Frensshe men batail*e*; but þe Frensshe men nor þe Scott*es*[6] wold not beleve þat the English men wold[7] feight with hem, for they had redy knowlege þat iij M^{l} men were gon hom to their garisons, and þey were[8] but ix M^{l} men, and they were lij M^{l}: notwithstondyng, a day of batail was sett. ¶ Then oure Englisshe men pichet theire stakes; and on þe day of batail when þai shuld feight, they knelit doune and kissit the ground; and þen the Duyke of Bedford bade 'auaunt baner!' And so they Ioynet to-gedris and faught*e*; and the Duyk of Bedford faught*e* þat day manfully with his oune hondis. And whilis they were besy feightyng, the Lumbard*es* of þe Frensshe host comen behynde the batail of þe Englisshe men, and slowe theire pag*es*, and went away *with* thaire horses. And on Yong, an Englisshe Capteyn, fledde away with v^{c} men in his felissh[ip]*e*, and told how Englisshe men had lost the feld; which was aftir taken, and was hanget, drawe and quartert, as he was wele wurthy; for God fortunet so, that þe Duyke of Bedford had the vi[c]tory and the felde[9] of his enmyse, and put þe Frensshe men to the flight, and chasit hem to þe toune dikes of VernyH, where-as many of hem were drownet. [10]And when þey retournet agayn to the batail*e*, thay fand þe Scottes feghtyng stiH with þe Erle of Salisbery whiles þei were folowyng þe chase of the Frensshe men. And so then onon þe Scott*es* were aH discomfit and slayne, þe Englissh men cryynge "A Clarens, A clarans!" for cause þe Scott*es* before that tyme [ferede] þe Duyk of Clarans. ¶ And the[s] were þe names of þe lord*es*, kny3t*es* and swyers, and men of name of þe Scottes þat were slayne in þat batail: that is to say,

[1] Bedford þat lay before Ivory L. [2] and Regent of Fraunce *om.* L.
[3] Ivory L. [4] Salesbury the lord of Arundel & þe lord Scalis *with* L.
[5] went L. [6] nor þe Scottes *om.* L. [7] durst L.
[8] were Ha. þey were L. [9] and the felde *om.* L.
[10] There is a gap in L from here to *batail* on p. 567, l. 15.

The Erle Douglas, þat was att þe bataile of Shrewisbery new made Duyke of Turreyn,

The Erle of Bugham,
Iames Douglas,
The Lord Sauyton,
The Lord Dondas,
Sir William of Seton,
Sir Thomas of Murray,
Sir Gye Ferard,
Sir Iohn Saintclere, [col. 2]
Sir Archbald Goumerston
Sir Gauter Berton,
Sir Gauter Lynnesey,
Alexander Hume,
Adam Dalgleis,
Alexandre Stuard,
Iames Lunieston, [col. 3]
Robert Serand,
Andrewe Murray,
Thomas Grenston,
Huchon Candy,
Dauid Murray.

¶ And many oþer Scottes moo of gentilmen, and þe men were there slayne that ben not namet here.

¶ And þes ben þe names of þe lordes and men of name of þe Frensshe men that were slayne in þat same bataiH before the toun of VernyH in Perche: that is for to say:

The Erle of DaumaH, [col. 1]
The Erle Bendtadom,
The Erle Romier, [col. 2]
The Erle DaubinaH,
The Lord Manny, [col. 3]
The Lord Gravile,
The Lord Flenogin,
[1]The Lord Mountenay,
The Lord Camelhart,
The Lorde Chargeron,
The Lord Mesilate,
The Lord Dauterme,
The Lord de la Frait,
The Lorde de Cathemages,
The Lord de le Forge,
The Lord de Bellay,
The Lord de le Champayn,
The Lord Gamages,
The Lord Dassail Raboule,
The Vicont of Nerborn,
Sir Lowis de Trye,
Sir Charles de Guesines,
Sir Iohn de Murrak,
Sir Gyles Deschavile,
Sir Iohn Bonnestables,
Sir Giles de Camegez, [col. 2]
Sir Boit de Turnbun,
Sir Tristrem Coiseron,
Sir Charles DesneuaH,
Sir Robert de Layre,
Sir Charles de Bruyne,
Sir Iohn Poyngaunt,
Sir Peris de Bellay,
Sir Peris BottereH
And his brother,
Sir Faunceis de Gryngoux,
Sir Emery de la GrissiH,
Sir Prunele Faunceis,
MarshaH de la Fait,
Peris de Guyssay,

[1] *leaf* 160, *back.*

Peris de Trusselle3, Heton de Guesme3,
Robynet de Cleremount, Geffrey Paillam,
Lowis de Osternard, Regnaulton Grenault,
Colvile le Vicont, [col. 3] Godffray de Soubres,
Druet Desson, Hewe de Beaussault,
Geffray de la GressiH, Le Camus de Frisendy,
Andrewe Poyngaunt, Guylliam Remon de la Maiser,
Iohn de Tonevile, Lowis de Bagard,
Moriard de la Mote, Peron de Luppe,
Iohn Frere, Ion de Puche.
Iohn de la Famruner,

Thes were þe names of lordes, knyghtes, squiers, and gentilmen of name þat were slayn in þe said bataile, of Frensshmen, and many oþer moo þat ar not here namet. And the nombre of al þe Frensshemen and Scottes that were slayn in þat batail, be[1] herawdes accompted, xij M^{l} v^{c} xxx, with[2] hem þat were drounet in þe dikes of VernyH. ¶ And thes were the names of hem þat were taken prisoners:[3] The Duyke of Launson, Iohn Boutevile, Sir Peris Henson, Vidain Lannoye.[4] ¶ And when þis bataile was don[5] and þe Englissh men had þe victory, they lovid and[6] thanket God gretely of his grace, And forthwith went to þe toun of VernyH, which was onon[7] deliuert vpe[8] to hem, [9]and had aH þe stuff that þe Frensshmen ther-in hade.[9] And þen went þe Duyke of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce peasably to Roon, thankyng God of þat victoriose battaile.

¶ In the iij^{de} yere of þe Regne of Kyng Henry þe vj^{te}, the Prince of Portyngale come in-to Englond; which was of þe Kyng and þe[10] lordes wurshiply receyuet. And aftirward, at Saynt George Fest att Wyndesore,[11] the said Prince was made[12] Knyght of þe Garture. ¶ In the iiij^{te} yere of his regne þer fiH a gret discord betwene Humfrey, Duyke of Gloucester, and Henry, Bisshope of Wynchester; wherfore the Comyns of London aros with þe said Duyke, which lay þat tyme at his oun place [9]at Baynardes CasteH, ageynes þe saide bisshope, which lay þat tyme in his place[9] besides saynt Mary-ouerheis in Suthwerk. but the Prince of Portyngale, beyng that tyme[13] in Englond, labourt so betwene hem, as God

[1] And in this taile were slayn be L. [2] *with* out L.
[3] And there was taken L. [4] Launson and many moo gret lordes L.
[5] don Ha. was don L. [6] lovid and *om.* L. [7] anon up L.
[8] vpe *om.* L. [9–9] *om.* L. [10] of þe L. [11] att Wyndesore *om.* L.
[12] made att Wyndesore L. [13] same tyme L.

wold', to kepe þe pees; wherthurghe þere was non harme done,—thanket be God'!—[1]And so were the comyns of London) pesite.[1] And þat same yere come Iohn), Duyk of Bedford' and Regent of Fraunce, in-to Englond, with þe Duches his wif, [1]þat was the suster of Philipe, Duyke of Burgoyn); and was fuH rially receuet of þe Maire and of þe Citizins of London).[1]

¶ In the v^te^ yere of his regne a *parlement* was holden) att Leycestre; att which *parlement* the Duyke of Bedford' made [2]yong Kyng Henry the Sixt, knyghte; and xxiiij knyghtes were made with hym). And when þe Kyng wes made knyght, he made *with* his oune hande*s* other xxiiij knyghte*s*. And att þat *parlement* were made many statutes and ordynaunces, and many newe officers. [1]And in þat same yere there was one William Wawe, an Outlawe, taken) out of þe sayntuary of the Abbey of Bewley, and broughte to London) to the Kynge*s*-benche, and after, to Westemynster, and was þere dampnet, and had into Southwerk, and sette in a cart, and was broughte so thrughe-out London), and so forth to Tyburn), and þe*r* was hanget; And after, his hed' smytten) of and sette on London) Brigge.[1]

¶ In the vj^te^ yere of his regne, Herry, Bisshope of Winchester, went oue*r* see to Caleys, and so forth to Rome, where-as þe Pope hym) made CardynaH, and gave to hym) þe cros, to be born) before hym) alway where he went; but it was afterward taken away and laide doun) by co*m*maundeme*n*t of þe Pope, for cause he shulde haue comyn) into Praage *with* a certeyn) nomber of men) of werre, whiche cuntre was out of beleue of Christen faith. but he failet his promyse, and come not there, but changet his purpos for þe wele and þe worshipe of al the Reame of Englond, and went into Normaundy *with* a notable meyny of Archers, the best þat couth be geton) in eury place of Englond [1]for ix^d^ on þe day, eue*r*y archer ij or iij hawes in a cace.[1] And so, by his comyng theder, was savid aH that lande; and elles þat tyme it shuld' haue ben lost. ¶ Then afterward, he come ageyn) into Englond, and was there wurshiply receyvide [1]with the Meire, Aldermen), and craftes of London), and brought so forthe to Westemynste*r*, and lay þe*r* in the Abbottes place within the Abbay.[1] ¶ In the vij^te^ yere of his regne þe*r* was a great derth of corne. for a bussheH of whete was at iij^s^ sterling; and aH o*þer* cornes were dere þat yere.

[1—1] *om.* L. [2] *leaf* 161.

How Kyng Henry the VI^te^ was crownet att Westemynster; And after, be counseil of his lordis of Engelond, was crownet Kyng of Fraunce att Paryse.[1] [*Underlined with red.*]

IN the viij^te^ yere of the regn) of the said[2] Kyng Henry the vj^te^, he was crownet at Westemynster in Nouembre, on Saynt Lethenard*es* day; and on þe nyght*e* before, he made xxiiij^ti^ Knyght*es* of the Bath in þe Toure of London), which rode before hym) on the morowe, al in blewe, toward his coronacion, to his paleis att Westemynster. Att which coronacion) was gret rialte seyn); for al þe condit*es* in Chepe ranne both of rede wyn) and white; and the condite Also in þe palice of Westemynster rann) w*ith* rede wyn); take therof, who-so wolde. And þat same yere, sone after, he went ou*er* see into Fraunce with a faire felesship*e* of duk*es*, erlis and barons, [3]in the monythe of May, and with the nombre of iiij M^l^ men,[3] and landet att Caleis, and went so forth be londe thrughe Pikardy to Roane, where-as he was right*e* Rially recevid and welcomet. ¶ In the ix^te^ yere of his regne, the Erle of Perch, the Erle of Morteyn), the Lorde Fitz-Hewe, and þe Lord of Audelay, shippit att Sandewiche with iiij M^l^ men, and landet att Caleis, and went so forth thrughe Picardy[4] to Roane. And onon) after, Henry, CardinaH, Bisshope of Wynchester, the Lord Clynton)[5] and Sir Thomas Donstable, shippit then) att Portesmouthe, and sailet so to Kittecaux, Harflewe, and to Roane. ¶ And in þe x yere of his regne he was crownet att Paris, Kyng of Fraunce, [3]on oure Lady day þe Conception, in Decembre; where-as was hold as riaH a fest as eu*er* was had of eny kyng.[3] And in þat same yere was Louers geton), & the [6]walles beton doun), and made an open village, for all man*er* of pepiH, both Englisshe and Frensshe.

And þat same yere the Kynge come to Caleys out of Fraunce, and shippit there, and londet att Dovir, and was wurshiply receyuet with the barons of the v portes. And[7] [3]so was he brought forth vnto London), and receyuet by þe Meire and Aldermen), the first day of Marche; and so broughte to Eltham: And ich crafte of Londen) had his liuerey braudert, that euery crafte myght be knowen) from) othir.[3] ¶ In the xj yere of his regne, the Duches of Bedford, þat was that tyme clepit Madame Regent, and

[1] kyng of Englond and after in Parise kyng of Fraunce L.
[2] the said *om.* L. [3—3] *om.* L. [4] thrughe Picardy *om.* L.
[5] the Lord Clynton) *om.* L. [6] *leaf* 161, *back.*
[7] And fro thens he com to London L.

suster to the Duyk of Burgoyn, dyet att Roan; whos deth turnett Englissh men aftirward to much trouble; for al þe whiles þat she was on lyue, hir brothir, Duyk of Burgoyn, was euer holdyng vppon the Englisshe party; but sone after þat she was ded, his hert was cast clene away from Englisshe men, and turnet to þe Frensshe party, and become enmy to Engelond, as ye shaH here aftirward. ¶ In the xij^te yere of his regne, the Duyk of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce weddit the doughter of the Erle of Saynt Paule, a faire lady.[1] And þat same yere fiH a gret discord betwene Sir William OldhaH, Knyghte, Leotenaunt of Caleys vnder þe said Duyke, and sawdiers of Caleys, for askyng of þaire wages; where þe said sawdioures were to-gedirs sworn, and kept hym out of the toune, and wold not suffere hym to come with-in, [2]notwithstondy[ng] his wiff beyng within the toun.[2] And so went he then to Roan, and compleynet hym to þe Duyk of Bedford, and capteyn of þe said toun,[3] Caleis, and made hym hevy lord toward[4] þe said sawdioures[5]; in so much þat he come doun out of Normaundy, with his lady þe Duches, the Erle of Saint Paules doughter, and þe Bisshope of Tirrewyn her vncle, and Sir William OldhaH his leotenaunt, to þe CasteH[6] of Balyngham, a myle from þe toune of Arde. And there he lay vnto[7] Richard Bukkeland, Tresourer of Caleis, and Capteyn of the said CasteH of Balyngham, had entretid þe saudiours of Caleis, and aggreyt with hem, and gyven hem obligacions of customs. And when he had made agrement with hem, the Duyke and Capteyn come in Peasably to Caleis, with his lady the Duches, her vncle, and Sir William OldhaH his leotenaunt, and was[8] riȝt wurchiply recevid of þe burgeis, marchaundes, and sawdioures, [2]and broughT to þe CasteH with al the Sawdioures of þe toune.[2]

¶ On þe next morawe after, he sent for þe porters, and for þe keys of al þe gatês of the toune, into þe CasteH. And after sent forth sergeauntes, and arestit dyuers Constables and vinteners, and putte some in prison in the CasteH, and some in the MarshaH prison; and made onon also to Arest aH the obligacions of Custome that couth be founden in eny Saudiours handes, and toke hem fro hem. ¶ And after, made Richard Veere, þat tyme beyng Meire, to

[1] a faire lady *om.* L. [2–2] *om.* L. [3] toune of L.
[4] to L. [5] sawdioures of Caleys L.
[6] Normandy with þe said Oldhall to þe CasteH L.
[7] vnto þe [? time that] Ha. vnto L.
[8] with þe said leotenaunt and was L.

gyue Iugement on[1] iiij Soudeoures to be hedyt vnder þe pillery; for the which was made gret mone amonges the pepiH. And after, he come to the toune haH hym self, and sate there with þe Maire, and þe Kynges swerdꝰ beyng *þer* present, and hade al the saudioures of þe toun) before hym). And al *þat* were billet, stoode before hym) vngirdꝰ; at whiche tyme xx iiij were banshit, and al their wages forfette. And they stode on þe lifte syde; and al þat abode within the toun) stode on þe right syde; but a gret part[2] of hem were putte out of wages, [3]and lost al that hem) was owyng.[3] And when al this was done, he went to Roan) ageyn) with his lady the Duches,[4] and had neu*er* after bodily hele till he dyet.

¶ **Of the trety of Arras, and howe the Duyke of Burgoyn) turnet to the Frensshe party; and howe he laide Seege to Caleis, [3]And howe he withdroughe hym in-to Flaundres or þat Ony rescous come, in the nyghte.[3]**

IN the xiij[the] yere of the regne of Kyng Henry the vj[te], was the grettest froste that was in many a day before; for it began) vppon) Saynt Kateryn) even), and lastit to þe iiij[te] day of Marche, the space of xvj wekes. And Temmes *þat* tyme was so sore frosen, that the vintage of Burdeux went ou*er* Shoters HiH: for þe shippis *with* wyne myght come no nerre then Sandewiche. [3]and þat froste *þat* tyme distroyet oisters, and muskelles, and fresshe-water fissh, thrugh þe moost party of Englond.[3] ¶ In þat same yere was þe trety of Arras betwene the Kyng of Englondꝰ, Henry the vj[te], And Philipe, Duyke of Burgoyn); and Charles de Valoice, Dolfyn) of Fraunce, that tyme beyng there in enbasshat for þe Kyng of Englondꝰ, Henry, CardynaH of Englondꝰ, Bisshope of Wynchester, Iohn) Kempe, Erchbisshope of York, Iohn), Erle of Huntyngton); Pole,[5] Erle of Suffolk, [3]Prevey Seale, Sir Wault*er* Hongerford, Sir Iohn) Poppahm,[3] with a faire feleshipe *with* hem), to þe nomber of viij[c] men). att which trety, þai woldꝰ the Kyng of Englondꝰ shuldꝰ have putte out þe floure de lice out of his Armes; and many o*þer* thynges was spoken) of; but to say shortly, þei couth not accordꝰ; wherfore they departit thens, and come home ageyn) into Englonde. but thay of þe toun) of Popperyng in Flaundres demenet hem) vngentilly, and entretid hym) vnmanerly as he[6] come rydyng

[1] to L. [2] *leaf* 162.
[3—3] *om.* L. *Heading in big letters, underlined with red.*
[4] with his lady the Duches *om.* L. [5] & Paule L. [6] þey L.

thrughe the toun) from the saide trety of Arras[1]; wherfore he[2] was sore amovid and grevid with hem, for they made his men)[3] to bere out of toune þeyr horses dong, mawegre their tetter; neuerþeles he[4] suffirt it, and rode on his[5] way; but he[2] quytte hem that foule and gret dispite, as ye shaH here afterwardes.

¶ Then, as sone as thenbassetoures were departet from) Arras, and home,[6] the Dolfyn) and the Duyke of Burgoyn) were accordet, and made att one [7]for deth of the Duyk of Burgoyns fader, þat was slayn) att Muttereux by þe same Dolfyn); and þerwith endit aH that trety.[7] And then onon) after, þe Duyk tok in-to his handes Abvyle and Amyas, and oþer tounes and Castelles; and after, by a kyng of heroudes, he sent the Kynges lyueray to Caleis, [and, by][8] the counsail of his lordes and hem) of Flaundres, he made[9] redy his ordynaunce and his pepiH,[10] to come and lay seege to Caleis. And þe Flemmynges were þen so proude and hawteyn) þat they sette by none Englisshe men, but hem) hade in gret despite, thrughe-out aH Flaundres. And grete noice þere was of comyng of þe seege; neuerþeles Marchaundes yette went al this while into Flaundres to and fro, but thai hade eviH chere in al plases. And they of Brigges made payntet clothes, howe[11] þe Flemmynges were att seege att Caleis, and howe þai wann) þe toune; and hanget out Englisshe men) by the helis out at lopes: and weH was hym) þat myght by of þes clothes! And þai made entirledes and plaies in Brigges, of þe CardynaH of Wynchester And of the Dolfyn), of thaire purposyng and Ansuaryng att the trety of Arras, And aH in dispite and hoker[12] of Englissh men); thei were so glad and fayn) þat they shuld lay seege to Caleis, and wynne the wulles of þe staple of Caleis,[13] and to departe it amonges hem); And bostet and said þat þe steevan Caleis was but a [14]male tyde, þat is to say, A mele tyde; And mony othir scornefuH wordes thai had that tyme Amonges hem). And that same yere, in þe heryng tyme, þere come iij C botes out of Normaundy to Caleis on fisshyng fare, as they were wont ich yere; and euery bote hade in xvj[15] men). and they come as ffisshers, and in ffisshers clothyng; but a gret part of hem were men) of werre, and had cast to haue geton) þe toune. but att last, as God wolde, the[y] were aspiet by their fyne smale shirtes and by

[1] of Arras *om.* L. [2] þey L. [3] made an englissh yemen L.
[4] they L. [5] þeir L. [6] and hom) *om.* L. [7–7] *om.* L.
[8] Sir so Ha. [9] and made L. [10] and his pepiH *om.* L. [11] who L.
[12] and hoker *om.* L. [13] of Caleis *om.* L. [14] *leaf* 162, *back.*
[15] xv L.

their poyntes; wherfore Richarde Woodvile, Squyer, leotenaunt of þe said toun of Caleis vnder the Duyke of Bedford,[1] charget euery souldioure to bere his staff in his hand, as wele in þe cherche and att sacryng tyme as in þe market, and not to leve stondyng att þe chirch durre, as they were wont to do; and so thaie bare thaire stavis in þeire handes in þe chirch, and ouer al. Then the Frensshe men vnderstood wele þat they were aspiet, and sawe wele þey[2] couth not brynge theire entent[3] nor purpos about; And wenth their way out of Caleis hauen in a tide, and went streight to þe toune of Deepe, and come in þere as ffisshers, and so gate þe toun. And in þat same yere dyet the Duyke of Bedford in Roan, [4]on Holy-Rode even in May, which had layn longe seeke;[4] for whos deth was made muche mone amonges Englisshe men that were þat tyme in Normaundy; for as long as he levit, he was doutet and dred amonges the Frenssh men.

¶ In the xiiij yere of the[5] regn of þe said Henry the vj^te^, Humfrey, Duyke of Gloucester, Protectour and Deffendour of Englond, was made Capteyn of Caleis; and he was Capteyn of Guysnes before that tyme; [4]And so he was both Capteyn of Caleis and of Guysnes.[4] And he made Sir Iohn Radcliffe his Leotenaunt of Caleis,[6] and sent hym thedir[7]; which was a wurshipfull knyȝt, and was welbelouet amonges þe sawdiours [4]there: for he kept and helde A gud and open housold to who þat wolde come, and welcome.[4] ¶ Then come tithynges ich day more and more of þe seege comyng to Caleis. Then Sir John Radecliff, þe Leotenaunt of þe toune, Robert Clidrowe þe Meyre, and Thomas Thirland, Leotenaunt of þe staple of Caleis,[6] with þe sawdioures, marchaundes, and burgeses and comyners, kest vp a faire brode dike on þe south side of the toune, and made iij stronge bullwerkes of erthe and cley, one att þe corner of þe Castell with-out þe toun, anoþer att Bulleyn gate, and anoþer att þe postern be þe Princes Inne; And att Mylke gate was a faire bulwerk made of breke, þat Richard Woodevile had do make or he was discharget of his leotenauntshippe. And þai fortifiet þe walles, toures, and dikes on ich a side of the toune, with-in and without, And dresset theire lopes and theire gunnes to shote both hye and lawe. [4]And the vj Castell in the Marche3 þere þat Englisshe men were in hem, fortifiet as strongely as they couthe, that is to say,

[1] vnder the Duyke of Bedford *om.* L. [2] þou Ha. þat þey L. [3] not brynge theire entent *om.* L. [4—4] *om.* L. [5] of Ha. of þe L. [6] of Caleis *om.* L. [7] to Caleis L.

the CasteH of Guysnes, the CasteH of Balyngham, the CasteH of Hammes, the CasteH of Sandgat, the CasteH of Marke, and the CasteH of Oye. And Sir Iohn Radcliff, Leotenaunt, warnet and charget al þe cuntre þat was of þe Englisshe pale, [þat þey] shuld 4 come and bring a[l] thaire goodes, and breke doun their houses; and so, many of hem did, and many of hem stale away, some into Picardy and some into Flaundres. And þere[1] was a cry made in þe market-place[2] of Caleis, þat al maner of men beyng in Caleis, or 8 lyvyng vnder biH vnsworn, þat they shuld come to þe toune-haH, and[3] there to be sworn the Kynges trewe leege men; And þai that wold not be sworn, to take þeire goodes and go theire way where þay wold. And so þere come many, and were there sworn; and many 12 went theire way into Flaundres, and wold not be sworn. ¶ And on Saynt George day, Sir Iohn Radcliff sent word prevely to þe Daywach of þe toune in þe nonetyme to rynge[4] out the larom beH, vnwetyng to the sawdioures of þe[5] toune. And so *þer* was a grete 16 Alarom, and saudioures were onon in thaire harneys, and comyners with hem, And wende þat enmys hade comen to haue fechet the bestys þat were pasteryng about the toun; but þere was non; for Sir Iohn Radclif did it for a sport, because it was Saint George 20 day; And for þat he wolde se howe saudioures wold bokkeH and dresse hem to þeire harneys.

¶ And sone afterward, Edmond, Erle of Morteyn, and the Lord Camys, Sir William of Asshton, knyghte,[6] And Sir Geffrey 24 Werburton, knyghte,[6] shuld haue shippit att Wynchilsey to haue gon into Fraunce with the nomber of iij M^l^ men of speres and Archers; but because there was so gret a noys of þe seege comynge to Caleis, þei[7] were contirmaundit be þe Kyng[6] and þe Duyke of 28 Gloucestre[6] to go thider, and strenghe þe toun tiH rescous myght be had. And so went þe Erle with his Armee to Caleis. ¶ Then Humfrey, Duyke of Gloucestre, Protectoure and Deffendoure of Englond, and Capteyn[6] of Caleis and of Guysnes,[6] send for al þe 32 lordes of the Reame, both spiritueH and tempereH, and for al his feede men, and desired of hem an eyde for þe rescowe of þe saide toune of Caleis. And þe lordes temperaH hym graunted to go with hym hem-self in propur person, and fynde a certeyn meyny with 36 hem vppon þeire oune cost; And bisshoppis, Abottes and priours also graunted to fynde a certeyn meyny to go with hym; And al

[1] And sone aftir there L. [2] place *om.* L. [3] and *om.* L.
[4] *leaf* 163. [5] of Ha. of þe L. [6–6] *om.* L. [7] that þei Ha. þei L.

his feede men) hym) graunted eke to go with hym); And he thonket aH. And then was it criet in al þe port tounes and haven) tounes in Englond, þat al maner shippis þat were able to saile be þe see[1] shuld' come into[2] Sandewich haven) be a certeyn) day; and so thei were þe nomber of ij^{c}[3] sailes and moo. ¶ Philipe, Duyke of Burgoyn), made hym) redy, and the Flemmynges, al this while, and toke dyuerse marchaundes prisoners, as they come homward' out of Flaundres to Caleis, [4]and specially they of Dunkirke.[4] And when þe Erle of Morteyn) was comyn) with his Armee to Caleis, as before is saide, he made a iournay of Bulleyn), xx^{ti} myle from) Caleis, and brent the subbarbes of þe toune, and come to Caleis ageyn) on þe next day after, vnfoghten) withe, and broughte with hem) þaire pray of bestes and theire pillage. And onon) after, he made anothir iournay in-to West Flaundres, to a place clepit þe Lawe. And whiles they ryfelt and spoilet that cuntre, and praiet in cateH, al þat cuntre gedert, and come doune to Gravenyng, to mete with hym there. And when) þe Erle and his meyny come dryvyng theire pray of bestes before hem), on þe sandes betwene þe toune of Gravenyng and þe see, thay issuet out of þe toune prudly, and faught with hym); but þai were sone discomfit, & slayn) of hem) iiij^{c} and moo: then thai fledde in-to þe toun), and þe Englyshe men) hem) foloet, and toke many prisoners. [4]And þer was an Englisshe man), a gentiH man), and a spere on) horsebake, folowet þe chase of hem) right to þe hard' gates of þe toun), so nere that his hors bare hym) into þe toun) of Gravenyng, wheder he wold' or no; which afterward was delyuert be raunson).[4] ¶ The Erle þen, with his pepiH, drove ouer þe havon) of Gravenyng thaire pray of bestes, att lowe water, in spite of al þe Flemmynges, and brought hem) with al thaire prisoners to Caleis, and lost neuer a man; thonket be God! and [4]þai brought so gret plente of Cowes with hem, þat a man) myght haue þe best melche cowe þat was, for xij^{d} sterlyng.[4] ¶ And when þe Kyng and þe lordes had' tithynges of þis iournay of Gravenyng, the Kyng sent to þe saide Erle of Morteyn) to Caleis, the Gartur. And onon) aftirward, the Lord Camys, Sire William Asshton), And Sir Geffrey Weckton), with þe garnyson) of Caleis and of Guysnes, made þe iij^{de} iournay, both of horsemen) and [5]footemen, and rode before the toune of Arde, and ryfelt aH the cuntre about þe said toun). And in the mene while, Sire Robert Savois, Capteyn)

[1] be þe see *om.* L. [2] and in Ha. into L. [3] ij^{c} L. [4—4] *om.* L.
[5] *leaf* 163, *back.*

of Fynes, had gedirt of Pykard*es* to þe nombre of iiij M^{t} speris on horsbake, And laide hem̃ pryvely in Camp*e* Grove besides the CasteH of Balyngham. And when þe Lord^{e} Camoys with his peple was comyng homward^{e} in the feld*es* be-syde the said grove, the[i] stert iij hares, and þerwith þay gave a gret showte; And so both horsemen and footemeñ, *with* h*u*ntyng of hem̃, were stragelt abrode ou*er* aH þe feldys, and were al out of array, and wist nothyng of þe Pikard*es* þ*at* lay in þe grove beside*s* hem̃, but eu*er* stiH showtet and huntet after þe hares, which were att last slayn̄ amonge*s* hem̃. ¶ And as þay were so stragelt and out of Array, the Pikard*es* sodeynly brake out of þe Grove, and rode thrughe oure meyny, in and out agayn̄, and smote doun̄ many fotemen̄. and þen̄, many of oure horsemen̄, seyng this, fledde to þe CasteH of Balyngham; but the Lord^{e} Camoys and þes ij knyght*es* kept þe feld^{e}; And as God wold^{e}, the fote-mene relevid ageyn̄ to þe standart, And, þe horse-men̄ also, And sett frely on̄ þe Pikard*es*, and hem̃ discomfyt, and slowe many of hem̃, and drof hem̃ to the gat*es* of Arde, [1] where-as one Lucas, a squyer, folowet hens *with*in theire barreers, and was slayn̄; for whome was made much mone.[1] And þus,—thonket be God!—þe Lord Camoys had þe victory of his enmys, [1] þe Pikard*es*, in a feld^{e} callet þe Golden̄ Dale, besidde þe CasteH of Balyngham,[1] And come to Caleys, with þeir pray.

¶ Onon̄ after, the Duke of Burgoyn̄, Phelip*e*, was redy, and come doune to Gravenyng with his ordyn*aunce*, and Flem*m*ynge*s*, þe nombre of an CL M^{t}, and xij M^{t} cart*es*; and [1] ich cart had his cokke to crawe amonge*s* the host.[1] ¶ Then þai made a brigge ou*er* þe water of Gravenyng, [1] into a place callet þe Hoke, þ*at* was partenyng to þe saide Duyke.[1] And so come þey ou*er*, and shewet hem̃ before þe CasteH of Oye, and sent to Nicolas Horton̄, squier, and Capteyn̄ of þe same CasteH, an heraude, chargyng hym̃ to delyuer^{e} vp þe CasteH. And he sent hym word*e* agayn̄, and said he toke hym non to kepe; nor non̄ he wold^{e} delyu*er*: Neu*er*þeles, afterward, by a fals trety, þai had hym̃ out of þe CasteH to come speke with þe Duyk. And in þe mene while þe CasteH was wonnen̄ by a grate of Iron̄, þ*at* was lafte open̄ in þe buttery, where-as a gune lay whiles þe saudiers were in þe haH aboven̄, tretyng of a poyntement with an heraud of þe said Duyke*s*; And sodeynly þe Flem*m*ynge*s* come in, and toke hem̃ in þe haH, and

[1]—[1] *om.* L.

hanget lvj on þe gallows vnder þe CasteH,[1] *with*out eny pite, And slowe al þe remen*aunt*, except Nicolas Horton), Capiteyn) of þe said CasteH, and one William Bullion), [2]Constable, And Willi*am* Bullion), his cosyn) [2]: thes iij[3] were *prisoners*, but [2]Nicolas Horton) þe Capteyn) was long afterward[4] raunsonet, and come home in-to Englond; And þe Constable dyet in prison) for sorowe; And his cosyn) William[2] Bullyon)[5] was so beknowe and welebelouet *with* þe Pikard*es*, þat thay gave hym) his raunson), and lete hym go where he wold, so þat he shuld go to Caleys, and espy when þe Duyk of Gloucest*er* shuld come ou*er* with his Navey from) Sandewich, And sende hem) worde. ¶ When this William Bullyon) come to Caleis, þe pepiH had gret m*er*vaile þat he was letton) go *with*out paying of eny rownson); wherfore Edmond, Erle of Morteyn), made to arest hym), and put hym) in prison), and bare hym) on hond þat he was a spy. And þer[6] he knowlegit þat he promyset hem) to give hem) warnyng of þe comyng of þe Duyk of Glouceister, because of his deliu*er*aunce, but he sware he thoughte neu*er* to haue warnet hem); neu*er*theles, for þat he was broughte vnder þe pillery in þe market of Caleis, and there his hed was gird of: for whome muche mone was made, for he was a gud Arche*r*.

¶ When þe Fle*m*mynge*s* had þus wonnen) þe CasteH of Oy be a trayne, as before is said, [2]which was on Saynt Petirs even) in Iuyne,[2] thai brake vp al þe lede of the halle and of þe toures, and brent vp eue*r*y stykke; And after, vndermynet þe walles and [7]þe toures, and sette shores vndernethe, And after, sette þe same shores on fyre, and brent hem), and so lete þe walles and toures[8] faH doune[9] into þe dike*s*. ¶ Then, þe second day of Iuyle, the Fle*m*mynge*s* laide seege to þe CasteH of Mark, þat was next þe CasteH of Oye; but þe Erle of Morteyn) had sent thider before, Christofer of Barton), squyer, with a certeyn) felesshipe with hym, to helpe[10] to strenghe þe CasteH. ¶ The Fle*m*mynge*s* laid þeire gonnes to þe walles, [2]& beete doun) þe vawmures and þe walles,[2] and gave þe Englisshe men *with*-in many stronge assawte*s*; and they manfully hem) diffendit, and beet hem) of, and fortifiet þe walles ageyn) with tymbre and donge, & *with* such thyng as they had within hem), And kept it be strenghe vj dais. And when þay sawe þai couth haue no rescowe, thay gave it ou*er*, and yolde hem)-

[1] vnder þe CasteH *om.* L. [2–2] *om.* L. [3] ij L.
[4] afterward was Ha. [5] þis Bullion L. [6] þei Ha. *þer* L.
[7] *leaf* 164. [8] toures & walles L. [9] doune *om.* L.
[10] to helpe *om.* L.

self prisoners. ¶ Then þe Flemmynges spoilet þe CasteH, and brake of al þe lede, and brent it, and vndermynet þe walles and toures[1], [2]and sette shores þer-vnder; and after brent hem, and lete þe walles and toures faH into þe dike, as þai hade done þe CasteH of Oye.[2] ¶ Then, þe ix^te^ day of Iuyle, In þe yere of oure Lord Ihesu Crist M^t^ iiij^c^ xxxvj, Philipe, Duyk of Burgoyn, with þe Flemmynges, come to Caleis, and laid seege þerto be land, and pight his tentis[3] before þe toune, on þe playne of Saint Peters, a myle nere out of þe toun. And þe Duyk hym-self lay a litiH from Newname brigge, And þai of Gaunt beside hym, And þey of Brugges, with þe comyntee of Flaundres, lay besides Saynt Peters Chirche. but the Duyke lay not þere but ij days, but þat he remeved from thens, and al þe Gaunteners with hym, to þe Est ende of þe toun, And þere he pichet his tentes; for he wold ly no lenger att þe west ende of þe toun, for cause a gune shotte thrugh his tent. And then þei of Gaunt onon made a strong bulwerk on an high hiH of þe downe, of pipis & tymber, betweene þaire loggynges and þe toun, and shott gunnes in-to þe toun; and many tymes þai shot al ouer þe toun; but al þeire gunshot did neuer harm, thanket be God [2]and þe Holy Virgyn Saint Barbara![2] ¶ In þe mene whiles, whil þe Duyke lay att seege at Caleis, with þe Flemmynges,[4] Sir Robert Savois, knyght,[5] with iiij Mt Picardes, come before þe CasteH of Balyngham. And one Richard Sellyng, beyng þerof leotenaunt vnder Richard Bokelond, Squier, and Capteyn of þe same CasteH; which Richard Sellyng gave ouer þat[6] CasteH shamefully, without eny stroke, vppon apoyntement to go to þe Castell of Guysnes in thaire doublettes; and so thai did; and lafte al theire goodes, and þe stuff of þe CasteH behynde hem, which was þe[7] best-stuffet place in al þoo marches.

And when Richard Sellyng come þus to Guysnes with his feleshippe, William Picton, Leotenaunt of Guysnes [2]vnder Humfrey, Duyke of Gloucester,[2] putte hym in prison in þe said CasteH of Guysnes. And when þe Picardes hadd þis CasteH, þe[i] spoilet it, and brake of þe lede, and brant al þe place, and vndermynet þe walles[8] and toures, and lete hem faH in þe dike, as the Flemmynges hade done with þe Castelles of Oye and Mark. ¶ Then þe Picardes come before þe CasteH of Guysnes, and laide seege þerto, and

[1] toures so þat al þe Castel fell to þe grounde L. [2–2] *om.* L.
[3] tentis L. *om.* Ha. [4] with þe Flemmynges *om.* L. [5] knyght *om.* L.
[6] þe same L. [7] þe be Ha. þe L. [8] places L.

broughte *with* hem a gret brasen gune of Dogeon),[1] with iij chambers, and ij othir grete gunnes of Iron callet bumbardes; and þaye laide þe brasen gune in A seller of þe toune of Guysnes, on þe dikeside of þe CasteH, and shotte att a ward next a toure callet þe Faanetoure, and brake it doune in-to þe dike. but William Picton, Leotenaunt of þe CasteH, with his felesshipe with-in, fuH manfully and discretely hym gidet, and it fortifiet ageyn with tymber and dong. ¶ And in this while, anoþer meyny of Picardes come before þe CasteH of Sandgate, and bade hem deliuer vp þe CasteH; for þai said aH oþer Castelles were gyven ouer. Wherfore Sir Thomas Knevet, [that] was sent thidir with A crewe, and made þerof leotenaunt be þe Kyng, [2]Wist not what for to do; And so,[2] [3]by[4] þe counsaile of one Sir Thomas Heneley, Preest, A traitour, he gave vp þe CasteH of Sandgate, shamefully and cowardly, with-oute eny stroke, and hym-self and all þat were with-in þe CasteH, prisoners, except þe fals preest, which was letton go where he wold; but[5] he went vp into Fraunce, and neuer man wist after where þat he become. ¶ And when þai had þe CasteH, þai brake doun þe lede, and sette fyre on al þe place, and vndermynet þe walles; but þe Dongeon was so strong, þay couth not vndermyne it, but brake it a litiH abouen; and so þey lefte it, and lete it stande.

¶ Philipe, Duyk of Burgoyn, lay stiH all this while, *with* his host of Flemmynges, before Caleis; and þei of þe toune hadd letten in the see, and drownet al þe cuntre about hem. And ich day þai of þe toune and þe Flemmynges skarmysshet to-gedirs. And when þai had leyn þer xiiij daies, þe Duyke lete ordeyn .xx. shippis out of Flaundres, wherof vj old shippes were lade with hardd ston, chalke, and brekes masont in hem with morter, to droune hem in þe haven of Caleis, þat no shippis shuld come þer-in. And when it was fuH see, about noone, þey bulgit hem, some in þe haven-mouthe, and some be-sides the haven, to no purpos; for þei durst not tary, nor þei had no gret leysere to droun hem, for fere of gun-shotte; And so þei went þeire way ageyn; and on þe next day after, at lawe water, wel was hym of þe toun þat myght bring an Ax to breke þe shippis; and so þai did, al to peces, and broughte hem in-to toune, and refresshid wele þe pouer pepil; and al þe brekstones were gyven to Saynt Mary Chirch; [2]and so were þai al cariet in-to toun.[2] And whilis þis was in doyng .I. thowsand

[1] of Dogeon) *om.* L. [2–2] *om.* L. [3] *leaf* 154, *back.* [4] but be L. [5] and L.

Flemmynges stoden) on þe downes and beheld it, and were fuH sory in þeire hertes, and were fuH gretely þerwith[1] abasshit; for þai hadd wendd þer shuld no shippis haue comen) in þe haven) afterwardd. ¶ Sone after þat, it fell þat they of Brugges that lay at Saint Petirs, come from) þeire tentes doun) to Bulleyngate ward, some with pavis, and some with crossebawes, a grete meyny stragelynge. And þei of þe toune ordeynt speres on horsebakke prevely in Bulleyngat bulwerk, so þat they were not seyn); and sent out certeyn) fotemen) to scarmysshe with hem), til þey sawe theyre tyme to breke out on hem). And when þe horsemen) sawe þaire tyme, þei sodenly prikkit to hem); and þen) þe Flemmynges fledde to þe tentes; but or þai couth come there, þai were ouerthrawen), and brought in-to þe toune, xxxvj[ti] of hem) prisoners; and þe host with-in þe tentes fledd out at þe est side,[2] and wendd al þe worlde had comyn) on hem): And þis was on a Thursday; wherfore þe Flemmynges it clepit the 'Quade Thursdagh.' ¶ When þis Iourney wes done vppon) hem) þat were of Brugges, [3]and of þe comynte of Flaundres,[3] the Gaunteners þat lay with þe Duyke at þe est ende of þe toune, loghe hem) to scorn); for þe which fiH[4] a gret debate amonges hem), and faught with-in hem)-self, so þat noþer party come to othir after þat tyme. ¶ And on þe Setirday sevennyght, & ij daies afterward, they of þe toune of Caleis, with certeyn) horsemen) & fotemen), Issuyt out sodenly on þe afternoone, and went streight to theire bullewerk on the hye hiH in þe dounes, and manfully it wanne and toke, and slowe al þat euer were in hit, and brake doune þe bullewerk, and went hamwardd with þeir prisoners; but þe Erle of Morteyn) mette hem) without þe toune, and made to sle al þe prisoners, for cause of one Watkyn) Ruskyn), a gentiH man) and a gud spere, was slayn) at þe wynnyng of þe same bullewerk. And when) þis bullewerk was þus wonne vppon) hem) of Gaunt, they of Brugges were glad, and logh hem) of Gaunt to scorn.[5]

[1] þerwith full gretly L. [2] ende L. [3–3] *om.* L. [4] fell L.
[5] Gaunt Ha (*last word of the incomplete MS.*). Gaunt to scorn L.

[I]

[*Lambeth MS.* 6, *col.* 2.]

[*The Siege of Calais abandoned. The Englishmen's Mocking Song against the Flemings.*]

[1]And þis Seturday at night, the Lord Welles wes sent ouer to Caleis by the Duyk of Gloucestre *with* a certeyn meyny, to strengthⁿ the toun till he come *with* his nauey; And he landed behynd þe toure of Ryesbank. And his peple made so gret noice in þe londyng, that þe Duk of Burgoyn & they of Gaunt, which lay at þe Est ende of the town, wend the Duk of Gloucest*er* had londid *with* his nauey *þat* sam nyght; wherfore þe Duk & they of Gaunt brake vp þeire tent*es* sodeynly & p*ri*uely, & went ouer Grauenyng watir þat same nyght, and lafte behynd hem much of þeire vitaile & of þeir ordynaunce; and gu*n*nes were founden beried vndir þe erthe. And thay of Brugg*es*, þat lay at Saynt Petirs with þe comy*n*te of Flaundres, knewe no-þyng of theire goyng til þe Sonday in the mornyng aftir; on which Sonday, at the releuyng, iiij. Englissh trumpett*es* blewe vp on hye vppon Milkgate toure, as [2]they were wont to do eu*er*y day at þe releuyng of the wach duryng the seege. And then they aspyed þat aⁿ þe Gaunteners were gon; but þey at Saynt Petirs lay stiⁿ. but as sone as they sawe þat the Duyk, þeire lord, & they of Gaunt, were gon, þey brake doun*e* þeire tentes, & sette þeire loggyng*es* on fyre, and fled þeir way*es* aⁿ that euer þey myght, and laft behynd hem much of þeir vitailes for hast. And they of the towne wold haue folowed aftir; but þe Lord Welles had brought a p*ri*uey seal from þe King, chargyng, on payn of their lyues, the[y] shuld not passe gunneshotte *with*out toun til þe Duyk of Gloucestre come *with* his power; And ne had þat ben, there had ben gret good geton þat tyme.

¶ Aⁿ þis while þe Pycardes lay at seege at Guysnes, and had smytte doun*e* þe ward next þe Faane toure, *with* þe gret brasen gunne, as before is said. And when they of the Casteⁿ sawe þe

[1] *leaf* 255, *back.* [2] *leaf* 256.

Flem*m*ynge*s* sette þeire loggynge*s* on fyre, thay made to ry*n*g the larome beH in al that þey my3t. Wherfore the Pycardes were sore abasshid, and wend the Duke of Gloucestre had ben landed w*ith* his power, & wes comyng to rescowe the Castel, And anon [1]brake þe seege, and carted þeire ordynaunce, & fled in al that eue*r* þey my3t. And they of þe Castel yssued out, both̄ on horsebak & on foote, aftir he*m*, and ouertoke the gret brasen gu*n*ne carted, & two o*þ*ir gret bombardes of yron; but the iij. chambres of þe brasen gunne were scaped fro*m* hem with þe hoost. Then they of Guysnes hewed in sonder the cartwheles, and aftir, w*ith* strengh̄ of men & horses, they wer brought into þe said Castel of Guysnes; & aftir they were brought in-to the toun*e* of Caleis. ¶ And on this wise, Phelip, Duk of Burgoyn*e*, & the Flemmynge*s*, departid from Caleis, and þe Pycardes fro*m* þe Castel of Guysnes, w*ith* gret shame & gret diswurship, & w*ith* gret losse. Wherfore amonges Englisshmen were made many rymes of þe Flemmynges; among the which̄, one is here sette for a remembraunce, that saith on this wise:—

WHen þe Flem*m*yng wer fressh, florisshid in your flouris,
And had we[l]th at your will, ye wolde be conquerouris
Of Caleis, þat litill toun*e*: as it come in your mynde;
But ye, to conquere Caleis, it come*þ* you not of kynde.

[2]Remembres on þat wurship ye wan*n* the first day,
When the Erle of Mortein come passi*n*g with his pray
Before youre toun*e* of Grauenyng, wher ye, as men bold,
Come rennyng on hym fersli, as lyons of Cotteswold,
With habirgeons & hounsculles, & rusti kettiH hattes,
With long pykes, goden daghes for to stikke the rattes,
With messis & meskins, & eke w*ith* side Iakes,
Doun*e* vnto mydde þe leg, of kanuas lyke to sakes;
Stoppid al w*ith* hempen tawe, and þat in straunge wise,
Stiched like a matrace, al of þe newe gyse,
Ye laid vpon þenglisshmen so myghtily w*ith* your handes,
Til of you iij. hundrid lay strechid on the sandes.
Ye fled þen in-to Grauenyng, and wold no lenger bide,
And gaue þe Erle leue to passe ouer that same tyde
In saafte with his pr*i*soners, & lost neuer a man:
This was þe first wurship, of Caleys that ye wan.

[1] *col.* 2, *leaf* 256, Lambeth MS. 64. [2] *leaf* 256, *back*.

Remembres how ye laide seege, with gret pryde & bost,
[1]To Caleis, þat littil toune: the noumbre of youre host
Was a hundrid thousand & fifty, to reken by þe pollis,
As it was þat same tyme founden by youre rollis;
And yette, for al youre gret host, erly nothir late,
Caleis was so ferd of you, þey shitte neuer a gate.

Remembres how ye drowned att fuH see for þe nones,
With shippes, Caleis hauen, massoned *with* stones,
And how that þe Calisers hem brake the next day,
When it was lawe watir, and bare lxiii clene away,
Eu*e*ry stikke & stone, & lafte not ther one log.
Remembres eke on Goby, the watir-bailiffes dog,
How he scarmysshed *with* you twyes vpon the day,
And among you, on þe sandes, made many a fray.

Remembres ye of Brugg*es*; how ye ferst wan youre shon*e*,
How ye com*e* forth to scarmyssh vpoñ an aftirnon*e*
With pauyses & crossebowes, on Saynt Petirs playn*e*,
And how sone the Calisers made you to turn*e* agayn*e*,
[2]And ou*er*threwe you sodey*n*ly, or euer that ye wist,
And brought you in-to Caleis, tyed fast by the fist.

Remembres ye of Gaunt eke: for al youre pride & bost,
Wonneñ was youre bulwerk, beside your gret host,
And slayn*e* all that was therin: & ye, that same night,
Fled ou*er* Grauenyng watir; but go þat go myght,
And youre lord *with* you, for dreed and for fere
Of the Duyk of Gloucester; & yette was he not þ*er*.
Wel was hym might go before *with* pisone & *with* paunce,
And laft behind you, for hast, al youre ordynaunce.

Remem*b*res, ye Picardes, at seege eke as ye lay
Of Guysnes, that strong Castel, how ye fled away
For ryngyng of the larum*e* beH, sham*f*ulli in a morowe,
As ferd as þe Flemm*y*ng*es*, *with* hertes full of sorowe.
Ye lost there your ordynaunce, of gu*n*nes that was cheff:
To you & to al Pycardis, shame and gret repreff.

Remem*b*res now, ye Flemmyng*es*, vpon youre own*e* shame;
[3]When ye laide seege to Caleis, ye wer right still to blame;

[1] *col.* 2, *leaf* 256. [2] *leaf* 257. [3] *col.* 2, *leaf* 257.

For more of reputacioun, ben Englisshmeñ þen ye,
And comen of more gentiłł blode, of olde antiquite;
For Flemmynges come of Flemmed men ye shal wel vndirstand,
For fflemed men & banshid men enhabit first youre land.

Thus proue I þat Flemmynges is but a flemed man,
And Flaunders, of Flemmynges, the name first began.
And þerfore, ye Flemmynges, þat Flemmynges ben named,
To compare with Englisshmen, ye aught to be ashamed!
Ye be nothing elles worth, but gret wordes to camp;
Sette ye stiłł, & bith in pees: God gyue you quadenramp!

¶ Such & many opir rymes were made amonge Englisshmeñ, aftir the Flemmynges were thus shamfully fled frome Caleis, & þe Picardis from Guisnes fledd, & gon þeire way, for drede & fere of þe comyng of the Duyk of Gloucestre, whiche by þat tyme was redy at London with his power & armee to come to þe rescows of Caleis, & to shippe at Sandwicħ, wher-as lay redy in þe hauen iij^{c} sailes to abyde his comyng.

[*End of the MS.*]

[K]

[*Extracts from the unique Lambeth* MS. 84.]

I.

[*How Havelok's son, Curan, became King of Denmark and England.*]

[1]**How Kyng Edelf maried Argentyl to a knave of his Kechyn.**

AND Kyng Edelf, þat was vncle to þe damoyseH Argentil, bethought him how he myght *with* some tresou*n* have þe lande fro hire þat was his Nece, for eu*er*more; and, false forsworne ayenst his othe, thouht how he myght disceyue þe damoyseH; And so he maried here to a knaue of his kechyn þat men callyd Curan. And this Curan becam þe worthiest man of body þat ony ma*n* wist in ony lande; for he was þe lengest ma*n* & highest of aH þe Kynges householde, or in ony o*þer* place þat me*n* knew þat tyme. And Kyng Edelfe supposed to haue maryed hire shamfully & vnworthily, for enchesou*n* þat he thought to haue alle here lande, as he had & heelde before þat tyme, but he was disceyued; ffor this Curan was Hauelokes sone, þat was Kyng of Kirkeland in Denmark, as ye shul here. ¶ Hauelok,[2] þat was Kyng of Kirkelonde in Denmark, spousyd þe Kyngis doughtir of þis londe, whiche was ryght eyre of þis lande, þat me*n* callyd Gildeburghe, & he begat on hire this forseide Curan, whiche was his eyre. And whan Hauelok vnderstode þat he shulde deye, he betoke his sone Curan to a lorde of his londe to kepe, þat he louyd & trustid moche vnto; and þat this lorde shulde mary his sone Curan to some worthi gentylwoma*n*, whan he were come to age, & to make kym Kyng of his landis. This lorde grau*n*tyd hym þat he woolde so do, & toke þe childe *with* hym, & kepte hym. ¶ But aftyrward, this lorde bethouhte hy*m* how he myght put this childe Curan from his enerytau*n*ce, and þat alle the lordis of Denmark dred hym, & many of them had hym in gret fauour; and therupon, he leete crowne hym-selfe Kyng of aH Denmark, and toke homage &

[1] *leaf* 48.

[2] Marginal rubric: How Curan, þat was Hauelokis sone, kyng[1] of Denmark, weddid þe Kyngis douhetir of Ingelond.

feaute of aH þe lordis & peple of Denmark. And anon he betoke Curan, þat was riht eneritour to þe crowne of Denmark, vnto a fissher, prevely, þat no man vndirstode, & gaue þe fissher gret good, & also chargyd hym, on payne of deethe, þat he shulde take þe childe Curan with hym, & priuely drowne hym in þe see, so þat he may neuer se nor here more of hym. The fissher seyde it shulde be doon, & toke þe childe priueli with hym. And whan he was in þe brode see, & purposid to doon this deede, he had gret pite & compassioun vpon this young childe, and thouht it were gret pite to drowne so faire a childe; & so he withdrew his euil purpose, & saued þe childis lyfe, & toke þe younge childe with hym, [1]and forsoke þe lande, & dwellyd in another countre with þe childe, for drede off þe Kyng þat vsurped þe lande. And this man kept tys[2] childe tyl he was wox moche, and of a resonable age; and alwey þe childe callyd hym 'fadyr,' wenyng to hym þat he had so be; tyl vpon a tyme, tis[2] fissher callid þe childe vnto hym, and tolde hym how he was nat his fadyr, but seide þat Hauelok, whiche was Kyng of Denmark, was his fadyr; & whan he shulde dye, he prayde a lorde of his londe to kepe his sone Curan; " & whan ye were come to natural age, to make yow Kyng of þe lande, as rightful enerytour. And he toke yow to me, & gaue me gret good, & also charged me, vp payne of deede, þat I shulde drowne yow in þe see. and I fulfillyd nad his commaundment, but sparid youre lyf, & kept yow hidyr-to with tho goodis þat he gaue me; & þerfor I durste not abide in þat londe, but fledde with yow in-to this countre; for he regneth now for kyng of Denmarke, & vsurpeth þe crowne. And þerfor I counseile yow to drawe to som pryncis courte, þat ye may haue eyde & helpe to enerite youre londe ayen." ¶ Than this young Ientylman thankid this fissher of his gret charite, & toke his leue, & cam to þe Kyngis courte of Ingelond, and was a sqwiler in þe kechyn: þe whiche kynge þat regnyd tho in Ingelonde was Edelf, whiche vsurpyd þe lande wrongfully, from his owne cosyn, whiche was kyng Adelbrightis doughtir, & riht eneritur, þat men callyd ArgentyH. ¶ And þis Kyng Edelf thouhte to mary her shamfully & vnworthely, for enchesoun to haue her londe from her; & so he maryed her to Curan, þat was sqwiler of his kechyn. ¶ And than Curan toke his wife ArgentiH, & went in-to Denmarke, and as God woolde, whiche helpith aH good men in ther right, conueyed Curan & his wife to þe howse of

[1] *leaf* 48, *back*. Lambeth MS. 84. [2] *sic* MS.

a worthi knyhte of Denmarke, þe whiche lovyd wel þe fadyr of þe seide Curan. And whan this Curan was come thedyr, þe knyhte was glad to holde hym, because þis Curan was so hye a man of stature, & wel made *with*-alle; & þe knyght comaundid his serwauntis to make hym & his wife goode chere; for they semyd onest foke. And aftyr, whan þe nyght was come, þei were asyngned where þei shulde lye. And in þe dede tyme of þe nyght, whan alle folkis were a-bedde, & be lyklyode a-slepe, there was a gret lyght in *þere* chambre, whiche oon of þe knyghtis seruauntis aspied, & preuely went vnto þe chambre to wete what yt ment. & whan he come thedyr, he sye a wonder grete stre[1]me of lyhte com from þe mannys side, & also a-no*þer* from þe woma*n*ny's side, þei beyng fast aslepe, *þat* alle þe chambyr was lyght *þere-with*. And þis man yede softly vnto his maistyr þe knyht, & tolde hym what he sye. & þe knyht rose hym vp & yede thedyr, & fonde yt sothe as his man had seide. & þe knyht maruelyd sore what it shulde mene, & yede a-yen to his bed, & musid sore ther-on. ¶ And on þe morw þe knyht arose, & sent for this man Curan; and anon þe knyht axyd hym what man he was; who was his fadyr; & where he was born. Than Curan seyde: "syrre, I wot nevyr where I was born, nor who was my fadyr, but be þe seyng of a man *þat* was a fissher, whiche kept me vp of yowthe; & I knew none o*þer* but *þat* he was my fadyr. & whan I was growen moche, & vndirstode resou*n*, he seide to me that he was not my fadyr, but seyde *þat* þe Kynge of Denmark was my fadir, *þat* men callyd Hauelok, & Gildeburgh*e* my modyr, whiche was þe Kyngis douhtir of Ingelond. & whan my fadyr shulde dye, he betoke me to kepe to a lorde of his, & prayde hym *þat* he shulde make me kyng, whan I come to lawful age. & that lorde betoke me to a man *þat* was a fissher, & gaue hy*m* gret good, & also chargyd hem, vp payne of dethe, *þat* he shulde drowne me in þe see; but þe man, of pite, cowde not fynde it in his herte." Thanne seyde þe knyht: "if it be thus, I shal knowe be sertayne fetures & tokenys *þat* is on youre body, þe whiche *þat* I & othyr knyhtis were comau*n*did to se & take hede of, when ye were ryht you*n*ge." Than Curan stripte hym nakyd; & anon þe knyht sye þe markis on his body *þat* he knew ful wel. And than þe knyht knelyd dou*n* & did hym worship, & seide, 'forsothe he was þe sone of his wurshipful lorde Hauelok, & rihtful ayre of Denmarke.' And in alle þe hast, þe knyght wrote vnto dyuerse lordis of *þat* lande,

[1] *leaf* 49.

seynge, þat 'Curan, þe sone of Haueloke, & rihtful eyre, was founde, & was with hym, in his place.' ¶ And whan þe lordys herde this, & vndirstode þe trowthe, anon thei assemblyd a gret power, & cam thedyr, & did homage & fewte vnto hym. and aftyr þat, thei yede & gaue batayle vnto þe Kyng þat vsurpyd, whom þe seyde Curan slew, his own hondis. And aftyr þat, thei crownyd hym Kyng of Denmarke, & so he enyoyed his enheritaunce. ¶ And in þe nexte yere folwyng, this seid Curan cam in-to Ingelonde, & conqueryd his wives lande, and slowe Kyng Edelfe in þe xx. yere of his regne. In whois tyme deyde Seint Ethelburga, þe first abbes of Berkyng, In þe yere of oure Lorde v^c^lxviij. And this Edelf was þe last kyng of þe trew Brytouns.

Anno domini v^c^lxx: Regned Curan, þat was [1]Hauelokis son, Kyng of Denmark, whiche reynyd be his wives titel, & not be his owne. Capitulum lxxvij.

Aftyr Kyng Edelf, þat was þe laste kyng of þe trewe Brytouns, Regned Curan In þe yere of oure Lorde. v^c^lxx. & þis Curan was Hauelokis sone, Kyng of Denmark, þat was a Dane; & he regned be his wivis title, & nat be his owne; & he was a good man, & wel rewlyd þe lande. And he ne regned but iij. yeris, for þe Saxons & þe Danys slewe hym; & þat was gret hurte to alle Britayne; [2]& so he deyde withoute yssu; & þe Britouns bare his body to Stonehenge, & þere entered hym with moche solempnite.

II.

[*The Quarrel between Richard II & his uncle, the Duke of Gloster.*]

[3]In þe xx^ti^ yer Kyng Rychard heelde a grete feste at Westmenstre. At whiche feste arryued þe Sowdyours þat had kepte a toune callyd Breste, & satte at dyner in þe halle, whiche tounne Kyng Rycharde had delyueryd by appoyntemente to þe Duke of Brytayne, wherof bygan moche trouble & sorwe, whiche dured vnto Kyng Richardys dethe. And aftyr dyner þe Duke of Gloucetre, his vncle, Sir Thomas of Woodstoke, sayde to þe Kyng: "Syre! haue ye not seen tho felawes þat sate at dyner in youre halle?" and þe Kyng demaunded who they were: and he sayde, "they been

[1] *leaf* 49, *back*. [2] Rubric in margin: This kyng deyde withoute yssu.
[3] Slip of vellum between leaf 181 and 182, written on one side only. At the top of leaf 182 is "John Stoughton is a littel wantton."

your folke þat haue seruyd yow, & ben come from Breste, & now wote not what to doo, & haue ben euyl payde." Thenne þe Kyng sayde þat they shal be payde. Then seyde þe Duke in a grete furye: "Syre! ye oughte fyrste to put your body in deuore to gete a tourne or a Castel be feet of warre vpon your enemyes, er ye shulde selle or delyuer ony townes þat your predecessours, Kynges of Englond, haue goten & conqueryd." To þe whiche þe Kyng answeryd ryght angrely: "how saye ye that?" Thenne þe Duke sayd it ageyn. Then þe Kyng byganne to wex wrothe, & sayde: "wene ye þat I be a marchaunt or a foole, to selle my londe? by Saint Johan Baptist, nay! but trouthe it is, þat oure Cosyn of Brytayne hathe rendryd & payde to vs þe somme þat my predecessours hadde lente vppon þe sayde tourne of Breste; and sith he haue payed, it is reasoune þat this tourne be delyueryd to hym ageyne." Thus beganne þe wrathe bytwene þe Kyng & his vncle. And aftyrward, at Arondele, was a Counseylle of certeyne lordes, as þe Duke of Gloucetre, þe Archebisshop of Canterbury, þe Erles of Arondele, Warwyk & Marchalle, & oþer, for to refourme þe rewle aboute þe Kyng; whyche lordes promysed eche to abyde by oþer, & so departed. And anone aftyr, þe Erle Marchal, whiche was Captayne of Calays, bewrayed, & lete þe King haue knowleche of all þere counselle.

III.

[*The Deposition of Richard II & Election of Henry IV. The Prophecy that Richard II should be destroyd by a Toad.*]

[1] Than in the begynnyng of þe xxiij[ti] yer, the lordys of þe reavme, with þe Comouns assent, chose this worthy lorde, Syr Herry Bolyngbrook, Erle of Derby, Duke of Herforde & Duke of Lancastre be ryht lyne & herytage, and for his myhtful manhood, þat þe peple fonde in hym before al othyr, they chose hym, & made hym Kyng of Engelond amonges hem, And put asyde Richarde, Erle of Cambrygge, whiche was sone to Edmunde Langeley, Duke of York. And this sayde Richarde, Erle of Cambrygge, had weddyd Anne, þe douhetyr & Ayre of Roger Mortymer, Erle of Marche & of Wulster, whiche was proclamyd, in þe ix. yer of þe regne of Kyng Richarde, heyre apparaunt to þe Crowne of Engelond aftyr Kyng Richarde. For þe sayde Roger was sone & Ayre to Edmunde Mortymer, and to Philyppe,

[1] *leaf* 185, *one-third down.* Lambeth MS. 84.

douhetyr & Ayre of Sir Lyonel, þe .iij. sone of Kyng Edward þe .iij.; And thus was þe Ayre Ieneral put asyde. [1]Also ther was, yn Kyng Richardys courte, a worshipful clerke þat was an Astronomier, whiche knewe & vndyrstode be his counnyng þat Kyng Richarde shulde be slayne & destroyed be a Toode. And vpon a tyme, he warnyd þe Kyng therof, & bad hym 'be ware of Todys; for a Toode shulde destroye hym;' and than þe Kyng thouhte & mervayled in his mynde, how þat shulde be. And vpon a tyme he ordeyned & made a ryal feest in Cristmasse, & comaundyd al his lordys to come thedyr. And they cam thedyr, euery lorde in þe gayest desgysyng þat they coude devyse. And among hem alle, Sir Herry, Erle of Derby, cam in a Gounne broyderyd [2]al abowte with Toodys. & whan Kyng Richard syhe yt, he remembryd þe propheci of Toodys þat his clerke tolde hym, þat he shulde be destroyed by. And euer aftyr he had this Herry, Erle of Derby, yn Ielwsy & mystruste, supposyng þat yt shulde be he þat shulde destroy hym; & fayne þe Kyng woolde an had hym destroyed; but at þe last he exiled hym for x yer.

IV.

[*The Murder and Burial of King Richard II. His Vision and his Treasure.*]

[3] ¶ In þe same yere, Syr Barnarde Brokeis, Sir Iohñ Selly, Syr Iohñ Mawdelyn, & Syr William Ferby, were takyn & sette in þe Toure, & aftyr, by iugement, were hanged & by-hedyd, & ther hedys sette on London Brigge. ¶ And whan Kyng Herry sawe þat these lordys thus had rysen, & assemblyd grete peple to haue put hym to dethe, & for to restore Kyng Richard ageyne to his crowne & to his Reame, he thoughte teschue suche peryls.[4] ¶ And a-none he commaunded Sir Pyers of Exston, þat he shulde goo streyte to Pounfreyte, & delyuer þe worlde of Kyng Rychard. ¶ And so he departed fro þe Kyng, and wente to þe Castel of Pountfrete, where-as Kyng Richard was in prisoune, þe whiche was sette at table for to dyne. ¶ And anon aftyr, Sir Pyers cam in-to þe chambre where þe Kyng was; and he broughte viij. men with hym, & eche man an axe in his honde. ¶ And whan þe Kyng sawe Sir Pyeers with his felausshippe entre in-to þe chambre defensably arayed, he shoof þe table from hym, and

[1] Side rubric: A prophesi of Kyng Richards dethe. [2] *leaf* 185, *back*.
[3] *leaf* 186. [4] Side rubric: How kynge Richard deyde.

sprange in-to þe myddys of them, & raughte an axe out of one theyr hondes, and sette hymself valyauntly at defence. ¶ And hym-self defendyng, he slewe foure of þe eyghte. And whanne þe sayde Peers sawe þe Kyng so defende hym, he was soore abasshed & gretly aferde, and sterte vpon þe place where-as Kyng Richard was wonte to sytte. & as Kyng Richard foughte & defendyd hym-self goynge bacwarde, the sayde Syr Peers smote hym on þe hede with his axe, þat he fylle to grounde. ¶ Than cryed Kyng Richard "God, mercy!" & thenne he gaue hym a-noþer stroke on þe hede, & soo he deyde. ¶ And thus was this noble Kyng slayne and murthred. And whan þe Kyng was deede, þe knyghte þat had thus slayne hym, sette hym down be þe deede bodye of Kyng Richard, & byganne to wepe, saynge: "Allas! what thyng haue we doone? we haue putte to dethe hym þat hath been oure Kyng & souerayne lorde, two & twenty yere! Now haue I lost myn honoure! I shal neuer come in place, but I shal be reproched, for I haue doone ayenst myn honour." ¶ After this, moche peeple in Englonde, & other countrees also, wolde not beleue þat Kyng Richard was deede, but sayde þat he was alyue many yerys aftyr. ¶ Wherefor Kyng Herry, whan he wist verryly þat he was deede, he leete cere hym in þe best maner, & with dyuers spices and baumes, & in a fayre cheste, closyd alle in lynyn clothe, saaf his visage, whiche was lefte opyn, þat men myht see & know his persone from alle othir men. ¶ And thus he was broughte thurghe London to Powlus; & his body was leyd on a Charyotte coueryd with black, and iiij. baners, whereof ij. were of þe armes of Saint George, & ij. of þe armys of Seint Edwarde; & þere were an C. men clothed in blak, eche beryng a torche; ¶ And þe Cyte of London had thyrtty men in whyte, eche beryng also a torche; and þe visage of þe dede body was leyde opyn, þat euery man myght see and knowe þat it was his body, & þat he was soo deede; for many men beleuyed it not. ¶ And from Powlus he was had to Westmenster, & þere he hadde his hole masse, & diryge also. ¶ And fro thens he was caryed to þe Frerys of Langley, & þere he was buryed: on whois sowle God haue mercy! Amen! ¶ The comyn oppynyon of Englysshmen is, þat Kyng Richard deyde not [1]aftyr þe maner a-foresayde, but þat he deyde & was famynyd, & lakkyd bothe mete and drynke, & yet he was dayle seruyd þereof lyke a Kyng, but he myht not towche

[1] *leaf* 186, *back.*

yt, but only see hyt, & *per*efor his [hunger] was þe more. And on a tyme, as he lay on his bed of estaate, hy*m* thouhte *þere* come a fayre wo*m*ma*n* vnto hy*m*, and brought a kercher ful of white Rosys, & bestruyd all his bed therw*ith*; & he fed hy*m* of the Rosys, þat his gret hu*n*gre was w*ith*drawe; & whan he woke, hy*m* thoughte his apyted was wel satysfyed, & *þer*by his lyf contynuyd a day or tweyne the lenger. And some sayeth thus, That whan he herde saye þat his lordys, þe Duke of Excetre, þe Duke of Surrey, þe Erle of Salysbury, & þe o*þer* lordis were deede, he was so angry & so sorowful þat he swore þat he wolde neu*er* ete mete, & soo abode iiij. dayes w*ith*oute etyng, as they saye. And whan Kyng Herry vndirstode þat he wolde not ete, he sente to hy*m* ij *pre*latys for to comforte hym; And whan they were come, he confessyd hym to one of them, þe whiche gaue hym in penau*n*ce, þat he shulde ete his mete. And whan he supposed to haue etyn, þe mete myght not goo dou*n*ne ne auale in-to his stomake, ffor þe conduytys of his bodye were shronken to-geder. And than sayde þe noble Kynge Rychard, 'þat it was doon, & þat he must nedis deye.' But certys, whe*þer* he deyde this way or þat other, certaynly dede he is, & was buryed at Langley: God haue me*r*cy on his soule! Amen! And then was Kyng Herry peasbly King. Then he fonde in Kyng Richardes tresory nyne honderde thousande noblys, w*ith*oute Iewellys and vessellys whiche was as moche worthe, or more. And *þere* was fou*n*den in þe Tresorers kepynge of Englonde, an honderde and fyfty thousand noblys, & Iewels & vessell as moche or more: and thus Kyng Herry had alle his goodys. Aboute this same tyme, þe Duke of Orleaunce sente an herode of armys w*ith* lettres vnto Kyng Herry, by which he chalengyd for to fyght w*ith* hy*m* w*ith*ynne lystes at Burdeux, or in some o*þer* metely place, w*ith* an C gentylme*n* w*ith*oute reproche, ageynste as meny gentlemen w*ith*oute reproche. wherto þe [1]King answeryd ageyne by lettres worshipfully, rehersyng þat at suche tyme as it shulde plese hy*m*, he wolde come with suche nombre as it apperteyneth to a Kyng, and conquere his ryght; at whiche tyme he shulde be answeryd atte fulle; & so þe mater fynysshed.[1]

[1—1] This is in the margin.

V.

[*The Causes of the Battle of Shrewsbury*, A.D. 1403.]

[1] ¶ And than Syr Thomas Percy was Iugged to be dede, þat is to sey, drawe & hangyd, and his hede smytyn of, at Shrewesbury, & his hede to be set on London Brygge, for his fals tresone; for he causyd þe gret devisioun betwene the Kyng and Syr Herry Percy; for þe Kyng woolde an had pees, & so woolde Syr Herry Percy ful fayne; But Syr Thomas Percy went betwene them, & bare fals talys, othyrwyse than they sayde or ment, & causyd that batayle. Vnde *versus*: Praxedis taurius no*mine* campo Blewyk.

M. quet*uor* C. *ter* .I.[2] obit *cer*tamine Percy.

¶ Also ano*þer* pr*in*cypal cause was: what tyme þat Syr Herry Derby was exilyd be Kyng Richarde, he cam ayen out of Frau*n*ce, & entryd vp in-to Engelond at Rauensport in Yorkshyre; & þ*er*e cam ayenst hy*m*, to put hy*m* of, Syr Herry Percy, othyrwise callyd Syr Herry Hote-spour. but Syr Herry Derby was sworyn þ*er*e to hy*m* & to othyr lordys, þat he shulde make no chalange vnto þe Crowne, but only vnto his enerytau*n*se, þe Dukedom of Lancastre; & vppon þat othe they suffryd hy*m* to go fourthe. And than aftyr þat, Syr Herry Derby toke vppon hy*m* þe Crowne. and whan they vndyrstode þat, Syr Herry Hotspur cam to þe Kyng to Westmenstyr, and seyde: "Syr, this was not couienau*n*t nor promise." "What seyest thow, horsson?" q*uo*d the Kyng; & stert to hy*m*, & gaue hym a gret buffet. "Wel," q*uo*d Syr Herry Hotspur, "this shal be þe shrewdest bofet þat eu*er* thow yovyst." & streyte he toke his horse, and rode home into his cou*n*tre; & here-vpon began the batel of Srewesbury.

VI.

[*King Henry V: his Riot in his Youth: his Change when made King.*]

[3] [A]ftyr the dethe of Kyng Herry the Fourthe, Regnyd his sone Herry of Monmothe, whiche was born at Monmothe in Walyes, whiche was Herry the Fyfte aftyr þe conquest. And he began to Regne on þe xxj^ti^. day of Marche, In þe yer of our lorde

[1] *on leaf* 187.

[2] ? for 1403, July 23. Battle fought on St. Praxed's day, near a manor house named Berwick.—J. H. Wylie, who suggests 'ter I,' thrice one, for the t .I. or † .I. of the MS.

[3] *leaf* 191. Lambeth MS. 84.

M. CCCC xij; And in þe same yer he was crownyd Kyng of Englon[d] at Westmenster on the nynthe day of Aprill; and he was a worthy kyng, & a gracious man, & a worthy conquerour. ¶ And before he was Kyng, what tyme he regnyd Prince of Walyes, he fylle & yntendyd gretly to ryot, and drew to wylde company; & dyuers Ientylmen and Ientylwommen folwyd his wylle & his desire at his commaundment; & lykewyse all his meyne of his housolde was attendyng & plesyed with his gouernaunce, out-sept iij. men of his howsolde, whiche were ful hevy and sory of his gouernaunce; and they counseylyd hym euer contrary, and fayne woolde an had hym to doon wele, & forsake ryot. and perfor he hatyd them iij. most of al men in his house, vnto þe tyme þat his fadyr was dede. And thanne he beganne to regne for Kyng, & he remembryd þe gret charge & wourship þat he shulde take vpon hym; And anon he comaundyd al his peple þat were attendaunt to his mysgouernaunce afore tyme, & al his housolde, to come before hym. And whan they herde þat, they were ful glad, for they subposyd þat he woolde a promotyd them in-to gret offices, & þat they shulde a stonde in gret favyr & truste with hym, & neerest of counsel, as they were afore tyme. & trustyng here-vpon, they were þe homlyer & bolder vnto hym, & nothyng dred hym; ynsomoche, þat whan they were come before hym, some of them wynkyd on hym, & some smylyd, & thus they made nyse semblaunte vnto hym, meny one of them. But for al þat, þe Prynce kept his countynaunce ful sadly vnto them, And sayde to them: "Syrys, ye are þe peple þat I haue cherysyd & mayntynyd in Ryot & wylde gouernaunce; and here I geue yow all in commaundment, & charge yow, þat from this day forward þat ye forsake al mysgouernaunce, & lyve aftyr þe lawys of Almyhety God, & aftyr þe lawys of oure londe. And who þat doyth contrarye, I make feythful promys to God, þat he shal be trewly ponisid accordyng to þe lawe, without eny favour or grace." And chargyd them, [on] payn of deth, þat they shulde neuer geve hym comforte nor counsel to falle to ryot no more; for he had takyn a charge on hym, þat alle his wittis & power were to lytyl, without þe helpe of God & good gouernaunce. And so he rewardyd them richely with gold & syluer, & othyr Iuelys, and chargyd them alle to voyde his housolde, & lyve as good men, & neuer more to come in his presence, be-cause he woold haue noon occasioun nor remembraunce wherby he shulde falle to ryot ayen. And thus he

voydyd al his housolde, savyng tho iij. per[1]sonys þat he hatyd most, whiche were ful sory of his gouernaunce; & them he lovyd aftyrward best, for þere good counsayle and good gouernaunce, & made them aftyrward gret lordys; And thus was lefte in his housolde nomo but tho iij. men. And menyone of them þat were eydyng & consentyng to his wyldnes, fyl aftyrward to gret myschefe and sorw.

¶ Than Kyng Herry sent to Dame Kateryn Swynfor, Countesse of Herforde, whiche was tho a wel-gouerned woman, & kept þe most worshipful housolde, & þe best rewlyd þat was within þe londe; and to her he sent for men þat were of good disposicyoun; & she sent hym xij Ientylmen of sad gouernaunce. and so this gracious Kyng forsoke al wyldnes, and toke hym to good gouernaunce, and kept streytly his lawys with ryghtwisnes & Iustise. For, in þe first yere of his regne, ther were ij knyhtis at gret debate: þe tone was of Lankestyr-shire, & þe tothyr of York-shire; & they made them as stronge of peeple as they cowde, & scarmysshid togedyr; and men were slayne & hurte on bothe partyes. ¶ And whan þe Kyng herde therof, he sent for them: & they cam to þe Kyng to Wyndelysore, as he was goyng to his dyneer. and whan the Kyng vndirstode that they were come, he commaundyd them to come before him; And than he axyd them, 'whois men they were.' and they seyde, his lege men. "and whois men be tho þat ye haue a-reysyd up to fyhte for youre quarel?" and they seyde, 'his men.' "& what awtoryte or comaundement had ye, to reyse vp my men or my peeple, to fyght & sle eche othyr for your quarel? yn this ye ar worthy to dye." And they coude not askewse them, but besowhte þe Kyng of his grace. And than þe Kyng seyd, "be þe feith þat he owte to God & to Seint George, but yf they agreyd & accordyd, be þat tyme þat he had etyn his owystrys, they shulde be hangyd bothe two or evyr he sopyt." And than they yede a-parte, & agreyd be themselfe, and cam in ayen whan þe Kyng had etyn his owistris. And than þe Kyng sayde: "Syrys, how stondyth yt with yow?" And than they knelyd downe, and seyde: "yf it plese your good grace, we be agreyd & accordyd." And than the Kyng seyde, 'be the feythe þat he owte to God & to Seint George, þat & evyr they made eny more Insurreccioun or dethe of his lege peple, they, or ony othyr lordys withynne his reawme, withowte his

[1] *leaf* 191, *back.*

commaundment, whatsomeeuer they were, they shulde dye, acordyng to þe lawe.' And so, aftyr þat, ther durst no lorde make no party nor stryf; and thus he beganne to kepe his lawis and Iustise, & therfor he was belouyd & bedred.

VII.

[*The Battle of Agincourt.*]

[1] ¶ Than þe morwe roos, þe day gan sprynge, & þe Kyng be good avyce leet araye his batayle & his weengys; & chargyd euery man to keepe hem hole to-gedrys, & preyde hem alle to been of good cheer. And whanne they were redy, he askyd what tyme of þe day it was, & they sayde prime. Than seyde oure Kyng: "now is it good tyme, for alle Engelond prayeth for vs. And in remembraunce þat God dyed on þe Crosse for vs, let euery man make a crosse on þe erthe, & kys hyt, & in tokenyng þat we wole radyr dye on this erthe than flee." ¶ And whan þe King of Fraunce sawe oure Kyng & his peeple fal doun to þe erthe, he axyd: "what meen they now?" & a Frenche knyht stode by, & seyde, "forsothe, Syre, they purpose hem this day to dey on þat grounde, rathir than to flee." And than oure Kyng, with alle his peple, roos hym vp ayen; and than he seyde with an hye voyce, "In þe name of Almyhty God and of Seint George, Avaunt baneer! & Seint George, this day thyn helpe!" And therwith þe Trumppetys blew vp. ¶ And than þe Frenche men come prykyng doun, as they woolde haue ovirryden alle oure meyne. But God & oure Archerys made hem sone to stomble. for oure archeris shot neuer oon arwe amys, but it persshid & brouht to grounde man or hors; for they shottyn þat day for a waiour; And oure stakys made hem ouer-terve, eche on othyr, þat they lay on hepys. And oure Kyng, with his meyne & with men of armys, leyde on, for it behovyd hem to fyght þat day, his owne handys. & oure good Archerys þat lakkyd [2] arwys, leyde on with stakys. And þat day þe Frenche men syhe Seint George in þe eyre ouer þe hoste of þe Englisshe men, fyghtyng ayenst þe Frenche men; and therfor they worship & holde of Seint George, in Engelond, more than in any oþer londe. ¶ And thus Almyhti God & Seint George brouht oure enemyes to grounde, & yaf us þe victory þat day. And þere were slayne of Frensshe men þat day in þe feelde of Agyncort xj. M^l^., withoute prysonerys þat were takyn. And ther were noumbryd

[1] *leaf* 194. [2] *leaf* 194, *back*.

þat day of Frensshe men yn þe feelde, mo than Sixti score M^{t}., And of Englisshe men but vij. M^{t}; but God & Seint George þat day favt for vs. But þe Frensshe men þat were in þe Cyte of Parys, had went þat oure Kyng had been ouer-throuhe a day before; for þe prekers of þe Frensshe men þat kept þe owte-wacche, met with some of oure Kyngis kartys, & ryfelyd them, & gat out oure Kyngis koronet, & bare it in-to Parys; & wenyng to them of þe Cyte þat oure Kyng had been ouerthrouhe, & bare this coronet abouht þe cyte in processioun for ioye. And aftyrward, whan they syhe þe Frensshemen come home sore woundyd, they marvayled sore, & askyd them 'what chere?' & they seyde, "No som to mors": we be dede & ouerthrouhe. And than an hewge peeple of women & oþer folke yede thedyr to þe feelde þere þe batayle was, to beholde whiche party were ouerthrouhe; and they stode vpon an hylle besydys þe feelde þere þe batayle was. ¶ And whan þe Englisshe hoste syhe this, they had wende þat tho peeple had been a-noþer host of Frensshe men. And anon com tydyngis to oure Kyng þat þere was a newe batayle of Frensshemen, al in aray, ordeyned redy to stele on hym. And anon oure Kyng leet krye þat euery man shulde sle his prysoner þat he had take: & þat was a myghty losse to Engelond, & a gret sorw to Fraunce. and whan þat was doon, oure Kyng arayed his batayle ayen, redy to fihte with þe Frensshe men. ¶ And whan þe Frensshmen sawe þat oure men kyllyd her prysonerys, than they withdrewe hem, & brak her batayle & here aray. And thus oure Kyng, as a worthy conquerour, had þat day þe victorye in þe feelde of Agyncourt in Pykkardye, thankyd be God!

And than oure Kyng retournyd ayen there þe batayle was, to se what peple were dede of Frensshe men, and also of Englisshe men, or yf ony were hurte þat myht be holpe. And þere were dede of Frensshe men in þe feelde: þe Duke of Barry, þe Duke of Launsom, þe Duke of Braban, þe Erle of Navern, þe Chief Counstable of Fraunce, & viij. othir Erlys; & þe Archebisshop of Saunce; & of good Barouns .C. & mo; & of worthy knyhtis of gret alliaunce of cote armures, a M & v^{C}. ¶ And of Englisshe men was dede þat day: þe good Duke of Yorke,[1] Ser Edmunde, & deyde withoute yssu. And aftyr hym, was made Duke of Yorke his broderys sone, Richarde, þat [2]was sone to Richard, Erle of Caumbrygge, þat was behedyd at Southamptone, as aftyrward ye

[1] Rubric in margin: 'there was slayne þe Duke of Yorke.' [2] *leaf* 195.

shul here more opynly. And also there was dede, þe Erle of Suffolke; & of al oþer of Englisshe men, were dede nat passyng xxvj. bodyes, thankyd be God! And this batayle was on a Friday, whiche was Crispines & Crispamanes day, in þe monthe of Octobre.

versus: an Mil C quatuor Synk Domini dato.
henrici terno Regis quin iure paterno.
harflet fest Maurik deuicta que prelia.
crispinum Agencourt nomen, vbi Cristus ei dedit omen.

VIII.

[*The Siege of Rouen. Every eldest Son a King on St. Dennis' Eve.*]

[1] ¶ And yn þat tyme þere was a custom in þe Cite of Rone, & also in þe Subarbys þere-of, that on Seint Denys evyn to make a kyng in euery house. And so þe grete heerys of þe subarbis cam to þe seyde Kyng Herry, & besouht hym to take noon displesure of þere customable vsage. and þe Kyng askyd them what it was. And they answeryd & seyde 'yt was þe vsage of Roon to make, in euery hous therof, þe eldest sone a kyng on þat nyht.' And anon þe Kyng grauntyd them ther askyng, so þat it were nat doon in despyte of hym. And at Nyhte ther cam woorde to þe Kyng, þat þere were neuer seen so many kyngis to-gedyr in oon place. And anon þe Kyng comaundyd them to be brouht afore hym. And than spake an olde Frenche knyht, and seyde: "I trowe now is þe tyme come þat Rone shalbe won, aftyr þe profecye." And when þe Kyng herd þe knyht thus sey, he askyd hym, 'what was þe profecie.' And þe knyht seyde, 'yf he woold pardon hym, he woolde tel hym þe profecie þerof.' And tho þe Kyng pardonid hym. ¶ "Syr," quod þe knyht, "this toun of Roon shall neuer be wonne, tyl ther come a Kyng þat shulde be boryn of a woman, And in a Nonnys habyte, & .xxx. kynggis at his retynew, to ley seege ther-to." And there-with þe Kyng seyde: "In verbo tuo relaxabo rethe." And anon he comaundyd everyche of þe kyngis to be set in dyuers garisons ayenst þe Toun. And on þe next day was þe Toun of Roon yolde vp vnto oure Kyng, as ye shul here.

IX.

[*King Henry VI's youth, and the quarrel with the Flemings.*]

[2] a Nd yn þe yer of our Lorde, Mt CCCC & xxiij, On þe last day of August, Herry of Wyndelysore, þe sone of Herry þe Fyfthe,

[1] *leaf* 198, *back*. Rubric in margin: 'how xxxti kyngis leyde seege to Roon.' [2] *leaf* 201.

began to Reyne, when he was but ix monthis of age. ¶ And as some men sey, on þat day of his byrthe, there sat a stronger with þe parsoun of Monmothe, þat prophesied at dyner, seyng on this wyse: "In these xxiiij. ourys passyd, othyr with-yn xxiiij. ourys to come, is born, or shalbe born, a new Kyng of Engelond, þe whiche shal begynne his reyne withynne þe first yer of his byrthe." ¶ Than seyde þe tothyr: "þat is þe Erle of Marche." he seyde ayen: "nay, nat so." than seyde þe tothyr, "what troyst thou þat þere shal fal here-aftyr?" he seyde: "In þe fyrst vij yer of his Reyne, þere shalbe gret aboundaunce of al maner of ffrutys." "And what in þe next vij yerys?" he seyde: "þere shalbe thre wyse men þat shulbe able to gouerne eny reme." And in þe vj. yer aftyr, on þe vj day of A Nouembre, Herry þe vj^te^ was crownyd at Westmenster, of Herry Chychile, Archebisshop of Cauntirbury, at whois Coronacioun þe sone of þe Duke of Hostryche, with many oþer, were made knyhtis. ¶ And in þe x^the^ yer of his reyne he was crownyd ayen at Parys in Fraunce, of his vncle þe CardinaH of Wynchestre. And in þe yer aftyr þat, on þe xx^ti^ day of Maij, on a Weddenysday, fro þe oure of None to iij. on þe clok at aftyrnoon, ther aperyd a Blasyng sterre in þe firmament, toward þe est, fast be þe Mone.

And in þe yer folwyng, the Dewke of Burgoyne began to meve werre ayenst Engelond, & wolde an had Caleys. And thedyr was sent in bassetre, þe Duke of Exetyr, with oþer lordys; & as he cam homward ayen, his hors doungyd in þe tounne of Poperyng; and þe Flemyggis rysyn vp, & woolde nat suffyr hym to passe tyl his men were fayne to bere awey his hors dounge, & make clene þe stretys. ¶ And whan þe Duke was come ayen in-to Engelond, he enformyd þe Kyng & his lordys þerof; and they were sore amevyd therwith. And anon Sir Humfray, Duke of Gloucestre, & Sir Thomas Bewfourde, Duke of Exetyr, his brothyr, with oþer lordys, made a gret power, and yede ayen in-to Flaundrys, & destroyed moche peple, and brent meny tounnys, & dyd moche harme; & þe Duke of Burgoyne fled with his peple. And þe Duke of Exetyr yede & brent vp Popryng & meny mo tounnys þere abouhte, & dyd moche harme, ynsomoche þat they brent þe whete & corne þat grewe in þe feelde: & þat was an evyl deede, ffor, sen þat tyme hydyrward, our whete & corn haue be brent in Engelond, yn on place or in othyr, as it growyth in þe feelde, be þe hande of God; whiche brennyng, men callyth 'Ablastid or seynte.' ¶ And at þe

last, þe Duke of Burgoyne was fayne to mede þe Duke of Gloucestre & oure lordis, & gave them a myty thyng of good to turne ayen & seese ther warre, & do no more harme. & than þey turny[d] ayen in-to Engelond. And in despyte of þe Flemynges, an Englisshe man made this Englishe, yn Baladdys:

(1)

[1] o ff stryvys new, & fraudulent falsnesse,
Who-so lyst to seek out þe cheef occasioun,
Late hym resorte, & his wey dresse
In-to Flaundrys, streyght to the Blak Lyoun,
Whiche hathe compassed, be fals collusioun,—
Lyk in his standard as betyn is the signe,—
That meved his countre of presumpcioun,
Ageyn Ingelond frowardly to malygne.

(2)

Fyrst to remembre, the deede beryth wytnesse,
Of his fadyr mowrdred be tresoun,
How Herry the Fyfthe, of knyghtly gentylnesse,
Had of his dethe manly compassioun,
Leete digge hym vp, stank for corrupcioun,
Of a prynce a mercyable sygne.
But thou ageynward, be fals decepcioun,
Madest Flaundrys ageyn Ingelond to malygne.

(3)

Thou madist an oothe, be gret avisynesse,
Vppon the sacrament at Amyas, in that toun,
Ay to be trewe, voyde of dobylnesse.
But vndyr the courteyne of fals collusioun,
Thou gat at Araas an absolucioun,
Thy feyned feythe vp falsly to resygne,
Causyng Flaundrys, to ther confusioun,
Ageyn Ingelond prowdly to malyngne.

(4)

The pees purposyd at Araas in soothnesse,
Whan our' embassatourys, of hool affeccioun,
Cam goodly thedyr, dyd ther bysinesse,
To haue concluded a parfyt vnyoun

[1] *leaf* 201, *back*.

Twyxt to reavmus, for ful conclusioun,
Thou, shewyng there a face ful benyg[n]e,
Vndyr a veyle of fals decepcioun,
Record of Flaundrys, whiche falsly dothe malygne. 4

(5)

What hast thou wonne with al thy bysinesse
And alle thy tentys to Caleys caryed doun,
Thyn ordynaunces, whiche cost gret rychesse,
Bastyle, and cartys of fagot gret foysoun, 8
Of thy goumnys the dredful noyse and soun?
Peyse al to-gedyr, with many anothyr sygne,
Thy cowardly flyght, cokeney of a chaumpyoun,
Whyche darst not fyght, and canst so wel malygne. 12

X.

[*The Battles of St. Alban's I and II, of Blore Heath, Ludlow, Northampton, Wakefield, and Wigmore.*]

[1] They dyd moche harme, & many a man was slayne; & they woolde neuer sese, tyl þe drawbrygge was set on fyre betwene hem. And aftyrward þere captayn was take in a gardyn in Kent, & þere 16 he was slayne; & aftyr þat, his body was quarteryd; & his hede smytyn of, & set on Londen Brygge. ¶ And in þe xxiiij. yer of his regne was þe first batel of Seint Albonys; & þere Kyng Herry was shotte in þe nekke with an Arrwe. And ayenst hym cam 20 Rycherde Plantagynet, Duke of Yorke, & Richard Nevel, Erle of Salisbury, & his sone Richard Nevel, Erle of Warwyk. And þere was slayne of þe Kingis party, Sir Edmunde, Duke of Somyrset, þe Erle of Northombyrland, & Lord Clyfford; & Humfray, Duke 24 of Bokyngham, was sore hurte, whom they caryed with hem to Londen.

And in þe xxxvij yer was þe batel at Bloorhethe, & of Ludlowe; & þere was slayne be þe Erle of Salisbury, Lord Avdele, & xiiij. 28 knyghtes new made; & þe Baroun of Dudle was take & led with hem. ¶ And in þe .xxxviij. yer was þe batayle of Northamptoun; where cam on þe ton party, Edward þe Erle of Marche, þe eldest sone of þe Duke of Yorke, & þe Duke of Northfolke, & Richard

[1] *leaf* 202. It follows the Ballad.

Nevyle, Erle of Warwyk. And þere was slayne of þe Kyngis party be them: Sir Humfray, Duke of Bokyngham, & Sir Iohñ Talbot, Erle of S[h]rewisbury, & Vicount Bemounde; & þere was take Kyng Herry, & brouht with them to London.

And in þe same yer was þe batayle of Wakefeelde, whiche was on þe ton party, þe Duke of Somyrset, þe Erle of Northumbirlond, Lord Clifford, & Sir John Nevyl of Westmerland, which was þe Erles sone of Westmerland. And þere was slayne be them: Richard, Duke of Yorke, Edmunde, Erle of Rutlond, his sone; & Richarde Nevyle, Erle of Salysbury, was take þere, & behedyd at Pounfret. ¶ And in þe same yer was þe ij^de^ batayle of Seint Albonis: & þere com in on þe ton party: Kyng Herry, þe Duke of Northfolke, þe Erle of Warwyk, Lord Facounbryge, & Vicound Bowser. And ayenst them cam Queen Margeryt, & Prince Edward her sone, [L]ord Wellis, Lord [C]lyfford, & ouerthrewe þe tothyr party, & toke awey King Herry from them; and, be the commaund-ment of þe young Prince, þere was behedyd þere, Lord Bonvylde, & Thomas Kyrel, knyht of Kent; & they led with hem in-to þe Northe, Lord Mountegew, [a]nd toke hym to [þ]e Mayre of [Y]orke to kepe.

And in þe same yer was þe bateyle of Wygmore, be Edward, Erle of Marche; wher fled, Sir Herry Bewforde, Duke of Exestyr, & Iamys Ormond, Erle of Wylshyre, & Iasper, Erle of Penbrook; & his fadyr, Owen Tedder, was takyn, & behedyd at Herforde; and ther was takyn þe Baroun of Burforde; & pardounde of his lyfe. An[d] aftyr this, Edward, Erle of Marche, with þe lordys on his party, yede to London; and on þe iiij. day of Marche he toke vpon hym þe Regimen, with þe wylle of þe lordys & þe comouns bothe.

XI.

[*K. Edward IV* (1461); *the Battle of Barnet* (14 *April*, 1471); *and the Death of Henry VI* (20 *June*, 1471).]

[1]a Nd aftyr this, In þe yer of our Lord Mt. CCCC lx, And in þe regne of Kyng Herry .xxxix.; Edward, Erle of Marche, with þe lordys þat were on his party, yede to Londen; and on þe .iiij. day of Marche he took vpon hym þe Regimen, with þe wylle of þe lordys & þe commouns also. ¶ And aftyr þat, Kyng Edward toke

[1] *leaf* 202, *back*.

his lordys, & yede Northeward; and on Palmisson evyn was Tauntoun feelde, callyd York feelde. And þere was on Kyng Edwardys party, þe Duke of Northfolke, þe Erle of Warwyk, Lord Acrys of þe southe, Lord Faucounbrygge, & many oþer lordys & knyhtis moo. And ayenst hym cam Prynce Edward, Kyng Herryes sone, þe Duke of Somyrset, þe Erle of Northumbyrlond, whiche was slayne þere, & many oþer lordis & knyhtes also. And King Herry, with Queen Mergeret, lay in York; & þey toke þe Prince her sone, & be mydnyght they were fledde to Berewyk; & they yaf þat toun to þe Scottis, to haue socour & helpe of them, whiche toun was Englisshe beforn. ¶ And thus Kyng Edwarde, þe sone of Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York, ouercam his enemyes, & put them to flyght, & returnyd ayen to Londen, & þere he was crownyd at Westmester, ryghtful Kyng of Engelond & of Fraunce, Castylle, & Legyoun. ¶ And sone aftyr, he weddyd Dame Elysabeth̄, þe Erle Ryuers douhtyr, on whom he begat, Elysabeth̄, Marie, Cicile, Edwarde Prince, Margarete, Richard, Duke of York & of Northfolke, Anne, George.

And aftyr this, Herry, þat was Kyng, was take in Yorkshire, in þe Abbey of Furnes; & put in þe Toure of Londen. ¶ And aftyr þat, þere aperyd in þe ffirmament a gret sterre, þat yaf out vij stremys, whiche synified gret sorw, & mysche[f] þat fylle aftyrward; & also ther wer sene in þe Temys at Londen, many whyrlepolys, & anoþer tyme a whale, þat signyfyed not good. For aftyrward fylle gret devisyoun betwene þe Kyng & his lordys; & þey kept a gret batayle on Estyr day, whiche is callyd 'Barnet Feeld.' & þere was slayne Richard Nevyle, Erle of Warwik, & Markys Montegew, his brothir; & þe Erle of Oxynford fled. And from thens þe Kyng yede to Tewkysbery; & þere was slayn, Edward, þe sone of Kyng Herry; & Queen Margarete, his modyr, was take, whiche were come out of Fraunce. And thus Kyng Edwarde ouercam aH his enemyes, thankyd be God! And in alle þese batayles, was þe sone ayenst þe fadyr, and brother aye[n]st brother. ¶ And anon aftyr, deyde Kyng Herry in þe Toure of Londen; & is beryed at Chercheshey. And he foundyd þe Coleges of Etoun & of Cambrygge, callyd þe 'newe Colege': on whois soule, God haue mercy! Amen!

And aftyr this, Kyng Edward yed ouer beyon the se into Fraunce, & chalengyd Gascoyne & Gyen. And þe Kyng of Fraunce was fayne to desyre trewys with hym, & agreyd to pay yerly to oure Kyng, X Mt. li. for Gascoyne & Gyen: & he payd it long

after. And in þat Iorney our Kyng lost many a man þat fylle to þe lust of women, & wer brent be them; & þere membrys rottyd away, & þey dyed. ¶ And aftyr þat, ther fylle a gret dissese in Engelond callyd þe 'styche,' þat moche peeple deyde sodeynly þerof. And also anoþer dissese reyned aftyr þat, callyd þe 'fflyx,' þat neuer was seen in Engelond before; & peple deyde hogely therof iij yer togedyr, in on place or oþer. And aftyr þat, ther bred a Raven on Charyng Crosse at Londen; & neuer was seen noone brede þere before. & aftyr þat, cam a gret dethe of Pestilence, þat lastyd iij. yer; & peple dyed myhtely in euery p[l]ace, man, woman & chylde: on whois soulys, God haue mercy! Amen! [*end.*]

APPENDIX TO H.

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF THE BATTLE ABBEY ROLL OF 371 NAMES OF NORMAN KNIGHTS. [See p. 535–537].

[*Harl. MS.* 53, *collated with Lambeth* 6.]

	Abvile	BaywaH (29)[1]	Bruce (58)	Colvile (86)
	Achard	Beauchamp	Budler	Comyn
	Akeny	Beaumeis	Buket	Corbet
4	Amondevile	Beler	Burdet	Cornor
	Anney	Belet	Burle	Costentyn
	Arcy	Berard	BurneH	Cosyn
	Arvile	Berevile	BusseH	CoudreH
8	Ascher[1]	Bereward	Bussey	Courtheuse
	Asprevile	Bernevile	Butevile	Crecy
	Aubeny	Berry	Butteler	CrieH
	Aubray	Beygnard[3]	Butvileyn (68)	Cunly
12	Audeny	Bigot		Curecy
	Audevile	Birset	Camois	Curly
	AueneH	Bleis	Candrey	Curteis
	Auerenges	BlundeH	Cannevile	Curteneis[4]
16	Ayelard (16)	Bluet	Cardevile	Curthose
		Boner	Carevile	Curty (102)
	Bagot	Bontvile	Chalenges	
	Banaster	Boynet	Chalurs	Dalamare
20	Bardulf	Brachet	Chambreleyn	Danstervile
	Baret	Bracy	ChameH	Darcy
	Barevile	Brassard	CharneH	DariH
	Barry	Bratet	Chastelleyn	Despenser
24	Bars	Bret	Chaucer *	Deynecourt
	Baskervile	Breuse	Chaundos	DrutaH
	Basset	Brian	Chene[1]	DucreH
	Bastard	Bricourt	Cheyne	Duket
28	Baucan	Britoun	Clare	Dulapenne
	Baynard[2] (28)	Brok (57)	ClareH (85)	Duredent (113)

[1] *om.* L. [2] Barnard L. [3] Boigmard L. [4] Carteneis L.

Escot (114)
Eurons

Ferebrace
Ferrer
Ferrers
Feschampe
Fetepace
Fitz[1] Brian
Fitz[1] Garin
Fitz[1] Geffray
Fitz[1] Herbert
Fitz[1] Hu
Fitz[1] Piers
Fitz[1] Symond
Fitz[1] Vise
Fitz[1] Water
Foleyn
Foliambe[2]
Folvile
Formentyn
Fossard
FreseH
Fresvile
Freynes
Frisoun
Frivile
FurnyvaH
Fyneux (141)

Gamager
Gantlou
Gaugy
Gaunt
Gauter
Gerard
Giffard
Gorge (149)

Gorger (150)
Gorunvile[3]
Gower
Grace
Grauntsoun[2]
Graynvile
Greis
Grenevile
Gunter
Gurnay (159)

Harecourt
Hachet
Haket
Hamelyn
Hanet
Hansard
Hanvile
Hasard
Hautevile
Hay
Heiroun
Hercy
Heris
Hubert
Hurfer
Huscharles

Iardyn (176)

Keynes
Kirlecot (178)

Lacy
La Heuse
Lambert
Ledet
Leoun (183)

Lescey (184)
Leverer
Lincot
Lonetot
Longchampe
Longevile
LoveH
Lucy
Lunar
Luncy
Lyard
Lynet
Lysle (196)

Maignard[4]
Malemayn
Malet
Malynoler
Mamelbarin[2]
Mansey
Manus (*or* Manns)
Manyn[2]
Marcimas
Mareis
MarteH
Massy
Matroners
MaunceH
Maundevile
Maureward
Meisy[5]
Meyne
MeyniH
Miler
Mire
Mongomery
MoreH (219)

Moreus[6] (220)
Morley
Morteyn
Mortymer
Morvile
Motoun[2]
Moubray
Mounfichet
Mountanasy
Mountegu
Mounteny
Mulet
Murdak
Musard (233)

Neomarch
Nepount
Nevile
Neyrount
Niuelent (238)
Nunchampe

Ofvile
OreH[7]
OrivaH
Orrewar (243)

Pachet
Palet
PameH
Panely
Pantulf
Parles
Passamere
Passauaunt
Peisoun[8]
Penire (*or* Pemre) (253)

[1] Filz L. [2] *om.* L. [3] Gonurvile L. [4] Maynard L.
[5] Mersy L. [6] Morens ? L. [7] Torell L. [8] Tyson L.

Percy (254)
Perly
PevereH
Phanecourt
Picard
Pigot
Piket
Pilet[1]
PineH
Pipard
Piroun[2]
Pleisy
Plevien
Poer
Pounchet
Pountfract
Prers[2]
Punegis
PurceH
Pus
[Putnell][3]
Putrell (274)

Quatremars
Quincy (276)

Raynes
Renger
Richemount
RideH
RocheH
Roos
Rosyn (283)
Rosynis[2] (284)
Roter
Rusak
RusseH (287)

SaintbreneH
Saintclus
Sainteler
Sainterois
Saintgorge[2]
Sainthelyn
SaintIohn
Saintleger
Saintmore
Saintmoris
Saintnoyre
Saintomer
Saintquintyn
Sancey (301)
Sanctclou
Sandervile
Santemareis[4]
Saucer
Saunzaner
Saunzire
Savage
Say
Saylard
Scutevile
Sechevile
Semery
Setvaus[5]
Seygnes (315)
Soldeny (316)
Somervile
Sonevile
SouppiH (*or* SoupeiH)
SpigurneH
Spynevile
Sunely
SurdevaH
Swyward[6] (324)

Tabot
Tailepas
Taillois
Tallebot
Tanet
Taryn
Tenere
Tibot
Tiptot
TireH (334)
TorchappeH
ToreH
Toret
Torevile
Tracy
TrameH
Trauers[2]
Trevet
Truan
Truret
Trusbut
TrusseH (346)
Tuchet (347)
Tuny
Tupet[7]
Turbevile
[Tyson, *see* Peisoun]

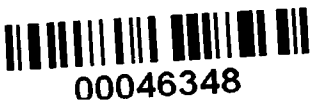
Valeus[8] (351)
Vauesour
VeeH
Veer
Veisyn
Venour
Verly
Vernoun
Vescy
Vilers
Vmframvile

WadeH (362)
Warenne
Wasteneis
Welby
Widvile
Wildbef
Wishard
Wivile

Ynogre

Zoochh[9] (371)

[1] Pelet L. [2] *om.* L. [3] *only in* L. [4] Saintrioris ? L. [5] Setvans ? L. [6] Swyand L. [7] Tapet L. [8] Valens ? L. [9] [?] *om.* L.


00046348

Digitized with financial assistance from

HT Parekh FOUNDATION

An Initiative by HDFC

WITH YOU, RIGHT THROUGH

on 15 October, 2018